

MYSTERIOUS SECRETS OF THE DARK KINGDOM

THE BATTLE FOR PLANET EARTH

BY J.P. TIMMONS

**CCI PUBLISHING
BIGFORK, MONTANA 59911**

MYSTERIOUS SECRETS OF THE DARK KINGDOM

The Battle For Planet Earth

Copyright © 1991, 2003, 2008, 2012 by Jonathan Philip Timmons

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced in any form by any means including any electronic or mechanical means including photocopy, recording, or information storage and retrieval systems without written permission from the publisher, except by a reviewer, who may quote brief passages in a review. Published by CCI Publishing Company, PO Box 777, Bigfork, Montana, 59911.

Unless otherwise indicated, all Scripture references quoted are from the Authorized King James Version of the Bible. Copyright © 1979, 1980, 1982, Thomas Nelson, Inc. Publishers. Used by permission.

Scripture quotations marked NKJV are from the New King James version of the Bible. Copyright © 1982, Thomas Nelson, Inc. Publishers. Used by permission.

Scripture quotations marked NIV are from the Holy Bible, New International Version. Copyright © 1973, 1978, 1984 International Bible Society. Used by permission of Zondervan Bible Publishers.

ISBN 978-1-56350-007-7

First Edition: June, 1991

Second Edition: October, 2008

Third Edition: July, 2012

Printed and published in the United States of America

DEDICATION

This book is expressly dedicated to all the great missionaries—men, women, and children—who have left the comfort and convenience of home to take the Gospel to all the foreign lands.

You've experienced the heartbreak loss of a child, imprisonment, being ignored, rejected and made to feel inferior by other ministries and the Church in general, the abandonment by a spouse who fled to the riches of this present world, and many other heartaches just to fulfill the call of God upon your life. You are very precious in the sight of the Lord.

It is about *you*—the tireless company of great, dedicated missionaries—that the Scripture says,

**“OF WHOM THE WORLD WAS
NOT WORTHY.”**

♥ **Hebrews 11:38**

PREFACE

Perhaps the most significant words in the Bible are these by our Lord: “And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.” That means, if you don’t know the truth, you are not free; you are in bondage.

The book you are about to read is the most comprehensive work to date on spiritual warfare and the kingdom of Satan. It is detailed and factual, not theory. For the first time, you will learn the truth about the Dark Kingdom: its organization, methods of operation and power. It is my sincere hope that this truth will make you free and enable you to effectively engage the Dark Kingdom in spiritual combat.

For too long the Church has been told by her ministers that the devil does not have any power. But then we feel the abrasive rub of reality when a child is taken from us through death or a husband leaves for another woman. We try to be spiritual giants, but the lyrics and siren song from the world drops an unforgettable melody into our minds and spirits.

Like a toy store window the week before Christmas, Christianity has been brightly and colorfully packaged to offer free prizes to all who will come to Jesus. But after coming to Christ, we discover that an army—one of powerful and unrelenting demons which the Church has not equipped us to deal with—has been unleashed against us from the Dark Kingdom. Make no mistake. The devil has great power in this day in which we live. We have opened the door to him in America and he has come in to sit by the cozy fire. The devil is highly organized and he has monumental plans of heartbreak and death for you and your family if you don’t know how to stop him.

This book is the first definitive work published on the Kingdom of Satan; a kingdom I call the Dark Kingdom. It is based on over ten years of research. You will learn the organization, methods of operation and strategies of the Dark Kingdom. You will also learn how to stop them through spiritual warfare. Much of this information was obtained from hundreds of hours of interviews with both current and former members of the Dark Kingdom in Nigeria, West Africa. And much of it, especially in the area of spiritual warfare, was revealed by the Spirit through prayer.

This is the day when a torrential flood has been released by the Dark Kingdom against the Church and families, especially in the United States. The devil is serious about taking you out of action. He wants your name listed under casualties of spiritual war. Your reply must be just as serious through the spiritual weapons given to the Church. The battle in which we are engaged is extremely serious—a battle for planet earth. The intensity and severity of this battle will continue to increase from now until the return of our Lord. There is no escaping the conflict except through death. We have to face the enemy and engage him in warfare. Now for the first time we have the information to do so. Let's do it! Let's make the Strong Man tremble as the Church arises and shakes herself from her lethargy. Let the Dark Kingdom feel the crescendo of hammer blows from the Army of the Lord being trained in this hour.

The Lord is speaking to His Church in this hour. He is saying, "Rise up! Rise up! It's a new day when the Church will come forth into her finest hour! Rise up with my Spirit and your weapons to withstand the Dark Kingdom! Rise Up! Rise up! You've been on the sidelines too long! There is the smell of victory in the air!"

J. Philip Timmons
Austin, Texas
December 25, 1990

PREFACE—SECOND EDITION

Seventeen years have passed since we first published Mysterious Secrets. During this time the book has been read all over the world. Today we are seeing the fulfillment of things the Lord showed us back in the ‘80s and ‘90s—that the decade from 2001 through 2010 would be the most difficult in the history of the Church.

The judgment of the world has begun and we are standing on the brink of a “holy war” for control by the Antichrist and demon power. The events of September 11, 2001, were significant to those who can see with the “eye of the eagle” what is occurring in the spirit realm. The world systems will soon become the “kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ” (Rev. 11:15). God is judging the systems Satan controls such as finance, government, etc., and He is judging the “gods” of this world just as He did during the days of Egypt. In addition to money, these gods include entertainment, business, sex, science and religion. We will see God judge each of these areas.

In Matthew 16 the Pharisees and Sadducees (religious leaders) came to Jesus asking to see a “sign from heaven.” The Lord called them “hypocrites.” Why? Because they claimed to be religious leaders and yet they could not discern the signs from heaven of which Jesus was Himself a sign. They could not “discern the signs of the times” (v. 3). How about our religious leaders today, can they “discern the signs of the times?”

The judgments of God are primarily designed to bring about repentance, yet those who do not recognize the “signs of the times” will probably not repent. God is simply saying to the world: “The god of money will not save you; the god of entertainment will not save you; science and technology will not save you; your government cannot save you; your armies cannot save you; religion cannot save you.”

Therefore, we should begin to see God's judgments against all of these areas. There will be a gigantic earthquake that will cause Los Angeles to slip into the ocean—this is a judgment against Hollywood with all of its ungodliness and the god of entertainment. Many churches and ministries will fall because they are tied in with the world systems—my wife and I have had many, many dreams and visions concerning this for the past 11 years. This is Revelation 17-18 being fulfilled. The True Church of Jesus Christ, however, will not be disturbed by these things but we will begin to look up knowing that our redemption is drawing near. The next great restorational move of the Church will begin this decade—that of Resurrection of the Dead (cf. Hebrews 6:2) as we continue our wilderness wanderings toward final maturity. This move will result in glorification and you will see the raising of the dead become as common as healings are today in the true Church.

The world has become a dangerous place. The first vision I ever received as a four-year-old child dealt with a nuclear holocaust in America and I believe this will occur after the Bride is translated out of the world; however, there may be some limited exchanges of nuclear weapons before then. Satan is raising an army of Muslim terrorists and the last great battle for planet Earth is beginning. Satan has battle plans to stop the Second Coming of Jesus! He will not go quietly without a fight. Only those in the Ark (of Jesus) will be safe. I hope you will be busy persuading all you come in contact with to get inside the Ark while there is still time for the Lord said, "My Spirit will not always strive with man."

J.P. Timmons
Big Fork, Montana
Easter Sunday, 2008

Table of Contents

BOOK I – SPIRITUAL WARFARE

Introduction – The Trumpet Has Sounded	12
Chapter 1 – The Spirit World	20
Chapter 2 – Spiritual Gifts	42
Chapter 3 – Spiritual Warfare	56

BOOK II – THE KINGDOM OF GOD

Chapter 4 – The Organization of God’s Kingdom	78
Chapter 5 – The Rebellion of the Angels	82
Chapter 6 – God’s Plan for Man	93

BOOK III – SATAN’S KINGDOM

Chapter 7 – Satan, the Devil	102
Chapter 8 – Satan’s Earthly Kingdom	108
Chapter 9 – The Principalities	112
Chapter 10 – The Powers	121
Chapter 11 – The Rulers of Darkness of This World	147
Chapter 12 – Spiritual Wickedness in High Places	160

BOOK IV – OPERATIONS OF THE DARK KINGDOM

Chapter 13 – Operational Methods in the Dark Kingdom ...	168
Chapter 14 – The Operations of Satan	178
Chapter 15 – Operations of the Principalities	186
Chapter 16 – Operations of the Powers	194

Chapter 17 – Operations of the Rulers of Darkness	202
Chapter 18 – Operations of the Wicked Spirits	213
Chapter 19 – The Occult World	224

BOOK V – THE WEAPONS OF OUR WARFARE

Chapter 20 – Spiritual Weapons	242
Chapter 21 – The Shield of Faith	252
Chapter 22 – The Word of God	262
Chapter 23 – Sanctification	266
Chapter 24 – Trust in God	270
Chapter 25 – Prayer	274
Chapter 26 – The Power of the Blood	305
Chapter 27 – The Name of Jesus	316
Chapter 28 – Unity of the Faith	322
Chapter 29 – Praise and Worship	333
Chapter 30 – Your Inheritance in Him	341
Chapter 31 – The Power of Confession	345
Chapter 32 – The Baptism of Power	356
Chapter 33 – Gifts of the Holy Spirit	364
Chapter 34 – Personal Prophecy	375

BOOK VI – DELIVERANCE MINISTRY

Chapter 35 – How to Recognize Demon Power	390
Chapter 36 – Principles of Deliverance	396
Chapter 37 – How to Operate in Deliverance Ministry....	.413
Chapter 38 – Jesus Has Delivered Us	438

BOOK VII – THE GREAT COMMISSION

Chapter 39 – Prepare the Way of the Lord	442
Chapter 40 – The Great Commission	447

FIGURES

Figure I – God’s Kingdom Before the Rebellion	81
Figure II – God’s Kingdom After Creating Man	95
Figure III – Satan and The Principalities	116
Figure IV – Ruling Hierarchy of The Dark Kingdom ...	126

BOOK I

SPIRITUAL WARFARE

**“For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound,
Who shall prepare himself to the battle?”**

♥ 1 Corinthians 14:8

INTRODUCTION

THE TRUMPET HAS SOUNDED

The main purpose of this book is to expose the hierarchy and operational methods used in the Dark Kingdom ruled by the devil. No other book so accurately details the *precise* organization and operation of Satan's evil government known as the Dark Kingdom.

Much of what you will read may unnerve you, especially if you are not strong and secure in the Lord Jesus Christ. It is not meant to frighten, but rather to inform. It should be considered a manual on spiritual warfare. Just as in physical warfare, the better informed a Christian is concerning his enemy, the better are the chances for victory in spiritual warfare.

Yet, this is not a book for the timid. As we have learned when presenting this information in Spiritual Warfare Seminars in churches around the world, many Christians will become afraid of the devil. This is because for the first time you will learn the truth about his power. Like many of you, I had heard for years (and still do) that the devil does not have any power. I was taught that he is strictly a counterfeiter with no power of his own. But the truth is that the devil has great power. And it is *only* when we learn what power he actually has that we can effectively engage him in spiritual warfare. The Apostle Paul said,

“Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we
Are not ignorant of his devices.” ♥2 Cor. 2:11

The Church world today has given Satan a huge advantage because we have been *very* ignorant of his devices in the modern Church. Consequently, Satan has caused great havoc in the Church and he continues to create problems for every true Christian today.

The devil is highly organized and he has great power. How do we fight him? These and other questions will be answered in this book.

As one studies physical warfare, it is obvious that one of the most important ingredients of victory in battle is the ability to determine the strengths and weaknesses of your enemy. Although not always possessing superior forces or armament, the winning army in a battle engagement usually possesses superior skills in the reconnaissance of enemy forces. This includes: strengths, weaknesses, type of armament, probable strategies in warfare, etc.

Is not the same true for spiritual warfare? Should we not know what are the strategies, power, types of organization of forces and other vital information about the army that our sworn enemy the devil commands? These are vital truths which the Church needs to understand if we are to wage the “good fight of faith.” The religious clichés—“Don’t worry about the devil, he doesn’t have any power; greater is He that is in you than he that is in the world; the devil doesn’t have any power unless God gives it to him”—are not sufficient for victory in these times of extreme warfare in which we live. The spiritual warfare in our day is intense—a battle against God and His representatives on the earth today, the Church.

Of course, we must not forget that power, like most other things is relative. Compared to God, the devil and his kingdom do not possess great power. However, compared to mankind in the flesh, the devil is very powerful indeed. Without the presence of the sweet Holy Spirit in our lives, we would be like a finely dressed soldier without any weapons against the onslaught of the members of the Dark Kingdom. But thank God for the Holy Spirit! Thank God for the Lord Jesus our intercessor who is seated at the right hand of the Father and “who ever lives to make intercession” for us in the Kingdom of God. Thank God for our spiritual weapons!

Thank God for the precious gifts of the Holy Spirit and prayer. These are some of the weapons of our warfare which we will discuss later. The Lord has so graciously given these to us. But none of these weapons will do us any good if we are not able to recognize the schemes and attacks of the devil. What good would it do you to know what to do if you cannot recognize an attack of the devil? If we were to take an analogy of physical warfare today, we would be hard pressed to fight any kind of battle against an enemy who

was unseen and about whom we knew so very little. Yet this is precisely what the Church has attempted to do in fighting the devil and his followers.

As you read the information contained in this book, the Holy Spirit will open your eyes and you will be better able to see the work of the devil and his cohorts in the earth today.

If you are in the ministry, you will recognize the work of the enemy not only in your own church or ministry, but also among your fellow ministers. In Austin, Texas, there is no unity at all among the ministers. There are just a few who are close. Ministers are very distrustful of one another, jealous, and quick to find fault with what a fellow pastor or other minister is doing instead of rejoicing that something is being done for God. This is a problem that is recognized and openly discussed at monthly ministerial fellowship meetings. We realize it is wrong and that the Lord wants unity in the Body, especially among the Five-fold ministry, yet it continues. What is the problem? Is it jealousy? Pride? Selfish ambition? Yes, but we must realize that these are only the symptoms of the real problem. The actual problem is our failure to both see and counteract the spiritual work of the devil, principalities, powers, rulers of darkness and wicked spirits in the heavenlies.

This book will open your eyes to the methodology of the Dark Kingdom as they attempt to hinder the work of the Church and her ministers in the earth today. All the backbiting, criticism, pride, arrogance, self-centeredness, and other problems are a direct result of the carefully laid plans of the Dark Kingdom. These things are no accident, nor strictly the result of human nature. The devil is very much involved in the average church throughout the world today. He is involved in causing strife, adultery and other sins in order to destroy the ministry of that church. If he is unsuccessful in getting the pastor to commit adultery, then he will attempt to influence him to steal from the church or to begin preaching false doctrine. The devil has many sins—both of omission and commission—from which one can choose.

Satan has a computerized, military checklist of what has worked in your family for centuries. He will attempt to get you into sin based on what has worked for your family in times past. This is why we have mistakenly

thought that certain traits such as alcoholism, child abuse and genetic diseases were predispositioned due to one's physical family genes. In reality, most of this is due to the operation of the Dark Kingdom through families. The Lord said something quite shocking to me in October of 1991. He said, "There are more people in America today in need of deliverance than there are in need of healing." That means Satan is actively involved in some way with every family in America.

And it is only when we, the Church, wake up to what is occurring within our church, fellowship, prayer meetings, family or ministry that we will realize what the enemy is doing and how to prevent him from succeeding. This book, then, is not only an informational manual of the structure and tactics of the Evil Government, but it is also a call to action for the Church and Five-fold ministry. Let us recognize the methodology of the enemy in this spiritual warfare and do something about it. The Lord is tired of His Church being a passive body—an easy target for the devil as we only react defensively to him. The Lord has sounded the trumpet and is calling the Church to battle! We must go forth into the battle as ready vessels for use by the Holy Spirit.

We must not only realize the spiritual battle in which we are engaged, but also must learn to recognize the work of the enemy in every area of our lives and our immediate families. Let each of us seek God with clean hearts and pure minds. Let us, each of us, make the quality decision to return with sincere dedication to the Lord Jesus Christ. We must each make a commitment to live the kind of lives that He wants us to live. Let us strive to purify ourselves in holiness and "lift up holy hands" to the Lord. We must with resolve become one Body in unity and a mighty weapon which the Lord can use against the forces of the Dark Kingdom. We can no longer afford to be ignorant of the schemes and wiles of the devil.

Let us resolve to go forward into battle and no longer linger on the sidelines waiting for the Lord to rapture us and take us out of this terrible world. While we are here, we are commanded to let our light shine. We must exercise our spiritual authority and strive to make the world a better place in which to live and raise our families. We must each fulfill our destiny in God through our covenant duties, the Great Commission and becoming more Christ like.

May our prayer each day be, “Lord, make me an instrument of Thy love and the establishment of the Kingdom of God upon the earth this day. Open my eyes to the wonderful truths of your Kingdom and how I can be used this day to glorify Thy Name. Use me this day to help others to draw closer to Thee.”

In order to do anything for God, we must learn not to be self-centered. You will learn, if you have not already, that one of the primary reasons the devil sends tribulation and problems your way is to keep your mind away from God and the work of His Kingdom on the earth. If you are being overwhelmed with problems yourself, you will never feel like interceding in prayer or helping others with their problems. Sound familiar? If this describes you, then make a decision right now to change. Discipline yourself to pray no matter what happens each day. This is one of the greatest weapons we have against the Dark Kingdom. But you must learn how to pray effectively and in detail instead of “God bless so and so.” God bless so and so prayers are ineffective. God is already trying to bless them!

Pick out several people who need help and begin to pray earnestly for their needs. Become like Christ by giving the needs of others first priority. Wake up each day with the thought of doing some positive things for the Kingdom of God. This attitude will also help you develop a positive perspective on life (something we all need!) and get you out of the rut of just existing each day.

So, humble yourself before God. Discipline yourself in prayer and study of the Word. Look for and create opportunities to be a blessing to other people. And as you do these things, you will find that God will meet all of the needs in your own life without your having to ask Him. This is a spiritual principle. In 1997 the Lord showed me this in a vision which demonstrated that when we take care of God’s business He takes care of our business.

IS THERE ANY WORD FROM THE LORD?

There are many questions being asked in the Church today by both the ministers and laity. We realize that the world is quickly becoming an unfit place in which to live. The problems, from crime to the ecological balance and terrorism, seem insurmountable. Is there any hope? What is God doing in the world today? Surely the Lord must return soon! Are we currently experiencing the Great Falling Away or apostasy spoken of by the Apostle Paul? These and many other questions fill our minds each day.

Along with these questions comes the constant burden of just existing every day against the onslaught of our enemy the devil. Repeatedly, we find ourselves asking as they often did in the Old Testament, "Is there any word from the Lord?"

The good news is yes. There is a good word from the Lord today. He is busy at work within the Church today preparing His Bride for His soon return. But He is returning for a glorious Bride, a glorious Church. He is not returning for a Church beaten down and decimated by the devil. He is purifying the Church today to ready her for the greatest outpouring of the Spirit of God and power that has ever been demonstrated in the earth. It will happen in our lifetime as God's power, through the Church, is unleashed against the Dark Kingdom in this the final battle for planet earth.

We are being prepared for the last great revival which will see a greater demonstration of God's power and glory than the early Church experienced. Will you be ready? Will He be able to count on you and use you during this time? If so, then you must prepare now.

While preaching in many church services recently, the Spirit has said to me, "I am even now searching the hearts of these people to find those that can be used of me. I am searching for those who are ready and will be obedient." Will you forsake all and follow the Lord?

The Bible says that many are called, but few are chosen. The Lord told me in West Africa in December, 1989, that “the reason many are not chosen is that they are not willing to pay the price.” Are you willing to pay the price? Most are not today. We will “go into all the world and preach the gospel” only if it is easy. We want our world and call to be Hawaii. We want a soft, easy gospel of witnessing to people while we lie on the beach. We want a gospel of prosperity and the confession of Cadillac cars or million-dollar mansions. We want to have a big television ministry where all God’s money is channeled to the devil because the stations are predominantly owned by unbelievers. We don’t want to pay the price, which is persecution, trials, time in prayer and Bible study, seeking the will of the Lord, and many other things. Are you willing to pay the price? If so, He will choose you. But you must be willing to be trained to serve in the army of the Lord. You must be trained in Spiritual Warfare. That is why the Lord has called me to build a training center in thirty African nations. We have plenty of Bible schools and seminaries.

We have greatly missed the true work of the ministry which the Lord said in Ephesians 4:12 is to train the saints for the work of the ministry. When are the Five-fold offices of the Church going to wake up to the plan which the Lord gave us to get the gospel out? When will we wake up to our responsibilities? God is no longer asking. He is now demanding! God has given each of you certain gifts and callings (Romans 11:29), but it is up to you and the ministers of God to help develop these gifts. These gifts, like physical gifts, must be developed to be used efficiently.

This book, then, is about Spiritual Warfare. It is intense today and the conflict will only intensify and grow worse until the Lord returns. The Dark Kingdom is far more organized and has much greater power and influence than we have been taught. The great deceiver has deceived the Church in many areas. That is the reason the Lord has commissioned the writing of this book.

The information contained here about the hierarchy and operation of the Dark Kingdom is factual. It has been obtained from the Lord and those who at one time worked for the devil and knew him personally. It is not hypothetical. The research is based upon hundreds of hours of taped and written interviews with many who worked in the Dark Kingdom, some for as much as fifty years.

This research has taken over thirty years of work. Much is based upon my own experiences in ministry in Africa and Asia, especially Nigeria where the power of the devil is the greatest in the whole world.

This exposé of the Dark Kingdom of Satan will also show you what you can personally do to stop the activities of the devil in your own life and the lives of your family members and friends. It is a manual for *Spiritual Warfare* and also a call for action to a long sleeping Church to arise from slumber and enter into battle.

The Holy Spirit is even now sounding the trumpet. The Church is being called to battle. Are you ready to answer the call?

1

THE SPIRIT WORLD

**“Wisdom is the principal thing; therefore get wisdom:
And with all thy getting get understanding.”**

♥ Proverbs 4:7

Before we can discuss and understand things about the spirit world, we must differentiate the world of the spirit beings because it is a separate world. This spirit world is distinctly different from our physical world, although there are some similarities and it does occupy much of the same space, but in a different dimension. There are certain facts which we have concerning the spirit world and then there are other facts which we can infer from our knowledge of both science and the Bible. This will be our main topic of discussion in this chapter.

At age eight I waked down the aisle of a Methodist church and gave my heart and life to the Lord. I began to read and study the Bible daily from that time until now. By the time I had entered college as an engineering major, the call of God was upon my life for the ministry. It was at this time, while lay preaching and serving as youth leader in my church, that I began to question why we had never been taught anything about the devil and his operations in the world. I believed the Bible concerning the things of Satan, but I wondered why it was that there was not more information available on the Dark Kingdom.

While continuing to grow in the Christian faith, I discovered that there was precious little available information concerning the spirit world or the devil in the whole body of Christian literature. The few books that could be found left me dissatisfied. They dealt with some of the scriptures in the Bible about the devil, but generally speaking these books addressed the Dark Kingdom and its activities mostly through supposition, theory and guesswork.

It began to really bother me why, if the devil is an actual being, there was no definitive work available detailing his activities and work. Scientifically speaking, there only existed two possibilities:

- (1) Satan, the devil, does not actually exist or
- (2) he does exist, but we know little about him due to our lack of understanding concerning the world of the spirit in general. We actually know very little about God's operations in the spirit world as well, I reasoned.

We pride ourselves in the Western world on our scientific knowledge. Yet this knowledge is largely confined to the physical world. We have developed and proven very elaborate scientific theories through empirical methods. Yet we have no such methodology or instrumentation to understand the spirit world. We know so very little about spiritual things—our spiritual acumen is quite low.

For example, we know that great men and women of God and their ministries are born out of great adversity. This is a fact. But what we have failed to understand is that most of the adversity they encounter is because the ministry had long before been birthed in the spirit realm by the Holy Spirit. All the tribulation being experienced was because the Dark Kingdom wanted to stop the manifestation of the ministry into the physical realm. This same truth applies to our individual prayer lives as we learn from the book of Daniel. The problem in unanswered prayer (you can't find unanswered prayer in the Bible) does not lie with God, but with us and our lack of understanding concerning the spirit world.

“Then said he unto me, Fear not, Daniel, for from the first day that Thou didst set thine heart to understand, and to chasten thyself before Thy God, thy words were heard, and I am come for thy words. But The prince of the kingdom of Persia withstood me one and twenty Days ...”

♥ Daniel 10:12-13

When we really spend some time meditating upon this scripture we see some important truths. First of all, this scripture shows that the devil and his Dark Kingdom possess power. They were able to withstand the angel for twenty-one days. That means they possessed power. And we realize one of the reasons why many Pentecostals used to talk about “praying through.” They may not have understood what was occurring in the spirit realm, but they knew that if they persisted in prayer, the answer would come. The Church of today has largely forgotten about “praying through,” having been taught that if you pray more than once about anything it is not in faith and you won’t receive an answer. Finally, we learn that God sent the answer to prayer *immediately*; however, it took 21 days to manifest because of spiritual opposition from the devil and his kingdom. Think about that! I believe this goes a long way toward explaining the phenomenon referred to as “unanswered prayer.” Personally, I don’t believe in unanswered prayer – you can’t find it in the Scriptures. No, God sends the answer but because we are ignorant about spiritual warfare in this area Satan often robs us of the answer before it can manifest.

THE SPIRIT WORLD DOMINATES THE PHYSICAL

It is well known in Nigeria, even among non-Christians, that everything in the spirit realm takes precedence over the physical realm. The members of the Dark Kingdom know that everything is first birthed in the spirit world. This is because spiritual things are of a higher order than are physical things. *The spirit world dominates the physical world.* This is one reason the Word of God encourages us to develop ourselves spiritually and to set our mind on things above in the realm of the spirit.

God revealed to me something very important about the spirit world; something that ties in with this principle—something we have not understood before in the Church. *Whenever God calls a man or woman to a specific task or ministry, He births the ministry spiritually first.* They may not even be aware in their physical body that this “birthing” has occurred, but it has already happened in the spirit world. Consequently the devil, being a spirit being, is alerted to this spiritual birth. He goes about immediately to destroy what God has established in order to make the ministry given to that person be stillborn. This principle is also reflected in Herod’s attempt to destroy the Lord Jesus at birth. Reflect on the parable our Lord told of the Sower and you will also see this truth.

Our inability to understand spiritual matters and spiritual things has hindered our whole understanding of the Bible, especially the New Testament and the ministry of the Holy Spirit. What is the ministry of the Holy Spirit now during the Church age? How many things can you list right now that are His ministry? If you don’t know, how can He be your Helper?

The Bible is written not to sinners, but to the Church. In 1985 the Lord said to me that the main reason He left His Word, the Bible, “was to meet the needs of mankind.” And while we are grateful to use the Bible as a Word from God to preach salvation to sinners, it is written primarily to the Church. While it does contain history, prophecy and poetry, the real contrast in the Bible is between the Old and the New Testaments. The Old Testament is symbolic of the flesh while the New is symbolic of the Spirit. This great truth is borne out by many scriptures. Perhaps the best one for us to consider is found in Acts.

“And it came to pass, that, while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having Passed through the upper coasts came to Ephesus: and finding certain Disciples, He said unto them, ‘Have ye received the Holy Ghost since Ye believed?’ And they said unto him, ‘We have not so much as Heard whether there be any Holy Ghost.’ And he said unto them, ‘Unto what then were ye baptized?’ And they said , ‘Unto John’s Baptism.’ Then said Paul, ‘John verily baptized with the baptism of

Repentance, Saying unto the people, that they should believe on him Which should Come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus.' When they Heard this, they Were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. And When Paul had laid His hands upon them, the Holy Ghost came on Them; and they spake With tongues, and prophesied. And all the men Were about twelve."

♥ Acts 19:1-7

Paul does not find fault with the baptism of John because it was from Heaven. He says it was a baptism of repentance and in the faith of the coming Messiah. He goes on to speak of the faith of those who heard John as evidenced by their being baptized into the name of Him who would come after John, i.e., Jesus the Messiah.

But Paul is not contrasting the baptism of John with that of Jesus as many have supposed. He is contrasting the baptism of repentance in water with the baptism of the Spirit or the baptism of (into) spiritual gifts. The Greek text, *pneuma hagion*, is nearly always translated as Holy Spirit, but it does not always refer to the Holy Spirit as we shall see later. It can also mean spiritual gifts and often does.

It is evident that Paul believed in the doctrine of laying on of hands. This was considered an elementary doctrine of the early Church as evidenced in Hebrews 6:1-4. The early Church knew about and practiced the laying on of hands and Paul does so here in Acts by laying hands on these twelve men.

"And when Paul laid his hands upon them, the Holy Spirit came upon them, and they spake with tongues and prophesied." These were the spiritual gifts they received when Paul laid his hands upon them. These gifts came from the Holy Spirit.

We also see this with Timothy. Paul understood the purpose behind the laying on of hands. He tells Timothy, his young protégé, to "stir up the gift of God, which is in thee by the putting on of my hands" (2 Timothy 1:6).

The contrast in Acts 19 is not between the baptism of John and that of Jesus. It is a contrast between the flesh and the spirit! It is the difference between the baptism of repentance in water and the baptism of the Spirit which is of spirit and means the baptism of spiritual gifts or the bestowal of spiritual gifts for spiritual warfare. Paul is not asking them if they had received the Holy Spirit when they believed since He is given at the moment of believing by faith. Paul is asking if they had received the *spiritual gifts* since they had believed. The material element of water is replaced with the spiritual element of spiritual gifts and Divine power. When we study the entire structure of this passage, we can see this spiritual truth. These men were already disciples, but they were ignorant about spiritual gifts given by the Holy Spirit. So Paul told them and then, through the laying on of hands, he imparted these spiritual gifts to these men. After this impartation, they spoke with tongues and prophesied.

Consider Matthew 3:11,

“I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance; but he that cometh After me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear; he Shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost [*pneuma hagion*] and with Fire:”

This verse quotes John who said that the one coming after him would baptize with *pneuma hagion* and with fire. Those in ministry who are familiar with the laying on of hands and the impartation of spiritual gifts by this means will attest to the validity of these words. This is especially true of prophetic presbytery. We see this occurrence in the following verses of Scripture:

“Now there were in the church that was at Antioch certain prophets And teachers; as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and Saul. As they ministered to the Lord and Fasted, the Holy Ghost said, ‘Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the Work whereunto I have called them.’ And when they had fasted and Prayed, and laid their hands on them, they sent them away. So they,

Being sent forth by the Holy Ghost, departed unto Selucia; and from Thence they sailed to Cyprus.” ♥ Acts 13:1-4

Through the laying on of hands and prophetic presbytery, there is a release of spiritual gifts. There is a *rhema* calling forth of the gifts placed within the life and ministry of that person. As the prophetic word comes forth over that person, a life and activation takes place for those gifts and callings to come forth. That is why this form of ministry is very powerful and much needed in the Church today. Yet we know so little about it and the bestowal of spiritual gifts through this means.

We generally only emphasize the baptism of water and its symbolism of the new birth into the Kingdom of God. We neglect the spiritual birth of the gifts and callings of God in the life of a new convert resulting in these never being developed in most Christians—they live and die without ever being used to the extent God intended. But make no mistake. God will hold you accountable for the spiritual gifts He gave you when He formed you.

God wants to bring forth many ministries in the lives of His saints today. He wants to birth many great ministries within the laity of the Church today. Many of you sense this in your spirit. You are not happy because you sense that God has more for you. And you are right, He does! It is important for you to seek God and look for opportunities to expose yourself to ministries that are able to assist you in developing the spiritual gifts and callings which God has placed upon your life.

DIFFERENCES IN THE SPIRIT WORLD

What are some of the differences between the spirit world and the physical world? For one thing, we know that spirit beings are not normally visible to the human eye. Here we should note we are referring to those spirit beings that do not inhabit physical bodies. We can, of course, see these although, without spiritual discernment, we think them to be human. They may be cases

of demonic possession or else they may be evil spirits in the form of human beings. We will discuss this in the chapter on deliverance. So spirit beings are not normally visible to the human eye when in their spirit bodies. The Bible tells us that the spirit body is of a different material than the physical. However, the spirit bodies are visible to the spiritual eyes,

“And Elisha prayed, and said, ‘Lord, I pray thee, open his eyes, that He may see,’ and the Lord opened the eyes of the young man; and he Saw:”

♥ 2 Kings 6:17

Whenever we have read this scripture, we have supposed that somehow God opened the man’s physical eyes, but this is clearly not the case. His physical eyes were already open. No, in this scripture Elisha is asking God to open the man’s *spiritual* eyes. He must have his spiritual eyes open in order to see into the spirit world. The spiritual eyes we possess do not operate all the time, but only when one of the Gifts of the Holy Spirit known as the Discerning of Spirits goes into operation. This is what happened in this scripture. This gift functioned in answer to Elisha’s prayer.

Whereas it is necessary for God to open the eyes of Christians in order for us to see into the spirit world, many members of the Dark Kingdom can see into the spirit world at all times—it is more real to them than the physical world. Through the taking of certain charms and *medicines*, their spiritual eyes are opened and they can see spirit beings at all times.

Based on my study of scripture, I believe that spirit beings operate at a much higher vibrational or movement rate than can be seen with the human eye. I think we can infer such knowledge from the Scriptures. Let me illustrate with an example.

“And it came to pass that night, that the angel of the Lord went out And smote in the camp of the Assyrians an hundred fourscore and Five thousand: and when they arose early in the morning, behold, They were all dead corpses.”

♥ 2 Kings 19:35

One angel killed 185,000 soldiers in one night. This is extraordinary. We can learn several things from this. First, the angel did not become tired as a human being would have. Second, we can conclude that the angel was moving much faster than a human being is capable of moving in this world.

If we assume the sharpest sword and the fact that it would take a minimum of three seconds to kill each soldier, then it would still take a human six and one-half days of twenty-four hours each to kill this many Syrian troops. And yet this angel did it in just one night. If we assume that this was an eight-hour night, then he was killing soldiers at the rate of six and one-half soldiers per second! From this data, we can calculate that the angel was moving about twenty times faster than a human being in top physical condition. So we can easily see that spirit beings possess bodies that operate at much higher speeds or frequencies than do human beings in the physical world.

We know that all matter vibrates in the physical world, although we do theorize that all vibration stops at a temperature of absolute zero (-460 degrees Fahrenheit). But since the laws of thermodynamics state that it is impossible to attain a temperature of absolute zero, we can state that all physical matter and atomic matter vibrates. We also know from the Theory of Relativity developed by Albert Einstein that energy and matter are interchangeable. Could the same be true in the spirit world?

We can also infer from our knowledge of science and the Bible that spirit beings can travel faster than the speed of light; something currently deemed impossible in the physical universe. Einstein concluded that it is impossible to travel at or greater than the speed of light. As an object approaches the speed of light, its mass increases. As the mass increases it takes increasingly more energy to accelerate the object making attainment of the speed of light impossible. Theoretically, at the speed of light an object would have infinite mass and by mathematical definition would have to have zero acceleration.

The fact that the devil and angels can leave the planet Heaven, located somewhere near the North Star, Polaris, and travel to earth as quickly as they do necessitates that they travel greater than the speed of light. However,

another scientific fact of Quantum Mechanics is instructive here. As an object approaches the speed of light, time slows appreciably. We have verified this portion of the Theory of Relativity. Could we not infer then that spirit beings, their bodies operating at speeds greater than the speed of light, would be eternal beings since time stands still at or past this speed? We know that spirit beings are eternal and possibly it has to do with the laws of the universe. Every human being is a three-fold or tripartite being: spirit, soul and body. The spirit is the real you and will dwell forever in either Heaven or hell.

The spirit realm or world is all around us. We do not see it with our physical eyes, but there are theoretically thousands of planes of existence which could co-exist with our own, differing only in vibratory rate. But since it is not within the scope of this book to theorize about spiritual things, we will confine ourselves to facts communicated from the Bible and from former members of the Dark Kingdom. As you will learn in greater detail later when we discuss the organization of the Dark Kingdom, there are thirteen planes in the spiritual world or heavens directly above the earth.

Perhaps our greatest difficulty in understanding the spiritual realm is due to our fixation upon the physical world. We know from the Bible that Jesus walked through physical matter such as walls, but we have difficulty comprehending how He did it. The first thing we must do then, in order to learn about the spirit world, is to free our thinking and our preconceived ideas in regard to the spirit realm and not limit spirit beings by our concepts of this physical world. We need more research into the area of spiritual things and beings to open our minds to the truths God wants us to know about in the realm of the spirit.

In so doing, we will be much more able to understand how it is that the devil and his spiritual cohorts can operate in the ways that they do and how they are in fact able to change forms. Quite frankly, this is the most difficult concept for us to understand in the Western world. How can these beings change forms? How can they change into the likeness of a snake, a bird or a lion? How does a witch change into an owl and fly through the night? And the only reason these concepts are hard for us to understand is because we are so ignorant about the spirit world. Even close ministerial friends here in the

United States have said to me, “I know you are a man of truth and I believe you, but it is difficult to believe.”

Answering such questions as these is difficult at best for us even though we possess the greatest scientific knowledge in the world today. That scientific knowledge is limited to the physical world. We have little scientific knowledge about the spirit world. We have scarcely scratched the tip of the iceberg when it comes to spiritual knowledge. There has been little, if any, research done into spiritual matters other than some psychic research at Duke University and in the Soviet Union, but nothing from the Christian perspective.

Our scientific knowledge, most of which is empirical in nature, is limited to the physical realm. And because of this, we are limited in our knowledge of the spirit world because we try to use our scientific laws in the spirit world and they do not work there. We have no scientific instruments capable of measuring spiritual phenomena. Our knowledge of the spiritual world, then, must of necessity be confined to the first hand testimony of those who have been there and have experienced the spiritual realm and to our knowledge from the Word of God.

We might ask why God did not give us more information about the spirit world. Perhaps He did not think that we needed any more than He gave us. It is my contention that there are several possible reasons why, but it would be speculation. Here in the West, we have progressed in the physical sciences. In contrast, the West African countries, especially Nigeria, have progressed in spiritual science to such a degree that those humans in the Dark Kingdom now possess tremendous spiritual power.

Sometimes God will reveal knowledge to us to satisfy our curiosity and/or to answer a prayer, but more often than not He withholds knowledge until such a time as we need that knowledge. This is the history of the Church and what we sometimes call “present truth.” Present truth is defined as truth that is being re-established in the Church today. This would include, but not be limited to, such concepts as justification by faith, laying on of hands, spiritual

gifts, the baptism of power, and the restoration of the offices of prophet and apostle.

It is my belief, however, that God is delivering many from positions of high authority in the Kingdom of Satan in our day to expose the works and operations of the devil and the Dark Kingdom. It is up to us to use this information and wage spiritual warfare with it against the Dark Kingdom.

You may wonder why much of this information has not been revealed before. No doubt it is because revival is fairly recent in this the darkest part of the Dark Continent. Revival only began in Nigeria in the early 1970s. Now we are seeing thousands saved at every crusade there and normally about 150 to 200 every night will come to the Lord in church meetings.

Another reason is because Satan has gone to great pains to see that his kingdom is never exposed. That is why every covenant with humans involves a covenant with death—anyone revealing any of the information about Satan’s kingdom will die. Many of those who have sought to expose his government and workings are now dead.

But it is also interesting to note that in a country so used to the supernatural of the devil (dead raised, etc.), the people recognize the supernatural of God immediately and can tell the difference. They have enough spiritual discernment to differentiate between the workings of the Holy Spirit from that of the Dark Kingdom.

SPIRITUAL DEVELOPMENT

“Many are called but few are chosen,” and it is up to us to discern through our recreated human spirits the ministry which God has called us to accomplish. That is why we go through seeming great tribulation and spiritual attack just before we accomplish something great for the Kingdom of God here in the physical world. The more spiritual we become, the easier it is for us to

accomplish what God has already birthed in the spirit world for our ministry in this world.

This is the reason it is necessary for us to develop our human spirits to the point where we are more spiritual minded than physical minded. The devil attacks to try and keep us from developing ourselves spiritually and to keep the ministry God has birthed from coming to fruition. Once we understand these facts, we can see how very necessary it is for us to learn to “walk in the spirit,” as the Bible commands us to do. It is only as we are “walking in the spirit” that we are able to follow the Holy Spirit, our guide and partner, and can accomplish what God has called each of us to do for Him. You will never find a person who is not totally sold out to God accomplishing very much in the realm of ministry. Also, this is the area where most ministries fall or lose their vision. They become too busy to continue the discipline so necessary for success in spiritual matters. This is fatal! Without spiritual sensitivity, one cannot hear from God. When I think of the many times I picked up something in my spirit and acted on it to find that it was the Holy Spirit makes me realize how many times I probably miss Him when He is trying to tell me something.

If you are ever called to the Five-fold ministry, don’t ever forget that your primary function is to seek God daily through prayer, meditation in the Word and just spending time with God. And it must be done daily. You cannot store spirituality; there are no spiritual batteries.

In order to develop any relationship, time is required. It is no different with God. This was vividly impressed upon me by the Lord Himself in 1980. Since throwing morning papers in high school, I have always been an early riser. Often I get up between 4:30 and 5:00 A.M., although the Spirit often awakens me earlier for intercession. We will see why this time is crucial later. I will pray, worship God and meditate in the Word. I never do Bible study at this time but do it later. This early morning time often goes past noon and sometimes all day; it is strictly a time of fellowship with God. You may not realize it, but God actually looks forward to your spending time with Him. He wants to meet you each day to help and love you. Most of us do not give Him that opportunity. But I went through a period of depression for about ten days when I did not want to read the Bible or spend time with Him. In fact, I

scarcely even picked up a Bible during this time, although I did pray during the day as is my usual custom.

While sitting in a church outside Houston preparing for the service, the Lord Jesus spoke and said, “You wouldn’t have a very good relationship with your wife if you never spent any time with her.” You can see the importance He places on our time together with Him. Make it a priority in your life. Jealously guard the time you spend with the Master. It is precious to Him and a necessity if you are to develop spiritually.

It often surprises many Christians and even ministers to learn that their relationship with God is more important to Him than their ministry: God cares much more about you than anything you can do for Him. This is probably the area we get the most comments on when teaching at ministry conferences. Many, if not most, ministers get so busy working for God (doing things He has not called them to do!) that they miss God and err in their ministry. It is easy to become so busy doing the work of God (so you think!) that you miss the will of God. This is a favorite tactic of the Dark Kingdom—keep you too busy to hear from God. This is more of a problem in the West than in Third World countries. They so desperately want to be successful like us and it often surprises them when I say that spiritually we are not successful. We have too many “things” which demand our attention. We are so activity-conscious here in America and feel like we must be doing something all the time. Let me pass a tip along to you: being activity-minded is of the Dark Kingdom! He knows what it takes to separate you from God and he knows that quality time in prayer and the Word is required in order to develop spiritually.

TAKE A SPIRITUAL CHECKUP

We need to grow up spiritually and mature. Something I always share with ministers that is so important to our spiritual well being and I have never heard taught is taking a spiritual checkup. Physical things are much like spiritual things. Just as it is important to get a regular physical exam for our

bodies, so it is more important to take a spiritual exam every six to twelve months. You take this exam by going away—it will not work at home. Go to the country where you can be alone. Take a notebook, pen and a cassette or CD player with some praise and worship music. You spend a week to ten days just alone with the Lord. I can assure you, this will change your life. In addition to getting some answers from God, you will develop spiritually and retune your spirit. Just as a guitar string gets out of tune or pitch, so does our spirit and this gets us back in tune with the Holy Spirit.

One interesting aspect of this spiritual exercise is that often many of the things we want to talk with God about never come up. Normally what will happen is this. It will take you one to three days to tune out the world, your problems, nervousness, addiction to television, and so on. The time it takes is according to how much out of tune your spirit is with God.

After His peace comes and you begin to tune up and tune in, He will start talking to you about some problems you have not even considered. He may say, “I want you to check up on your relationship with so and so.” Or He may talk to you about your family or some problems in the church. He told me this year to set aside one day each month to fast and pray for each of my children. He talked about the peer pressure on kids today, even in Christian schools, and said I needed to intercede one whole day a month for them. You might consider this as a wise word to you as well.

Very often in a church service you may sense the moving of the Spirit and know what He wants to do. This is the result of sensitivity and your spirit being finely tuned to God. Believe me, this is an area that is much needed, especially in ministry. A too common problem is that the Holy Spirit wants to minister through healing, but the minister does not pick it up in his spirit so nobody gets healed. We simply must be spiritually in tune with God.

Sad to say, I run into this problem all the time as a visiting minister to churches. The Spirit will be moving, but the pastor is too busy with the regular order of the service and does not pick it up in his spirit. The healing or ministry that the Spirit wants to call forth does not happen. Therefore, the

will of God is not being carried out in that body of believers due to the lack of spiritual sensitivity by the eldership of that church.

We must come to a place of awareness in ministry that we have *no agendas of our own*. Our agenda is simply to follow the Holy Spirit and His agenda: whatever He wants done in that church on that day in that particular service for particular people.

Another part of our problem is not understanding God's priorities. We have the concept that the preaching of the Word is the most important event and we are in a hurry to get to it. For example, people who are contemplating suicide; people with children on drugs, people who need jobs or healing are not able to be helped by the Holy Spirit even though He would like to help them. This is important for members of the congregation to understand as well. This was vividly revealed to me by a prophetic word I gave in a large church in Houston where the pastor correctly discerned that the Spirit wanted to move and heal people. Evidently some people were there who were anxious for the preaching portion of the service to begin and for this healing to be over. The prophetic word said, "Say not in your hearts, 'It is time for the service to begin,' for I say to you that the service has begun already!" God wants to help people. That is ministry. We must get in tune with Him and then He can use us to help people. We must find out what His agenda is each service and make it our own agenda. That is true order in worship.

If you are wondering whether this is true of your church and you want to know for sure so you can tune in to God, let me give you a very simple little test. This test is foolproof. The number one sign that this is a problem in any church is: *when every service is the same*.

If every service is the same, basically, then your church needs examining; you have a problem. When every service is the same, the Spirit of God is not in manifestation, period. You should seek God about correcting this problem and there is only one way—learn to follow the Holy Spirit. This is why we never see, for the most part, the manifestation of the Spirit of God in denominational churches because they have a program all planned out telling God what they are going to do. "God, we're going to have the choir march in, and then we're

going to say a short, sweet prayer, and then we're going to sing hymns 36, 156 and 99. Then we'll take the offering and then, after the doxology, the pastor will come and give the sermon."

And God will let your church continue telling Him what they are going to do, too. But the problem is, it's what *they* are going to do and not God. He's not involved! They have planned the sweet, gentle Holy Spirit right out the door. You who are Pentecostal and Charismatics should realize that the same problem exists in your churches, although not to as great a degree. You still have an agenda, but it's just not printed out like we Methodists and Baptists do it. But look at the simple test I gave you and you will have to admit your services are all the same too. I know, I've been in the services. In fact, a big red flag in most Pentecostal churches is the lack of manifestation of the Gifts of the Spirit in any service—the Spirit is conspicuous by His absence.

Many ministers are struggling today with why their church is not growing. Many have even undertaken statistical surveys in the community to find out what is wrong and why people are not coming to church. The answer is simple. The services are boring. People do not see the moving and power of the Holy Spirit and they are hungry for real spiritual food. The world is desperate for the real, supernatural power and demonstration of God. It is sad to say, but this failure of the Church is the reason why so many have turned to Satanism and the occult—here they find the supernatural they are seeking. Many will not welcome these statements, especially among the clergy, but it is the truth. The secret to having a successful service is very simple. Just find out what the Spirit wants to do and let Him do it. It may mean the Word is not preached every time or that the entire time is spent ministering to people, but that's all right. Just let God have His way each service. If you are prayed up and tuned in spiritually, you will know what He wants to do even if you're among the laity seated in the congregation. God knows those present each service and their needs. It is only as we mature spiritually and learn to follow Him that we will see true revival. We must forsake tradition if we really want God!

RELIGIOUS BEHAVIOR

Too much of what we see in church services today is merely religious behavior. By that I mean we act a certain way outside the church and then when we enter the sanctuary, we change our ungodly, worldly behavior to religious behavior. This is not true spiritual worship, but only a form of worship and is never acceptable to God. The Bible says we must worship Him in “spirit and in truth.” We must follow the Spirit with contrite, sanctified hearts and then we will begin to see God move in our services again.

This change in behavior must first start within the Five-fold ministry. Only as the spiritual leaders change will they be able to affect their congregations. God is sick and tired of non-spiritual worship and He is no longer going to tolerate it in the Church. Those who refuse to change will either leave the ministry, or their people will leave the church and go to another. That church will die. If the board or church members resist a minister who wants to begin true worship, then those board or church members will be purged out by the Holy Spirit. But the change must start with the clergy.

This truth was revealed to me in October of 1985, while ministering at a church in Cleveland, Tennessee. The Holy Spirit opened up the book of Joel and applied it to today and the Church. The “new wine [the gospel] is failing.” And the oil fails [the Holy Spirit] because the ministers of God are not right with the Lord. The chief problem in the Church today lies not with the congregations, although most pastors think so. No, the number one problem is in ministry. All the jealousy, dishonesty, and backbiting is being caused by the Dark Kingdom. They have had a heyday with the ministry. As a result, the New Wine is failing—most churches today are spiritually dead.

The solution is given in verses 13 and 14 of chapter 1 in Joel. The ministers are to repent and cry out to God before the altar day and night. Then and only then will we see the unity, true revival, and love that must take place for the Church to come into its glory, the true glory of the Lord. Only then will the world be able to see a real demonstration of the love and power of God. But let me ask you a question. When was the last time your pastor lay before the altar at the front of the church all night in sackcloth? And when was the last time you yourself did it?

It's time to repent for us all if we truly want to see the move of God that He wishes to bring in this decade. Many in the Church have been waiting on God. When's the next move of God coming? Oh, when's it coming? I have news for you. You're not waiting on Him. He's waiting on you! He's waiting on all of us to repent and return to our first Love, the Lord Jesus.

Churches all over America and indeed the whole world are wanting revival today. God has given the answer. We must first repent of our religious behavior and purify ourselves. Then we are to fast, pray and cry out to God with great intercession for revival in the Church. Have we lost our first love? Are we lukewarm? Do we care about those souls around us at home or on the job who are headed for hell? Do we not see that most of the world does not believe today's Church meets their contemporary needs? Why do they feel this way? Are we going to continue playing church or are we going to free these captives and ourselves from the delusions of the Dark Kingdom? It's time to shake ourselves and rise up for the battle. The trumpet has sounded!

The answer in the Church today is not another program. We have enough of men's programs which are already causing the "new wine to fail." God will no longer honor such programs! He is calling for true repentance and compassion among the clergy for His sheep. He is tired of seeing the sheep fleeced and His money wasted on meaningless building programs and other tired projects which He has not ordained. God is calling for His ministers to return to their first love and seek the spiritual well being of the sheep.

"How do the beasts grow! The herds of cattle are perplexed, because They have no pasture; yea, the flocks of sheep [the Church] are made Desolate. The beasts of the field cry also unto thee: for the rivers of Waters [The Holy Spirit] are dried up, and the fire hath devoured the Pastures of the wilderness. Let the priests, the ministers of the Lord, Weep between the porch and the altar, and let them say, 'Spare thy People, O Lord, and give not thine heritage to reproach, that the Heathen [Dark Kingdom] should rule over them: wherefore should They say among the people, 'Where is their God?'"

♥ Joel 1:18, 20; 2:17

JUDGMENT OF THE CHURCH

If you are a pastor, the Lord has a Word for you. And it's found in Jeremiah 23:1-4. God is demanding changes in the ministry today. Judgment has begun at the House of God. The Church is going through the fiery furnace. The furnace is a time of judgment; a time to determine our priorities as the three Hebrew young men did. Is God first in our lives? The fiery furnace will burn up all those things both material and spiritual in our lives that have hindered our true relationship with Him. The Bible says if we judge ourselves we will not be judged. If we refuse to examine ourselves and judge ourselves, He is faithful and loving, but He cannot deny Himself as the Bible tells us. He will simply turn up the heat on the furnace until we face spiritual reality.

Remember, one of the truly marvelous things about the nature of God toward us is that there is no failure. If He gives you a test and you don't pass it, He doesn't fail you, but keeps giving you the same test until you pass. But He expects us to examine ourselves.

“For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God: And if it first begins at us, what shall the end be of them that obey not The gospel of God? And if the righteous scarcely be saved, where Shall the ungodly and the sinner appear?”

♥ 1 Peter 4:17-18

Yes, judgment has begun at the house of God. It was once said, “God must judge the Church in order to have a standard by which to judge the world.” I believe this is true, although we must be careful to understand what this means (see Romans 3:5-6). This judgment is not the judgment of Heaven or Hell. The eternal destiny of every human being is sealed according to what they do with Jesus and His Blood sacrifice. No, what I hear from those saying this is: “How can God judge the world and world systems when the same ungodly behaviors and attitudes are present in the Church?”

God is at work today to purify the Church. Purity *always* precedes power. In order for God to pour out His Spirit with power upon all flesh in the last end-

time revival, we must be pure and chaste people through whom He can work. We must go back to the Holiness Movement and study the lives of men such as John Wesley and Charles Finney. We must mature spiritually enough to discern both the good and the bad in all the past moves of God upon the earth.

The Lord is purifying the Church. He is coming for a bride without spot or wrinkle as she is made ready for His soon return. Remember, the Bible says that the Bride “made herself ready” (Rev. 19:7); God won’t do it for you so if you expect to be in the Bride then heed this warning. And He is returning for a glorious Church. Not one beaten down and fragmented by the devil and his Dark Kingdom. That is why He is sounding the trumpet for spiritual warfare.

VISION OF THE BATTLEFIELD

This was vividly brought home to me in February, 1990. I had just returned from three months in Nigeria and Morocco. While ministering at a church in Portland, Oregon, the Holy Spirit awakened me at 3 A.M. Sunday morning and gave me a vision, in full color, of the Church. The vision lasted thirty minutes and related to the ministry of the husband and wife couple who had started the work there. I saw them come before the Throne of God and answer the call to ministry in the spirit realm. This was a Word of Knowledge because it dealt with what had already occurred in the spirit world. God said that their ministry would be known as the Repairers of the Breach. However, the point I wish to make here that was revealed in the vision concerns the Church.

The Lord was standing next to me, on my right, in the vision and He was actually narrating the vision for me. I saw a vast battlefield as far as the eyes could see and there were soldiers on the battlefield. Very few of the soldiers were moving, most were lying wounded. A few were hobbling around on crutches. As my gaze moved closer in the vision, I saw many lying wounded with deep wounds. Blood was flowing from the wounds. Some had bandages on the wounds, but the bandages were of the small variety and did not cover but about one-tenth of the gaping wounds. Do you see the symbolism? And

the Lord standing next to me spoke very sadly and said, “This great army you see lying decimated on the field of battle is my Church.”

This is the condition of the Church today because we have been ignorant about spiritual warfare. We have let the devil and his Dark Kingdom run all over us. God wants to change this. Those who have learned and are able will enter into the greatest spiritual confrontation the world has ever seen. Those who are not ready will perish because the devil has no mercy.

You’ll notice from the gospels that the very first thing Jesus did in ministry after His desert experience was to engage the Dark Kingdom in spiritual warfare at the synagogue. Why is the Church refusing to do this today?

Don’t ever think that the devil will not contest the Second Coming of Jesus Christ just as he did the first time Jesus came; in fact he will contest it more because now he knows the truth about the Messiah—that this time He will in fact set up the Messianic Kingdom upon the earth and that’s “lights out” for Satan. He is gearing up his spiritual forces for this great battle to stop the Kingdom of God from moving to earth.

We are entering into an era where the age-long conflict between God and the devil is moving full force to planet earth—it is the final, decisive spiritual battle for planet earth and like a runaway M-1 tank, nothing can stop this battle from taking place. The question is, are you ready?

He who has ears, let him hear what the Spirit is saying to the Church in this hour!

2

SPIRITUAL GIFTS

“eagerly desire spiritual gifts,”

♥ 1 Corinthians 14:1

We must learn the importance of spiritual gifts and seek them as the Bible admonishes us to do. We are told to, “eagerly desire spiritual gifts.” In the Dark Kingdom they earnestly desire spiritual gifts. They know that with spiritual gifts comes power and it is upon power, money and control that the Dark Kingdom perpetuates itself.

A human being who works as an agent of the devil in West Africa knows that the means to wealth and success in this world is to possess spiritual gifts and more power than anyone else. They want more power. And if Satan has no power as we have been taught, why do these people seek power from him? How could you obtain something from someone who didn’t have what you were seeking? Why is it we have had the idea in Christianity that Satan has no power? We have had the foolish idea that God restrains Satan to the point where he has no power. God does what you do! God performs His Word. It is only through our knowledge of His Word and spiritual warfare that the Dark Kingdom can be restrained. This is what the Father desires, but we have been taught the erroneous idea that God’s restraint of Satan is automatic. Nothing could be further from the truth! God has left us weapons—spiritual weapons to win our conflicts. But if we do not pick them up and use them, He cannot help us!

Consider the book of Job. While it is true that God had placed a protective hedge around Job, when the devil was able to attack Job and his family, he did so with impunity. Even more interesting was what the devil did. If he has no power as we have been taught, then how was he able to accomplish the supernatural things he did that are mentioned in Job? Do we not see that he was able to control the weather and sent fire from heaven? Did you know that members of the Dark Kingdom in Nigeria are able to kill using the weather, in particular lightning?

The fact is that the great power of Satan and the Dark Kingdom has been downplayed by the Church for years. This is largely due to ignorance about their real power. We have spiritualized the truth by (1) not having any facts and (2) using the scripture, “greater is He that is in me than he that is in the world” (I John 4:4) to minimize worrying about Satan’s power. And it is only when we know the truth about the power of the devil and confront the Dark Kingdom that our perspective about how we deal with him will change. He is perfectly content to let us go merrily along believing he has no power. As long as we think the opposing army is powerless, we won’t even bother to send out a reconnaissance patrol.

We must engage the enemy in spiritual warfare or lose the war by default. This is the reason for the sad state of the Church today. Our ignorance has been bliss for the Dark Kingdom. We have talked about salvation, healing, faith and many other things. We have fought over doctrine, heresy, and *everything* else. But we have not realized we are in a very difficult spiritual war. We keep waiting for the Lord to return and rescue us. Meanwhile, He is waiting on us to engage the enemy with the weapons He has given to us for the battle.

When we learn the facts about the Dark Kingdom, their spiritual gifts, and what it takes to stop them, it places a whole new perspective on not only our thinking, but also our action. Just remember, the devil is a being without mercy. He has none. This is hard for us to comprehend because even the worst human being, someone such as Saddam Hussein, will normally have some mercy. Satan does not. Just because we are ignorant about him or we don’t want to “get involved” in spiritual warfare does not mean he will not

attack. In fact, quite the opposite is true. The more you do know about his kingdom and how he attacks, the better you will be able to overcome him and his demons. This has especially been brought home to me in deliverance ministry because we are able to recognize cases of possession that we could not a few years ago.

Yes, the Dark Kingdom possesses much power. A human being who works as an agent of the devil knows that the means to success is power and that this power comes from their master, Satan, through his giving them spiritual gifts. There are literally thousands of magic charms which are in use to give power to the one possessing the charm. We in the enlightened West have always looked upon such things as being nonsense and superstition, but the truth is that these charms work! They do what they are designed to do. Of course the real power is not in the charm, but in the spiritual force or forces behind the charm. These spiritual forces are of course demonic, but the point is that they do possess great power contrary to what we have been led to think. Consider the following testimony from my close friend, Evangelist Emmanuel Omoobajesu, a former powerful member of the Dark Kingdom:

“My struggle to get rich by any means did not end there. Despite these sufferings that I had undergone I continued to search for other ways. I went to Ikare in Akoko Division of the present Ondo State to a man who knew about making money and who claimed he could help me. This terrible man, the nature of his job prohibits him from seeing the light of the sun. Any day he would come out, it must rain so that the rays of the sun would be covered. For this man said that the rays of the sun must never dry his clothes. So his abode was made in an underground tunnel. We were six in number who went to consult this man on the same issue. He asked us, “What type of money do you wish to have?” He then began to show us the different methods by which men get rich quickly in the dark world. (Satan knows many ways of keeping a man in bondage by enticing them.) Some of us said, ‘Any type would do.’

“He brought out something, and asked each of us to swallow. I told him that he must explain it fully to me before I can do such a thing as he had said. He put the thing up he had earlier offered and continued another.

“He took a hen and tied one of its legs to a stick with a short rope. With very powerful incantations, he prepared a big fire directly opposite the hen a few distances away. He then came back and put some maize grains in between the burning fire and the hen tied down. With a sharp knife in his hand, he cut the rope with which he had tied the hen. The hen thus released, ran forward to the maize, swallowed about six grains quickly and dashed into the burning fire and was consumed. ‘The message is very simple and it is this,’ the man explained to us. ‘Anyone who gets rich by this method would be rich and very famous for as many years as the number of grains the hen swallowed. The person will also end up in a similar fashion as did the hen—in hell fire.’”¹

As you can see from this testimony, there is power available in charms. In this case it was for wealth. There are charms available to make one instantly rich, but look at the price! We can also learn from this how the devil can use poverty as a means to obtain members for the Dark Kingdom. In many areas of the world, people have lived so long in poverty that they are desperate for wealth. It is an *all-consuming* desire that they will attempt to gain at any cost, even damnation in hell!

Most of the charms to acquire wealth or power involve the shedding of human blood. Normally the person seeking wealth or power is called upon to sacrifice their children or parents. Many gladly do so. And Satan always makes certain that the person seeking the “spiritual gift” does the killing! He uses this additional hook to keep the person full of guilt and in spiritual bondage. If they try to leave the Dark Kingdom later, he will ruthlessly remind them of all these atrocities they have performed and tell them there is no hope for them. Many of these people are held through fear and will not receive the truth although they want to be delivered.

But the main reason we have had such difficulty in understanding spiritual gifts within the Church is because of our lack of understanding concerning the spirit world in general. We hear the words *spirit world* and our minds picture

¹ Omoobajesu, Emmanuel, *My Conversion*, Sharat Audio Visual Enterprises Nigeria, Limited, pp. 5-6

something hazy or perhaps we see angels on a cloud with harps or halos. Think for a moment before you continue. Let your mind bring a picture of what your concept is of the spirit world.

Spiritual matters have not been real to us. We have largely only known and understood physical things. This is one reason my African minister friends who come here to stay with me have difficulty understanding why we are so ignorant about the spirit world. We have difficulty comprehending and accepting the work of the Dark Kingdom because these concepts are foreign to us as a result of our lack of knowledge about the spirit world.

“Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would
Not have you ignorant.” ♥ 1 Corinthians 12:1

If the Holy Spirit did not want the church at Corinth ignorant about spiritual gifts, then He does not want the Church today to be ignorant about spiritual gifts. One reason the Dark Kingdom is so successful against us is because the Church as a whole is *very* ignorant about spiritual gifts whereas they are not.

We will discuss these spiritual gifts later in the book. They include: tongues, interpretation of tongues, prophecy, faith, working of miracles, discerning of spirits, gifts of healings, word of knowledge, and word of wisdom. The point to be made here is that before we can understand and utilize the spiritual gifts that the Holy Spirit has given to each of us, we must know something about spiritual matters.

For example, if I were to give you the gift of a scuba diving outfit, you would have to know something about the underwater world in order to use this gift. In addition, you would have to know how to use the gift before you took it into the undersea world. Likewise are the gifts of the Spirit. We must know both something about the world of spirits as well as what the gifts are and how they operate.

Because I have taught on these gifts and their activation for many years, I can say from my experience that there are at least two of these gifts that

predominate in each Christian. All nine may operate through you, but at least two or three will be dominant. However, if you are not aware of these gifts and/or you are not sure how they function, then they will not (because they cannot) manifest through you even though it is God's desire for you to operate in all nine spiritual gifts. Indeed, they are designed primarily for spiritual combat! But our lack of understanding of both the environment of the spirit world and the operation of these gifts has caused the Church to be weak. Why is the Church weak today? Because the individual members of the Body are weak. If you break this down even further to your individual church, the same holds true. Your church is weak because you and the other members of that church are weak! Consider the following scripture:

“For the body is not one member, but many. If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of The body? And if the ear shall say, because I am not the eye, I am not Of the body; is it therefore not of the body? If the whole body were an Eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were The smelling? But now hath God set the members every one of them In the body, as it hath pleased him. And if they were all one member, Where were the body? But now are they many members, yet but one Body. And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee: Nor again the head to the feet, I have no need of you. Nay, much More those members of the body, which seem to be more feeble, are Necessary. And those members of the body, which we think to be less Honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant honour; and our Uncomely parts have more abundant comeliness. For our comely Parts have no need: but God hath tempered the body together, having Given more abundant honour to that part which lacked: that there Should be no schism in the body; but that the members should have The same care one for another.” ♥ 1 Corinthians 12:14-25

When you read this scripture, does it sound like God has any spiritual elite in the Church? No! We are all necessary to the Body and He wants all of us to understand and operate in spiritual gifts, not just the preachers. And if you are not knowledgeable about spiritual gifts and you do not exercise those gifts God has placed within you, then the Body is weak because you are weak. In order for the Body to be strong, it is necessary that each part, each Church

member, know his place in order to function effectively. If you are weak and ignorant concerning spiritual gifts, then the whole Body will be weak.

You might respond that it is the fault of the ministers that your are weak. This is partially true. But ultimately, it is your responsibility to learn about spiritual gifts and how they function. God will hold *you* responsible for the development and exercise of all the gifts He has given you. If your pastor does not teach on these gifts, then get some books or CD messages and learn yourself. God will hold you responsible and you need this knowledge.

And concerning the spirit world, consider our worship services. The Lord admonished us to “worship God in spirit and in truth.” If we do not understand spiritual things, how can we even worship God? The answer is plainly evident that we cannot. There is little true worship today. What we call worship services are not worship at all. They should more correctly be called song services with no anointing and no worship. As we learn more about spiritual things and the Spirit, our services will change for the better. We simply must increase our intelligence in these areas of understanding.

What is the problem and how do we solve it? In spiritual matters, just the same as in physical matters, one cannot solve a problem until it has first been defined. And we cannot define the problem in physical terms. We must come to know and understand spiritual terms. This we have been unable to do.

THE PURPOSE OF SPIRITUAL GIFTS

Now, let us consider the purpose of spiritual gifts. In the Dark Kingdom, a person is given a spiritual gift for only one reason: to make war against the saints of God! Spiritual gifts are coveted for their power and ability to bring wealth to those possessing them, but the real purpose is to attack the Kingdom of God and the Church specifically.

God has also given spiritual gifts to help us withstand those employed by the Dark Kingdom. Our problem has been we have not understood this truth nor

other truths of the gospel. We have pretty much majored on the theme of salvation and forgotten about the rest of the Bible. Salvation is important of course, but it is only after one obtains salvation that he becomes a real threat to the devil. Consequently, it is only then that a person needs spiritual gifts in order to thwart the attacks of the enemy against self and family. The Lord told us that the three reasons the devil always comes in our lives is to “steal, kill and destroy.” (John 10:10)

Although the Spirit is sounding a clear note from the trumpet, for the most part in the Church world today we see that it has not been heard as an uncertain sound. One of the major problems is our not understanding the various roles in the Church. There are three divisions in God’s army: praying, paying and preaching. Which division are you in? And we have not properly understood the function of each division nor how each is organized. For example, consider the preaching division. There are five offices mentioned in the Bible—apostle, prophet, pastor, teacher, and evangelist. We have neither recognized nor have we understood the function or anointing of each.

Basically, we have only recognized and understood one of the five, the pastor. Yes, we hear about the evangelist and the teacher, but we have not understood these offices in their entirety. We have relegated the teacher to being someone who teaches Sunday School instead of the prominent ministerial position, with its special anointing, that the Bible implies. We have said that the offices of apostle and prophet passed away after the early Church was established, a view not supported by scripture. Where does it say that these offices passed away? This is an illogical conclusion! If we recognize the offices of pastor, evangelist and teacher, then we should realize that the prophet and apostle are still around as well. And Ephesians 2:20 and 4:11-13 supports this view. Just consider the following:

“Let the prophets speak two or three, and let the other [prophets] Judge. If any thing be revealed to another [prophet] that sitteth by, let The first hold his peace.”

♥ 1 Corinthians 14:29-30

This scripture implies that there should be prophets in the Church and in each individual church. Where are they? What is their function in the Church today? What should apostles be doing in the Church today? Briefly (for detail on the five Church offices, see *The High Calling of God* and *The Prophetic Voice*), these five offices may be defined as follows:

1. **Pastor** – he is the shepherd of the local church and is primarily responsible for the care and feeding of the sheep.
2. **Evangelist** – this minister has a special anointing from God to preach salvation and see the sinner come to Christ. This office also is one where we see many instances of Divine healing and working of miracles. These two gifts of the Spirit, gifts of healings and working of miracles, seem to be dominant in the ministry of the evangelist. A good Biblical example is Philip in Acts 8.
3. **Teacher** – this ministry gift and office includes a special anointing to understand and teach the Word of God. It is from this office that we learn what the Word is saying.
4. **Prophet** – the prophet is God's trumpet. Prophets are those through whom God can and does speak to the Church. This office has prophecy and the revelation gifts of the Spirit (Word of Wisdom, Word of Knowledge and Discerning of Spirits) as dominant gifts.
5. **Apostle** – the Greek word, *apostolos*, literally means 'a sent one.' Apostles, as well as prophets, are more fully discussed later. Apostles, along with prophets, are the foundational offices of the Church (Ephesians 2:20) and they have ultimate accountability for the Church government and structure.

When it comes to spiritual gifts and offices, our thinking needs re-examination. If you will spend a year or two simply studying the structure and government of the early Church, you will see that we are not functioning in the way the Lord first established the Church. In addition to the five offices, consider the mission of the local church. What has God called each one to do? There are too many which the Lord never established. In order to pastor or stand in any of the five offices, a person must be called and anointed by the Lord for that particular office. You cannot call yourself, although many try.

Some churches obviously exist so that the pastor's hobby of preaching can be practiced. Others are established for various other reasons. Unfortunately, most churches today are simply small business enterprises. Ministry used to be a calling—and *true* ministry still is—but now most of it is just another vocation—another business as the Holy Spirit told me in 1997. Many evangelists start churches for financial support. This is wrong! You can only be successful *if* God calls you to do it. Because when He calls you, He also anoints you and it is this anointing which makes the venture successful. You cannot anoint yourself! You'd really be surprised if you knew how many churches exist that were not ordained by God. And you'd be surprised how many pastors have no idea what their church is there to achieve. They may give the stock answers of preaching the gospel or saving the lost, but closer examination reveals they have no clear mandate from God.

But if we can learn something about spiritual things, and especially how the Five-fold offices function, we will be in a position once again to restore the Church to its proper order and mission in the world. Our concept today is to preach evangelistic sermons (although this is largely disappearing as well) and get people saved. Yet the early Church appears to have spent more time ministering to one another and to the Lord in church services. They preached the salvation message outside the church. There is a place, of course, for such preaching in the local church if the Spirit so directs, but we must realize that sinners, by and large, do not come to church! You cannot win the world or even your own town by only preaching salvation in church on Sunday. The unsaved aren't there. They're at the lake skiing or on the golf course, not in church.

The secret to successful ministry, of course, is to get the mind of the Holy Spirit and see what He wants to do. However, the worship service time should be dedicated primarily to worshipping God along with teaching and equipping the Church to minister to the community and the world. This is why we are building training centers in Africa, Asia and America as opposed to just churches. When people are trained and operating in the gifts of the Spirit as well as the Five-fold offices to which they have been called, then the world can be won to the Lord.

And the first item on the agenda which we must learn is spiritual discernment. We must be able to properly understand spiritual matters and gifts. We may know we're in a spiritual battle from Ephesians 6:12, but what do we do about it? We know our struggle is against wicked spirits but so what? We must learn to obey the Bible and walk in the spirit. Our minds cannot help us, except as a channel to develop our spirits. The human mind and our born again, recreated human spirits are in conflict. We cannot believe our minds or we will miss the Spirit every time! No, we must learn to obey the Bible and walk in the spirit.

“If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit.”

♥ Galatians 5:25

But what does it mean to walk in the Spirit? The Holy Spirit opened this scripture up to me in 1980. He said, “Spend much time praying in the spirit (Spirit). And as you pray in the spirit, you will walk in the spirit and spiritual things will become more real to you than earthly things.”

When He says pray in the spirit, we know from the Bible He is referring to the Pentecostal experience of praying in other tongues. We know this from a careful study of Acts, Jude and the Pauline epistles. So then, the chief way we can learn about spiritual matters and gifts is to pray in the spirit or with other tongues. We are praying in the spirit because we are praying with our spirits as opposed to our minds. If you are not convinced or this is new to you, do some studying in Romans 8 and I Corinthians. We will also discuss this further when discussing spiritual weapons.

It is strange, however, that even among Pentecostals who have received what they term their “prayer language” or the ability to speak in other tongues, most do not spend much time praying in this manner. We see, however, Paul spent much time praying in other tongues and it is my belief this is one of the secrets to the revelation knowledge he received from the Lord. This is very important and needs further study by every Christian.

HOW THE GIFTS COME

For years we have had the idea in the Church that God just chooses certain people at random and gives them particular gifts such as the revelation knowledge He gave Paul.

Nothing can be farther from the truth! In my own case, I have absolutely no doubt that the only reason God has brought about the circumstances in my life to learn about the Dark Kingdom is because of prayer. Had I not begun praying many years ago, “God I want to know more about the devil; God show me the Dark Kingdom—I want to know how Satan operates,” this knowledge would not have come! God answers prayer. There appear to be few “accidents” in the spirit world.

Charles Finney, a great man of prayer and greatly used by God, once remarked, “I have had some experiences in prayer which truly alarmed me!” God answers prayer. I have seen prayers answered that I had prayed ten years before and forgotten about until their manifestation came. God is amazing! And if you want to know more about Him and the world of the spirits, begin to ask Him.

After I began to pray this way, it was about three years before I received any revelation about the Dark Kingdom. Then one night God gave me a night vision where I was looking down on a boardroom. There were three demons there and they had a map of the Houston area. They were discussing a man I knew, and what he would be doing that day along with their plans to harm him. From this point on the knowledge has increased but I am firmly convinced that the reason is because of prayer. God wants to help us and He will, especially if we will use that knowledge to help others in the Church.

Once we learn to see things spiritually, we are on the right track toward becoming victorious in spiritual warfare. We will then be able to see the Dark Kingdom as it truly is and not as we have been deceived into thinking it is. Satan thrives on ignorance. He wants to keep us in the dark regarding his

activities and operations so we cannot stop him. He wants us to continue to believe the enemy in our life is physical and not spiritual: your husband or wife, the President, your congressman, or the neighbors.

It is time we recognize our lack of understanding in the spiritual realm and begin to correct this deficiency at once. The information contained in this book will only be a first step, but it will give you the necessary tools to increase your spiritual acumen. As you finish this chapter, make a resolution that you will *spend at least one hour a day praying in the spirit*. If you have never spoken in tongues, find someone who can assist you in receiving and spend time daily in prayer. In addition to increasing your spiritual acumen, this gift is truly one of the most powerful weapons you can develop for use against the Dark Kingdom. This is why Satan has fought so hard to discredit the Pentecostal experience.

The devil is very involved in every area of our lives today in not only the secular world, but also the Church. It is only when we recognize his actions and operations that we can define a plan of action to dethrone him from our lives.

Dealing with spiritual problems overseas where we see great manifestations of the devil's power has made me acutely aware of how the Dark Kingdom has infiltrated America as well.

The Church has been ignorant about the power and operations of the Dark Kingdom for too long! It is time we awake from our sleep, become spiritual Caleb's and say,

“Let us go up at once, and possess it; for we are
Well able to overcome it.”

♥ Numbers 13:30

God has equipped all in His Family through His covenant just like He did David. Every man in Israel was in covenant with God but only David exercised his privileges. Only David had the faith to go up against Goliath.

We know the story too well. That is our problem. But put yourself in David's place in those days. He did not have the Bible to read the outcome with Goliath beforehand. He had to trust and believe in God through his faith while looking at a ten-foot tall soldier who was cursing him and telling him he would feed his body to the birds!

We have similar problems and trials today. And it is only through our faith that we, like David, can be overcomers.

It is my sincere prayer that your faith will be inspired to learn more about spiritual matters and enter into spiritual combat even as David did. This is God's desire for your life as well. He loves you abundantly and wants you to prosper in this life as well as the one to come. And in order to truly prosper, you need spiritual knowledge and the spiritual gifts that God has for you.

And you need to allow the Holy Spirit to manifest His gifts *through* you to a sin-sick, crying, dying world. On May 7, 2010, the Lord woke me up and said, "Most Christians manifest evil spirits more than they do the Holy Spirit." Then I heard the words of the Apostle Paul, "Men and brethren, these things ought not to be." We need to cleanse ourselves of all that is unholy and not of God, be sensitive to the Holy Spirit and allow Him to manifest His anointing through us to help others. That is God's purpose for each of us—that is true ministry. When we allow the Holy Spirit to manifest through us then others see the fulfillment of Colossians 1:27, "Christ in you, the hope of glory."

3

SPIRITUAL WARFARE

**“Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil
Walks about like a roaring lion, seeking whom he may
Devour.” ♥ 1 Peter 5:8**

Satan has been fighting against man for about six thousand years. He is an expert on warfare and especially spiritual warfare. He has a number of advantages over us:

NUMBER ONE – Satan knows mankind and what tricks will work against man. He has observed human behavior for centuries since our creation and knows how to attack us successfully.

NUMBER TWO – He knows God much better than any Christian in this world could ever know Him. He is not in fellowship with God, of course, but he lived with God and observed the Triune Godhead for thousands of years. Satan was in the presence of God all this time. Thus, he knows God very well!

NUMBER THREE – Satan and his allies know the Bible, one of our main weapons, very well. Many times during deliverance ministry, demons have quoted the Bible to me and they quoted it verbatim.

NUMBER FOUR – Those in the Dark Kingdom know how to organize and carry out their spiritual schemes against us. Let me assure you, they are experts on spiritual warfare. In contrast, we in the Church have been ignorant concerning their activities and how they operate. Because of this ignorance about the Dark Kingdom, our ability to wage successful spiritual warfare has been limited. Our ignorance has been bliss for Satan.

NUMBER FIVE – The Church has not effectively understood nor utilized the weapons at her disposal to fight a successful warfare. This is especially true concerning prayer and the Word. We have not properly understood how to use the Word, nor have we understood that there are at least twelve different kinds of prayer in the Bible, each with a different purpose. Concerning the Word, consider the following scripture:

“And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.” ♥ Ephesians 6:17

It has not been understood in the Church and must be pointed out here that the Greek word in this verse is *rhema*, meaning the spoken word. It is the Word of God (*rhema theos*) coming out of our mouths in contrast to the *logos* (written word, the Bible). Often you have heard ministers or Christians hold up their Bibles and proclaim that it is their sword. This is not true. That is an unscriptural statement. Whenever I hold up my Bible in a church and ask if this is the sword, invariably they will say yes and argue with me when I say it is not. This has been so ingrained in us that we have failed to understand the significance and power of the *rhema*.

No, the Bible sitting on your coffee table at home is not your sword. That is just where the devil would like for it to stay too! The idea in Ephesians 6:17 is that the Word of God, the *rhema*, is used both offensively and to defend against the thrusts of the enemy. This Word will cut through the air like a fencer’s foil aimed straight at the heart of Satan. But it must be emphasized that this is the *spoken* word and not the written word, the Bible. This is why the devil fights you so much when you attempt to study, memorize and meditate upon the *Logos* word. The Word will have no power against him as

long as you cannot speak it out of your mouth. You must take the *Logos* and make it a *rhema* of your confession against the Dark Kingdom. It's not your Bible which the devil fears; he already knows it word for word. He uses it against us the same way he did against Jesus and like he did Job when he appears before God as the accuser of the brethren.

It is the Bible coming out of your mouth mixed with faith to activate the Word which the devil and his allies fear. It is a tremendous force against the Dark Kingdom! Hence, these spirits will fight vehemently to prevent you from reading, meditating, memorizing, quoting, and appropriating the *Logos* Word to your life so that it becomes a *rhema* Word against the Dark Kingdom.

Ignorance in this area is one reason the Church is so weak. There has been some teaching in the Church on what has been termed the “confession principle,” however, it has been opposed by many and taken to extremes by other groups.

Many have relegated confession only to the area of prosperity. This is probably because it is a popular topic to preach on and with which to obtain large offerings. But the same people who confess Cadillac cars and million-dollar homes are missing the real point of the confession principle. As we will see later when discussing the strategies of the Dark Kingdom, they are being used as allies of Satan by perverting spiritual truth. Listen closely! It is not enough to discern spiritual truth, one must be able to rightly divide the Word of God and appropriate truth correctly. These wanderings up spiritual dead ends have caused untold damage within the Kingdom of God here on earth. The desire for wealth is carnal, not spiritual. God wants us to prosper, but it is impossible to amass much physical wealth if you are giving it away as God intended for us to do in order to bless others.

As a pilot, I could tell you how to fly an airplane and how a wing produces lift through scientific principles. But if you are unable to rightly divide that truth and appropriate it correctly, you will kill yourself trying to fly an airplane.

So when the Holy Spirit reveals (or re-reveals if you prefer) new or “present truth” to the Church, the devil will *always* come to pervert that truth. Jesus aptly illustrated this fact in the parable of the sower. He told us plainly that the devil would come to steal the Word sown in the hearts of people (Mt. 13 and Mk. 4). We have heard this but applied it only to the salvation gospel message. But in actuality, it applies to *all* revealed truth from the Word by the Spirit because the Holy Spirit is the ultimate sower of the Word and Satan, the father of lies, does not want you to know the truth and be free.

One reason this is a problem in our understanding this parable of the sower—which Jesus said was the most important parable—is due to our narrowly defining the gospel as merely salvation. This mental filter we use with the word, gospel, has resulted in our inability to understand much that is in the Bible.

We must wake up and realize that we are engaged in spiritual warfare. We must learn that there is much more to the gospel than the salvation message most have heard: you get saved and then you sit down to wait for Jesus to return and take you to Heaven. This has largely been the evangelical message, although perhaps not intended. If that is all God wanted for Christians, then why doesn’t He allow us to die right after being saved so we can go to Heaven? Think about that statement for a moment.

You might answer, “God leaves us here to preach the gospel.” Then why are you not preaching the gospel? No, it is not the only reason He leaves us here. Among other things, He wants us to learn and be a demonstration to the whole universe of His benevolence and power! He also wants us to be a *true* demonstration of the Gospel for others to see. The Spirit told me in 1997: “The world is waiting for a true demonstration of the gospel.”

God uses the weak things to confound the wise. When you understand the rebellion and what took place in the heavens, you will be able to see this more clearly. God wants to use the Church to demonstrate to the whole universe His power, authority, and righteousness. He wants to use us offensively in spiritual combat against the Dark Kingdom and its angelic hosts!

I believe we can see this truth from the Bible. First, we must understand the Law of Double Reference. Let me illustrate. Moses struck the rock during the wilderness wanderings of Israel. When he struck the rock, water came forth from the rock. That is an historical fact from Scripture. Yet the Bible shows us that this was also a prophetic demonstration of what would occur in the future. The Spiritual Rock, the Lord Jesus, would appear 1,500 years later and be struck by God. This Spiritual Rock brought forth water also, but it was spiritual water, the Holy Spirit. The Spiritual Rock yielded spiritual water just as the physical rock produced physical water. In referring to the Scriptures, we call this a “type.”

Similarly, I believe it is easy to see that the Church is spiritual Israel. Israel was the Old Testament Church—a physical Church (the Greek word means, an assembly)—whereas we, the New Testament Church, are the spiritual Church.

You might argue that Israel is not the Church at all, but if we consider the Greek word for Church, *ekklesia*, I believe we can see by definition that Israel is the Old Covenant Church. *Ekklesia* comes from the verb *kaleo* meaning “to call.” Just as the New Testament Church, the *ekklesia*, is called forth to come out of the world and be separate, so was Israel called forth to be a separate and a peculiar people sanctified unto God for His purposes.

Once we understand that Israel is symbolic of the physical Church and we know that spiritual is always of a higher order than physical, then we can see that the Church today will be called upon to fight spiritual battles even as Israel fought physical battles and enemies. Let’s look at the order and draw some parallels.

First, Israel was physically enslaved 400 years as prophesied in Genesis. Has the Church been enslaved spiritually? Yes, and for much more than 400 years. Next, God sent a deliverer, Moses, to free the people from bondage. He also sent a deliverer, the Lord Jesus, to free us from spiritual bondage. Whereas

Israel was subject to physical bondage and death, we are subject to both spiritual bondage and spiritual death.

Moses was a type of Christ. Moses was the only person other than Jesus to fill the three offices of prophet (Deut. 34:10-12), priest (Ex.32:31-35) and king (Deut. 33:4-5). Both were in danger of death as babies. Both left a position of royalty—Moses, physical, Jesus, spiritual—in order to help their brethren. Both were saviors, intercessors, believers; both were rejected by their brethren. Moses was sent to deliver Israel from physical bondage by Pharaoh: a type of the devil, holding us in spiritual bondage. Israel wandered in the desert because of unbelief and not trusting God. The Church has wandered because of unbelief. The people of Israel were saved from physical death by the blood of the lamb. We are saved from spiritual and eternal death by the Blood of the Lamb. That is why the devil hates the Blood and why demons will often curse the Blood during deliverance ministry.

As already pointed out, Israel received physical water from the rock and we receive Spiritual Water—the Holy Spirit—from our Rock, Jesus. That is why the Holy Spirit was not given until after Jesus was glorified (John 7:39). The Rock had to first be struck before the Water could be given. Israel received the Law and the Ten Commandments. We receive grace and truth through spiritual laws and the Royal Law of love which is of a higher order than that received by Israel.

And finally, as the children of Israel were called upon by God to cross over the river Jordan to possess the promised land, so are we to possess the land today through spiritual warfare as compared to the physical warfare fought by Israel. We are called as a Body to fight and defeat the devil through the weapons given to us from the Lord. That's why Jesus gave us the Spiritual Water of the Holy Spirit. Were it not for our enemy, the devil, and the spiritual battle, we would not need the supernatural power of the Holy Spirit. Israel fought physical battles and the Church must fight spiritual battles. The spiritual order is higher than the physical or natural. The New Covenant, a spiritual covenant, is higher and better than the Old Covenant (Hebrews 8:6).

This is why the Lord is calling for holiness within the Church today. The Church is in the fiery furnace, being purified so that the Lord can pour His power through us in demonstration to the world, principalities, and powers that God is not only omnipotent but also benevolent.

During the rebellion, Satan obtained the support of one-third of the angels by categorizing God's government as being unjust and wicked. God wishes to demonstrate to the whole universe that He can rule with mercy and love through a race of inferior, free moral agents—the human race.

Purity always precedes power in the Kingdom of God. God is purifying the Body of Christ in the fiery furnace for the demonstration of His power which will be poured out through His Body in the last great revival before Jesus returns. Jesus said we would do greater works than He did. But you must be purified in sanctification and holiness before God can pour His power through you to the world. Notice I did not say righteousness. You can never become more righteous once you are born again into the family of God. We will soon begin to see these greater works.

The other reason He is purifying the Church, His Body, is because the Bible teaches that the Lord is returning for a Bride that is without spot or wrinkle, a chaste bride. The Bible does not teach that He will return for a bride beaten down and battered, a bride with tattered clothes just barely alive. What glory would God get from that bride? You might say, "Yes, but look at Israel. She was not a conqueror. She was scattered and almost destroyed." That is true, but we should remember two points: (1) Israel did not conduct spiritual warfare and (2) the story concerning Israel is not completely written yet. I believe the Bible teaches that Israel will finally come into the fullness of what God intends as they recognize their Messiah and are reborn spiritually as we have been in the Church. This will occur in the future during the last 3 ½ years of Daniel's prophecy of Seventy Weeks (*cf.* Dan. 9:24-27).

We know that flesh and blood cannot inherit the Kingdom of God. But Israel was successful in possessing her land with physical weapons (they did have the Lord on their side of course), so shall the Church possess Her land through

spiritual weapons. Yes, God wants us to purify ourselves and to mature and understand our positions in the Body of Christ.

He wants us to understand and begin to use our spiritual weapons against the devil and his Dark Kingdom. This we have not done yet. We have not been awakened to this task. I believe there are many scriptures we can use to substantiate this truth. For example, God originally created man to subdue the earth and take authority over it. And to this important topic we will now turn.

THE BATTLE FOR PLANET EARTH

The great battle in the world today is over the authority of the earth! After the original god of this world (Satan) rebelled against God, he was cast into hell. Then God created man in His image to reassert God's dominion over the earth. But Satan returned to the earth with his spirits. He deceived man into disobeying God through rebellion and sin—he changed us from being in the image of God to being in his image as a rebel. Thus, he was able to regain total authority over the earth. But this time the god of this world returned not as the once glorious cherubim, but as a rebellious spirit and a sworn enemy of God and all righteousness.

Then the Second Adam, the Lord Jesus, came to the earth and took this authority away from Satan and gave it to His Body, the Church, to exercise. This occurred so, through the Second Adam, mankind could fulfill God's original command that we replenish the earth and subdue it.

You have probably heard the statement from ministers that Jesus conquered Satan so that you and I would not have to. If this statement is true, why would Jesus give the authority over the earth back to the Church? Why would we need it? We certainly won't need it in Heaven. If God did not intend for us to use this His power and His authority, why would He have given it to us? Consider also, that we are called ambassadors. Does an ambassador have any power and authority? Clearly we do possess His power and authority as His representatives upon the earth.

You might dispute this by saying, “How can we subdue the earth when the Bible teaches that the earth is destined to become more and more wicked?” Yes, but the Lord said, “The gates of hell shall not prevail against my Church.” Can we not infer that if He returns for a weak, beaten down, barely struggling along Church that the gates of hell would have prevailed? I think we can.

So the real battle in spiritual warfare is for authority. It is through the exercise of this authority given to the Church that we will assist God in bringing Revelation 11:15 to pass:

“And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great Voices in heaven, saying, ‘The kingdoms of this world Are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ; And he shall reign for ever and ever.’” ♥ Rev. 11:15

I believe it is quite clear that this scripture is yet in the future. This would answer those who claim there is nothing left to do but wait for the Lord to return and set up the Kingdom and reign of God upon the earth. They believe the work of the Lord was completed after the resurrection. While it is true, providentially, that the spiritual work was accomplished in the sense that we have only to take the authority and use it, it is also true that the Head is still at work. He “ever liveth to make intercession” for us as we war against the Dark Kingdom.

This is true because the Dark Kingdom must obtain physical bodies through which to accomplish their spiritual work upon the earth. Satan can ultimately only exercise his power through a human being. This is why he requires Rulers of Darkness in his kingdom. The devil wants converts who will do his bidding as slaves. But he does not want them to ask any questions. It is when humans in his government begin to ask questions that he loses them. These spirit beings, then, must obtain the use of physical bodies in order to carry out their plans upon the earth. They can inhabit any body, but normally prefer

humans for obvious reasons. Their objective in controlling human beings is always twofold:

1. They want to prevent the Kingdom of God from coming and,
2. They want to create havoc and destruction in the world because they hate mankind and want to destroy us all, including those whose bodies they use. That is why so often we see those working with Satan commit suicide or be destroyed by murder.

Members of the Dark Kingdom require physical bodies to exercise authority in the earth. Therefore, humans whom they can promote and use as Rulers of Darkness are very much in demand. We will discuss this in detail later.

Suffice it to say that these humans, after being in the Dark Kingdom for some time, actually reach a point where they are more spirit than human.

There are numerous accounts of these humans traveling physically to the spirit world where they stay in the spirit while their body is used by a wicked spirit to return to the earth. This human body, being totally possessed by a demonic spirit, can then be used for all sorts of evil schemes. What we see quite often in Africa is the body of a beautiful, young girl being used in this manner by a wicked spirit against the pastor of a church to entice him. Satan's agents actually look for and recruit young, beautiful women for this purpose. Once recruited, their bodies can be controlled through one of three means in order to be used by the devil. We will discuss these methods in more detail when discussing the operations of the members of the Evil Government.

THE FIGHT OF FAITH

We have a saying in West Africa: "We are always on the battlefield and our enemy is Satan." But we must understand that the battlefield is complex. One of the great battles in spiritual warfare is the constant battle of faith.

"Fight the good fight of faith . . ." ♥ 1 Timothy 6:12

Satan attempts to keep Christians defeated by holding our thoughts in the physical realm. He sends circumstances and situations into our lives to destroy our faith. He understands well that faith is a spiritual substance and that it is required in order to get things from the spirit world to the physical world. Without faith, the finances, healing, and other things we are believing God for will never manifest in the physical world. He constantly attacks us with “sense-knowledge”—knowledge obtained from our five senses. It wars against the higher spiritual knowledge of faith or “revelation-knowledge.” Many do not like the term *revelation knowledge*, but the Bible *is* revelation knowledge. What you learn as absolute Truth from the Bible will often war against your sense-knowledge truth or what the Bible labels “worldly wisdom.”

To put this into perspective, let’s consider the nineteenth century philosophers we studied in college. They developed the concept that all knowledge comes from experience. Or we would say that all knowledge is empirical. However, this concept of empirical knowledge actually contradicts the Bible which states that all wisdom and knowledge comes from God. These philosophers factored God into their knowledge equation by stating that “everything which exists must first have existed in the mind of God.” They did not use the Bible, however, in their rationale. They did not understand spiritual matters and faith, being much like the Gnostics.

But to increase our spiritual knowledge, we must carefully compare what our senses are telling us versus Biblical Truth, which is ultimate Truth. If there is a discrepancy, we must hold fast to the Word of God which, as revelation-knowledge, is a higher Truth. We must hold fast to the Word of God and believe it over and against our senses much like a pilot must trust his instruments instead of his senses when flying in the clouds to prevent being killed by vertigo.

This, in essence, is the fight of faith spoken of by Paul. We can also see why our knowledge of the Bible, the revealed Truth of God, is so important to our spiritual battle. And it should be emphasized that this Truth must be left uncolored by false doctrine or it is not the Truth. God will confirm His Word, but He will not confirm false doctrine as many who have literally interpreted

Mark 16 and handled snakes will attest! False doctrine could cost you your life or perhaps eternal life as in the case of those who think they know the “truth,” but are actually involved in false religions.

You must spend time reading and meditating in the Word yourself in order to let the Holy Spirit instruct you. If you just take the word of your pastor, you may be in big trouble. Frankly, it’s always been puzzling to me why people would take something as important as eternal life so lightly as to never study it themselves. What are the doctrines preached and believed in your church? Are they scriptural? If so, then they should conform to the Doctrine of the Apostles (Acts 2:42) and *you should be able to provide chapter and verse from the Bible for each one of your doctrines*. And if your church doctrine is not in the Bible you are in serious trouble! Let me illustrate. Suppose you are a Catholic and you have been taught to pray to Mary, the mother of God. Can you find chapter and verse from the Bible emphasizing this truth? The Lord Jesus Himself said that everything should be established in the mouth of two or three witnesses. Can you do this for everything taught at your church? If not, then you need to stop practicing and believing that as part of your faith. As we will see later, this is an area where the Dark Kingdom has done a lot of damage through the operation of religious spirits.

You can only have faith to the extent that you have the knowledge of God about a matter. That is why God left us the Bible as His Word—to help us get our thinking straight. For a Biblical perspective on this subject, please see Isaiah 55:6-11 and especially verse 8. God does not think the way we do. We must learn, as spirit beings in the family of God, to see things the way God does. We must learn to talk about things the way He does or we can never personally defeat the devil in our own lives. This is the great fight of faith! The devil sends spiritual and physical agents into your life. These agents create circumstances in your life which, if left unattended, will be believed and adhered to causing destruction and downfall.

But if you can filter all of these circumstances through the Word of God, the real Truth, then you will be able to separate the working of God from the works of the devil in your life. It is imperative that you learn the spiritual truths from the Bible and know the moving of the Holy Spirit in your own

life. If not, you will not know the will of God in your life and not be able to differentiate the true from the false.

For example, what does the Bible teach about the nature of God versus the nature of the devil? What about sickness and disease? Does God send it upon you to teach you something? How about prosperity? Is it God's will to prosper you? If so, can you find scriptures to prove your case? God confirms the Word and not what we think about it! He never confirmed the false doctrines of the Pharisees and Sadducees. Study Matthew 16. Are we so arrogant and knowledgeable today as to think that *our* religious leaders do not also have much false doctrine?

The Bible says that faith comes by hearing the Word (Ro. 10:17) and not the doctrines of men. God gives each of us "a measure of faith," but it is up to each of us to grow up spiritually. We must increase our faith by studying, meditating in, confessing and acting upon the Word of God.

There has been much written about the Faith Movement. I believe it is (was) a genuine move of God. But God is doing something else in the earth today. There is a new move of God. That does not mean that the Faith teaching is no longer applicable. Rather, the Faith Movement was first necessary in order to ready the Church for the next move of God. The Faith Movement was designed to help develop your faith for what was coming next.

The real reason to develop your faith is not to receive more revelation knowledge of God; that is a side benefit. The real reason you must develop your faith is for spiritual warfare! The great fight of faith we now find ourselves engaged in is accelerating. Any Christian should know this from the increased attacks, both in frequency and severity, by the enemy. I have some encouraging news for you. This acceleration will continue until the culmination of this age with the return of the Lord Jesus to judge the world. The Lord told me in 1980 that the power of the devil would become very great in the last days. But don't be discouraged. The Word of God will meet your needs. The Lord told me years ago that the main reason He left mankind the Bible was to "meet all of our needs." This is exactly what the Bible does.

Every need you have or will ever have can be met from the Word. This is why the devil fights the Word and tries to distort it.

He knows the power of the Word. I have been in ministry for 40 years and I can tell you that there are only *two things* that can keep you from receiving the promises of God and the devil is not one of them. They are *sin* and *unbelief* (unbelief is a sin, cf. Ro. 14:23). Satan can, however, operate in your life because of these sins to prevent God's blessings from flowing to you.

THE DOCTRINE OF DEMONS

“And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall
Make you free.” ♥ John 8:32

That means if you don't know the truth, you will be in bondage! If you don't know the truth from the Word in a particular area of your life, you are not free in that area, but are being controlled by false doctrine; you are believing the doctrine of demons.

“Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter
Times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to
Seducing [deceiving] spirits, and doctrines of devils; ...”
 ♥ 1 Timothy 4:1

While preparing to do a radio broadcast in 1985, I was talking to the Lord about the sad state of affairs in America. I asked Him why this was happening. Why was America going downhill so fast? He replied, “A nation is like a person; the more it opens itself up to the devil, the more he will come in and occupy.” Then he said, “The two greatest spirits operating in the earth today are religious spirits and deceiving spirits.”

As Christians, one of the things we must continually do is to determine the ways we are being controlled, deceived and manipulated by Satan. He uses

the kingdoms of this world, especially the financial kingdoms, to hold us in bondage. Are you sacrificing your family to the god of Mammon? Jesus said we were to “take no thought” regarding money or possessions. Yet Satan would have us believe we need all sorts of things. Can you see why he does this? The more you want, the greater will become your financial bondage. The more you want, the more and more money you must earn and the less and less time you will have for God. Satan wins two ways! Then he will destroy your family because you don’t have time for them either. Recognize the operation of these spirits in your life and throw them out!

The other way we have placed ourselves in bondage is by using the systems of the world to operate the Church. God does not want us to operate our ministries like the world does: borrowing money, paying salaries, using mailing lists and passionate plea letters (which, frankly, are mostly lies) to raise money. He wants us to use the spiritual principle of faith just as the Bible says! If you are trusting in a salary and not God, then that is not faith.

Or perhaps you are being controlled by Satan through false religion or false doctrine. False religions are usually grounded in the intellect and they often require salvation by works as opposed to grace. Even reincarnation, a common religious element of the New Age movement, is salvation by works. But it appeals to the intellect. It makes more “sense.” Why should God send His Son to die on a cross when people can be reborn again and again until they reach perfection through their good karma in life? It sounds good, but how does it stack up against Absolute Truth: the Bible? False religion is everywhere in the world today.

Being involved in Africa, we have naturally confronted Islam which is the fastest growing religion in the world today. It is interesting to note that thirty years ago there were no mosques in France. Today there are more than 2,000! The same is true in America, thirty years ago there were none here and now they are going up all over. Why? Because like Jesus said, we have opened our nation up to the devil. Islam is almost 1,400 years old as a religion. Why is its spread so fast here today even after the attacks of September 11? In 2006 Americans elected the first Muslim to Congress; how stupid can we be?

It is because the Church has been so lax in spiritual warfare. We fail to see the danger it poses to both our political and religious freedom here. Few Christians realize that there are twice as many Muslims today in America as there are Jews. The implications of this trend are clear.

We must awaken to the great call of the Holy Spirit to the Church today. We must prepare for battle! We have been apathetic and complacent too long. We have allowed the devil to destroy much of what the early Church accomplished. Look at the area where the early Church was first established. It is predominantly Islamic now. We have paid for this neglect of spiritual emphasis and warfare through increased activity by Satan against the Church here in America. This has resulted in the tremendous incidence of divorce, adultery, alcoholism, dishonesty, child abuse, and many other things we are witnessing within the Body of Christ. We have witnessed the decline of our educational system, our morals, our governmental and judicial systems, and the very moral fabric of our nation itself. It is time we awoke and began to no longer merely fight a defensive battle, hoping Christ will return soon and take us away from this “vale of tears” known as the earth. God is calling for us to go on the offensive! Are you ready to do so?

The evolutionists would have us believe that things are evolving into a better, more advanced state. If this is true, why are we seeing an increase in both frequency and severity of the societal problems we see today? No, the Church has been complacent and lazy too long. It is time we awakened from our sleep and developed a plan of action to stop the work of the devil and to win the world for God through the Great Commission.

God has given us the tools to do this task. In order to realize what is occurring today, we must understand spiritual warfare. We must come to the realization that there *is* a devil and he has a well-organized kingdom. And most of all we must come to know that their agenda toward us is always evil continuously. Believe me, the devil has no mercy! I believe if we realized this one fact we would fight harder. If a man approached you with a knife and you knew without a doubt that he only had one thing in mind—killing you—your mental and physical attitude in the fight would be different. The same is true

concerning our conflict with Satan. He has no mercy so we should show none toward him and his legions of demons.

WAR IN AMERICA

It is readily apparent that the Church in America is losing the spiritual war. If we had successfully recognized and fought the spiritual battles, our country would not be in the shape it is in today. When I was last in Washington, D.C., in 2008 praying at the Supreme Court, I noticed that the city was 40% *darker* spiritually than when I was there before even though there are more churches and ministries there now than ever before. Obviously, they are not engaged in spiritual warfare for the Nation.

The only way for the Church to defeat the enemy is to be militant about the situation and to call each individual member to war and then train them for battle. But when we consider even a good evangelical church today, we rarely see the saints being trained. There are many reasons for this, from jealousy in the ministry to fear of losing control of the church. This nonsense must stop. God is requiring the Five-fold ministry today to train the saints. The Church should major on training and ministry to families.

When we return to the concept of the early Church where we truly love one another and demonstrate that love by our actions, I believe we will then see the world come to Christ as they witness our love and His power in us.

Imagine for the first time in nearly two thousand years, the world would see a true demonstration of the love of God through His Body. It would be astonishing! Can it start with you and your church?

It is the desire of every person to love and be loved. This change would revolutionize the world and the Church. Imagine Christians coming to worship the Lord and being trained, knowing that they are loved unconditionally. Can you picture knowing you would not be taken advantage of emotionally and financially? It would be marvelous!

Sad to say that even the ministry does not have the overall integrity that it possessed thirty years ago. I believe it is still the vocation with the most overall integrity, but it has deteriorated along with everything else in the world as our society has become more materialistic and self-centered. The churches are not much different being so full of idolatry and sin that is never judged because the ministers are afraid of losing members and financial support. The average church today has deteriorated to being just another social club.

The devil and his allies have attacked the ministry with fierceness in an effort to destroy the Church by removing her leaders. That is the main reason it is important for you to pray for your pastor, elders, deacons and other spiritual leaders. They are the primary targets of the Dark Kingdom. We must quit our self-centered behavior whereby we only seek their help in praying for us while we never pray for them.

Revelation often comes while one is preaching under the anointing. Last year in Lagos while I was ministering on the “fight of faith” at a church, the prophetic word came forth that God would hold congregations responsible when their pastors fall prey to the tricks of the devil. This, He said, was because congregations were not praying for their pastors and leaders.

Please make a commitment today that you will begin to support your pastor and leaders with your prayers, financial support and send them a note of encouragement occasionally.

This spiritual warfare in which we are involved is very serious business. We need to come to an understanding of what we are up against and what we are going to do about it. The devil is serious about this business. We need to be more serious about the Lord’s business—the business of the souls of men and women. Do we really believe that these people will go to hell if they die in their sins? If so, we certainly don’t act as if we do. There seems to be little urgency to our gospel today, if indeed we are even preaching the gospel.

Let me illustrate the seriousness of the devil from the story at one of our churches in Nigeria of a young, single girl of twenty-three who was a member of our church in Benin City. She lived with the sister of Moses, one of our young pastors who pastors a village church of 300 members in the jungle at Oben.

This girl left the church and moved to another town about 120 miles away where she no longer fellowshipped with Christians. She then became involved in witchcraft and eventually grew seriously ill. She died in December of 1989, confessing her involvement in witchcraft, the death of her mother, and making her father's new wife barren through witchcraft. She also confessed to causing disturbances in the areas where she was working as an Agent of the devil.

This is one real life example. The devil is not dead and he is constantly recruiting people—even Christians—to help him by promising them power, money, and other things. He likes to recruit church members and send them back into the church as an Agent to fight against the pastor and members. And it is only as we remain close to God and continue to pray that we can hope to stand against the Dark Kingdom in spiritual warfare.

Lest you think this problem does not apply to America, I remember ministering at a church in Salem, Oregon, in 1996. I spoke to the pastor after the service and said, “Do you know that there are three witches in your church?” He said, “No.” I replied, “Well, there are and you better do something about it because they’re not here to get saved.”

THE GREAT SPIRITUAL WAR

But it’s not just war in America, of course, there is a great spiritual war looming just ahead for the Church. And it’s not an ordinary war—it’s a civil war. In 1996 the Lord sent me to the Philippines to minister. While in Manila He gave me a message to minister revealing that David was a *type* of the Bride—the Church remnant that will fight in this great spiritual war. When the Lord told me in 1980 that “the power of the devil will become so strong in

the Last Days that only those Christians who are strong in the Word and faith will survive,” I realized how this ties in with David as a type of the Bride. Then in 1998 in Montana the Holy Spirit spoke to me and said, “The modern day church is typed by Samson—full of great power but devoid of character.”

Because of the Law of Double Reference in the Scriptures, the Church like Israel has undergone her wilderness wanderings yet it is spiritual and not physical as was Israel. On February 13, 2008, I realized why that has been true. It’s because of what the Lord said to me in 1991 shortly after the first edition of *Mysterious Secrets* was published—that “the Church is not being led by the Holy Spirit; it’s being led by religious spirits.” It’s the leading of religious spirits that produces our “wilderness wanderings.”

But since 2008 God has been encouraging those who have lingered too long in the wilderness to come out and join the Bride in spiritual warfare. “The Spirit and the Bride say, ‘Come.’” It is only the Bride that has the spiritual intestinal fortitude to go out against Goliath. Only those who have developed their faith to a high level, developed their spiritual gifts, know God intimately and that He fights our battles, have put away sin, know their covenant rights, etc., that will be able to stand against Goliath in these last days. Those who did not develop their prayer life and other spiritual weapons such as the Word will be unable to stand against a trained, fierce combatant such as Satan. Do you think David could have killed Goliath if he had not practiced for many years with his sling shot before the battle?

Yet the Church as a whole is not prepared for war. Many ministries, most of which know little to nothing about the subject matter, have held Spiritual Warfare Conferences. I have not attended any because the Lord hasn’t sent me but I know that they have not had any effect simply because very few churches today are *practicing* any type of spiritual warfare. They merely go to church once a week and preach a nice, politically correct sermon and all go home. The Lord asked me in 1998 if I thought the Allies could have won World War II “if Headquarters was only open one day a week.” And while open, there is no spiritual warfare going on except *against* that particular church by the witches and Agents of the devil who are in the churches.

The Great Spiritual War is spiritual—it must be fought in the realm of the spirit by the Spirit and through the weapons of our warfare which “are not carnal.” The two greatest offensive weapons that the Spirit of God has given to us are the Word and prayer.

David enlarged his faith by learning to use his weapons against the lion and the bear before he had to take on Goliath. He learned something most Christians—probably 90% today—have not learned—to be able to see with *The Eye of the Eagle* into the realm of the spirit and obey 2 Corinthians 4:18.

“While we do not look at the things which are seen, but at
The things which are not seen.”

Will you be able to fight against the devil in these times in which we live if you have not learned how to use your spiritual weapons such as the Sword of the Spirit?

If by chance you do not know Jesus Christ as your personal Lord and savior, I pray you will pray to receive Christ at this time. Because let me tell you this one fact. I am not, nor ever have been, afraid of anything in this world. I know my rights and privileges in Christ. But based on my knowledge of the Dark Kingdom, I would be very, very terrified to live one minute outside the Kingdom of God. Were it not that I am in the family of God, washed from sin by the Blood of the Lamb, I would be very fearful. I pray that you have made that decision also. If you have not, I am confident that you will when you finish reading this book!

BOOK II

THE KINGDOM

OF GOD

**“The Lord hath prepared his throne in the
Heavens; and his kingdom ruleth over all”**

♥ Psalm 103:19

4

THE ORGANIZATION OF GOD'S KINGDOM

“But seek ye first the kingdom of God,”

♥ Matthew 6:33

Originally, the Kingdom of God was ruled by God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit. These Beings, sometimes referred to as the Triune Godhead or Trinity (meaning three), created the universe and all life therein contained. They ruled from the planet Heaven which is located somewhere in the vicinity of the North Star, Polaris. In the original Hebrew, God as the Trinity is referred to as *Elohim*.

The Triune Godhead, *Elohim*, created the angels out of the brimstone of hell. These angels were created with great strength, wisdom and beauty. Their main purpose was to help God administer His government and kingdom throughout the universe. Of all the angels, Lucifer was created with the most wisdom, power and beauty. God loved him the most of all the angels.

“You were the seal of perfection, full of wisdom and Perfect in beauty. You were in Eden, the garden of God; Every precious stone was your covering: the sardius, Topaz, and diamond, beryl, onyx, and jasper, sapphire, Turquoise, and emerald with gold. The workmanship of your

Timbrels and pipes was prepared for you on the day you
Were created. You were the anointed cherub who covers;
I established you; you were on the holy mountain of God;
You walked back and forth in the midst of fiery stones. You
Were perfect in your ways from the day you were created,
Till iniquity was found in you. By the abundance of your
Trading you became filled with violence within, and you
Sinned; therefore I cast you as a profane thing out of the
Mountain of God; and I destroyed you, O covering cherub,
From the midst of the fiery stones. Your heart was lifted up
Because of your beauty; you corrupted your wisdom for the
Sake of your splendor; I cast you to the ground ...”

♥ Ezekiel 28:12-17 NKJV

Lucifer means light bearer. He was the chief among all the angels. He was one of three archangels, the other two being Michael and Gabriel. Lucifer was the head of the archangels and was the commander over all of the other Angels—he had the most power.

His primary function, however, was in the very Throne Room of God. He was there to minister before God and to usher in the praises to God from all of His creation. An organizational chart of the Kingdom of God before the rebellion of some of the angels would look like **Figure I.**

We have a biblical account of the Kingdom of God the way things were before the rebellion of the angels. It is mentioned in Job 38:7

“When the morning stars sang together, and all
The sons of God shouted for joy” ♥ Job 38:7

At this time there was love, joy, peace and harmony everywhere within the Kingdom of God. Then came the rebellion. Things changed in the Kingdom!

But we should point out that the change was only temporary. Once we know the nature of God, we learn that everything He desires *will come to pass*. That is why in His Nature He is never in any hurry. In fact, God Himself is such an incredible demonstration of both patience and longsuffering—both fruits of the Holy Spirit. He knows that His Word and His Faith will always bring His plan to fruition. God has infinite patience. This is a trait of His we should learn to emulate.

We must remember that the Kingdom of God is not a democracy—it is a theocracy—God rules and is in control. Yet He is not a tyrannical ruler like Satan is over his kingdom.

This is one of the ways we can discern demonic activity directed against us. God gives us a free will to choose right from wrong—He gently leads us and never violates our free will. He never forces us to obey Him or to do the right thing.

Satan on the other hand seeks to *control* our free will and he ruthlessly drives us to obey him and will stop at nothing to get his way with us. It's important for you to understand how important your will is and why Satan is after it so that you can protect it from him. If he can control your will then he can control your whole body. One of the best ways to prevent him from controlling our wills is for us to meditate in the Word each day to keep our minds renewed to the Word and will of God. If our wills are always aligned with God's will then we are safe from the devil. Remember our main ministry example—the Lord Jesus. He didn't argue with the devil. He simply quoted the Word of God: “It is written...” We should do likewise.

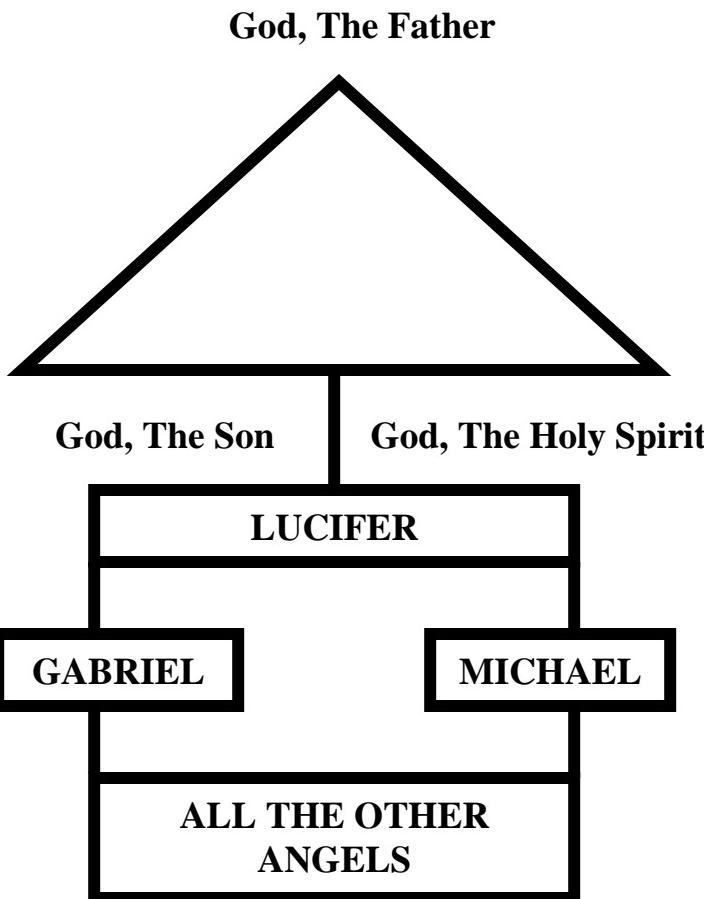


Figure I

God's Kingdom Before The Rebellion

5

THE REBELLION OF THE ANGELS

**“How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of
The morning! How art thou cut down to the ground,
Which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in
Thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my
Throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the
Mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north:
I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will
Be like the most High.”**

♥ Isaiah 14:12-14

A brief history of the rebellion, as told to me by some former Rulers of Darkness under Satan, follows the Biblical narrative. However, there is little information available on this subject in the Bible. Like many other things of this nature found in the Bible, it seems God often only gives us just enough of the information that we need.

Those now in ministry who used to work for Satan all give the same story. Some of them, those who were high enough in the hierarchy to know Satan personally, heard the story from his own lips. Others learned about it from their superiors in the Dark Kingdom. Still others who talked with me read about the rebellion in the mystic schools of the spirit world or from the Akashic Records.

If you have studied New Age or the occult, you have probably heard about the Akashic Records. They actually do exist in the spirit world. They are located on the sixth plane (above the earth) where the Spiritual Masters reside. John Ukpebor, an evangelist friend from whom I obtained some of the information contained in this book, was so advanced spiritually that he was initiated into the mystic schools in the spirit realm at age six. By age twelve, he was a professor in these mystic schools located in the spirit realm.

What we do not understand in the West is that the world of the spirit is full of life similar to our own. People there enjoy houses, schools, cars, money and families. We will elaborate more on this later. It is a counterfeit Heaven.

While we here in America have many child prodigies in the physical sciences, art, music or math, in Nigeria they have some child spiritual prodigies. It is important to realize that all of these stories, based upon hundreds of hours of interviews, are in agreement. This is significant because, unlike in the West, there has been little written down in West Africa in the past. It is impossible to find a written history of one's family. These occult powers are simply passed down verbally from generation to generation. Because of this lack of written history, I am convinced that these facts regarding the evil spirit world are true. There is simply too much evidence to support the conclusions.

Those in the Dark Kingdom who had occasion to know about the rebellion all agree in their accounts. The initial rebellion was not started by Satan. In fact, he resisted it.

The original rebellion was initiated by two angels with great power who were the closest to Lucifer (Satan). Their names are Belial and Leviathan, names found in the Bible which we have mistakenly attributed to Satan himself. These two angels told Lucifer that he should be God. They began to continually tell him that he had as much wisdom, beauty and glory as God Almighty. Why should he work for God? He should be running things in the universe instead of taking orders from God. Thus the very spirit of rebellion was begun in Belial and Leviathan.

At first, Lucifer would not listen. He refused to rebel against his Creator. However, he changed his mind after God punished Leviathan and Belial for instigating and counseling a rebellion within the Kingdom of God.

Then the Lord cast these two angels, Belial and Leviathan, into hell for counseling rebellion. Satan was upset with God because they were his two closest friends. He told God, "If that is what you are going to do, then I'd rather be a king in hell than to continue to be a servant in Heaven!"

Lucifer then left Heaven on his own (God had not cast him out yet) and went to hell to be with his friends. However, when he got there he did not like what he found. Having been in Heaven so long with God, he could only fathom its beauty and could not imagine a place as grotesque as hell.

When he got there he realized that he had made a mistake. Hell was definitely *not* the kind of place where he wanted to spend eternity, even as a king. Yet instead of repenting and seeking God's forgiveness in Heaven, he decided to

lead a total rebellion against God. This rebellion is the one we refer to as *the Rebellion*. It was the one whereby Lucifer was able to enlist the aid of one-third of the trillions of angels which God had created.

Lucifer appealed to these angels by telling them God's government was unjust and dishonest. He told them that he would establish a better, more equitable government. They would all be more blessed under his administration than God's. He also promised them greater positions of authority in the universe.

It is interesting to note that during this time, God did not interfere in the rebellious plot. He allowed them, like He does us as free moral agents, the opportunity and the freedom to choose. One-third chose to rebel and the battle was on!

Lucifer, Leviathan, Belial and the other rebellious angels proceeded to fight against the angels remaining true to the Godhead. The battle was fierce. It was carried to the very Throne Room of God before the rebellious forces were pushed back and stopped.

Lucifer had lost the battle, but he was still determined not to lose the war. Obviously he would not have instigated the war if he didn't think he could win. He and his rebellious angels were cast down out of Heaven. They were cast down to earth and the atmosphere (heavens) above the earth.

“And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and Behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten Horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail Drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast Them to the earth ... And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and The dragon fought and his angels, and prevailed not; Neither was their place found any more in heaven. And

The great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he Was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out With him.” ♥ Revelation 12:3-4; 7-9

Then these evil angels once again tried to war against God and overthrow the Kingdom of God:

“How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of The morning! How art thou cut down to the ground, Which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said In thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt My throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon The mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be Like the most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to Hell, to the sides of the pit. They that see thee shall Narrowly look upon thee, and consider thee, saying, ‘Is this the man that made the earth to tremble, that Did shake kingdoms; that made the world as a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof; that opened Not the house of his prisoners?’” ♥ Isaiah 14:12-17

Again he was defeated and this battle was more decisive.

“And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as Lightning fall from heaven.” ♥ Luke 10:18

After this last attempt of Lucifer to take over Heaven, the heavens and the earth were destroyed. Only the planet Heaven and the foundations of the earth remained intact (See Jer. 4:23-27 and 2 Peter 3:6-7).

While the Holy Spirit kept watch over the earth, the members of the rebellious Dark Kingdom watched to see what God would do to thwart the efforts of the rebellious spirits (See Gen.1:2-3).

As soon as God created man, Lucifer developed his plan with Leviathan (the serpent) to retake the world from mankind. They wanted a place better than the hell which was their inheritance after the rebellion.

From that time forward, God renamed Lucifer (light bearer), Satan, meaning adversary. Since this time, Satan has been attempting to thwart and stop the plan of God to bring peace once again into His Kingdom. After the first prophecy in Genesis 3:15 that God would destroy the Kingdom of Darkness, Satan began to look for a man who could bring this prophecy to pass. He tried to pollute the human race through fallen angels which he commissioned to assume the form of humans and marry women. This was to destroy the seed of mankind (See Gen. 6). This “marriage” brought into the human race the sins of fornication, idolatry and murder. Because this plan by Satan was very successful, in a short time the human race became polluted due to the hybrid, giant children produced through sexual intercourse between these angels and women on the earth.

What we have theorized from the Bible concerning these angels and intermarriage has been verified by those who were former members of the Evil Government. This plan of the Dark Kingdom came about to genetically pollute and destroy the human race in order to prevent the Messiah prophesied in Genesis 3:15 from being born.

Because he had been with God for so long in Heaven, Satan knew how much God hated sin; that it would not be tolerated. Satan thought that through the total deprivation of the human race with this angelic liaison, God would be forced to destroy man. Then the Dark Kingdom would once again have control of planet Earth, free from further interference by God. That was their plan, but they made a slight miscalculation. The rebel spirits gloated over their great wisdom in outsmarting God; they knew God would have to destroy man and victory would be theirs.

But they had overlooked one man whom God saw to be righteous in His sight; one man who had not become corrupt through the schemes of the devil and his government. That man, an Old Testament type of Jesus, was Noah. Through Noah and his righteousness, God was able to preserve His plan to redeem the earth from the Dark Kingdom.

“And the Lord said, ‘I will destroy man whom I have Created from the face of the earth; both man, and beast, And the creeping thing, and the fowls of the air; for It repenteth me that I have made them.’ But Noah Found grace in the eyes of the Lord.” ♥ Genesis 6:7-8

God destroyed all the unrighteous just as He will at the end of time but through the deliverance of Noah, God was able to preserve a remnant (eight people) of the human race.

But the members of the Evil Government did not give up. They began to attack Noah and his family. Surely he would not be a problem now that all of their forces could be trained on only eight people. They attacked through spiritual warfare. They introduced the sins of drunkenness, cursing and homosexuality into the human race. Satan thought he had finally snatched the victory and that God could not stop him. At this point, he probably began to believe what Leviathan and Belial had told him: that he was just as smart as God.

He knew that God could not flood the earth again because of the covenant He had made with Noah (Gen. 9:8-17). God always works by covenant with the human race. And God made a covenant with Noah not to destroy man through another flood.

But while Satan was at work to introduce sin and wickedness into the earth to destroy mankind and stop the Messiah, God was busy choosing another

servant with whom to make a covenant. Satan was concentrating on the wrong group of people. God was busy choosing and preparing Abram. After He established His covenant with Abram, God later changed his name to Abraham which means “father of a multitude.” At this point, Satan became concerned for the first time that his plan might not succeed.

And, as we know from the Biblical account, it was through the lineage of Abraham that the Messiah, Jesus, was born. His complete human genealogy is traced in Matthew 1. As the Bible tells us, Jesus came to do the will of His Father and His main purpose was to destroy the works of the Dark Kingdom (I John 3:8).

Now, all power and authority in heaven and earth is still in Christ Jesus, but it is vested in His Body, the Church. This is the day and age when His Body will arise from slumber and begin to exercise that authority over the Dark Kingdom.

That is why Jesus said, the “gates of hell would not prevail against the Church” (Matt. 16:18). Jesus told the Apostle Peter, “I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven …” What the Lord was telling the Apostles, who represent the foundational ministry of the Church (Eph. 2:20), was (to paraphrase these scriptures):

“I am the promised Messiah, the Son of God. Upon the rock, or foundation of this testimony I will build My Church. And the very gates of hell will not prevail (will not prove stronger than) the Church I am establishing. And I will give to My Church the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven. You’ll have all the available resources in Heaven at your disposal.”

Now let me ask you a question. Do you think the Lord Jesus did this just so the Church could wage a defensive battle? Do you think He wants us to merely struggle through life and only look forward to the rapture as a means of escape from this world? No, He expects us to exercise the authority He has given us to defeat Satan (1) in our own lives, (2) in the lives of our family members, relatives, and friends and (3) in the world (read *Missions*, about which most American churches have forgotten!).

Now, I believe we will begin to see the Church understand and exercise this authority as a unified Body. This has not occurred since the early Church. Oh, we have had a few (relatively speaking) churches who have understood this truth, but I believe we will see this on a grand scale before the Lord returns for the Church.

I believe, based on my knowledge of Satan, that he knows the timing is near for the Lord's return. I interviewed a young man in his twenties who had been in the Dark Kingdom since a baby and was just set free in 1985. He stated that Satan has been running around the heavens shouting, "Hurry, hurry! We haven't much time left! Apparently he knows what we sense spiritually—the Lord is coming soon!

THE COMING KINGDOM

God will establish His Kingdom here on earth. Is that Kingdom within you? Jesus said while on the earth,

"And when he was demanded ... behold, the Kingdom of God is within you." ♥ Luke 17:20-21

The presence of a Kingdom necessitates the presence of a King. If you are not worshipping Jesus Christ as King, then His Kingdom is not within you. Is He in control of your life or are you still making all the decisions? Are you seeking His will for your life or are you hoping He will affirm what you yourself wish to do with your life? Remember, to the extent that you prevent the Lord from carrying out His perfect will for your life *through* you, you are hindering the coming of the Kingdom of God upon the earth. In 1998 the Lord said to me, “When the Bride is ready, the Bridegroom will appear.” The Book of Revelation says, “The Bride made herself ready.” (Rev. 19:7) If we truly desire the Second Coming of Jesus then we need to prepare ourselves so that we are ready.

Many do not want to become Christians and give their lives to Christ simply because they do not see the fruits of the spirit (Spirit) manifest in the lives of professing Christians. The Bible says we are new creatures (2 Cor. 5:17). Do others see this new life in us? Or has our love grown cold like the churches in Revelation who were admonished by the Lord to return to their “first love?”

The Bible says,

“Therefore we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God were pleading through us: we implore you on Christ’s behalf, be reconciled to God.” ♥ 2 Cor.5:20

Who or what is an ambassador? Merely someone who represents another. Are you representing Jesus and the Kingdom of God? Or are you just a pretender still representing your own selfish desires and whims? Remember, to the extent you are not representing Christ and allowing His will to be done in your life, you are guilty of rebellion just like the devil. And you are hindering the coming of the Lord.

Probably the greatest hindrance to the coming of the Kingdom of God upon the earth in our day, however, is the general lack of spiritual acumen in the

Church world, especially among the clergy. We have so many tired, dead churches throughout the world today. These churches never moved with the Cloud when God moved. They never crossed the River Jordan but are still camped in the wilderness and God will let them stay there too. Consequently, their people are not matured and do not know what God is saying to His Church today.

As Christian ambassadors, it is incumbent upon us to find out what God is saying and doing within His Body in this day and hour. Then we can aid Him in bringing the Kingdom upon the earth. Many, if not most, in the Church world believe the coming of the Kingdom will be automatic. If this were true, why would Christ ask us to pray, "Thy kingdom come?"

No, the Body of Christ has a part to play and it is through prayer and a demonstration of God and His power in our own lives that we will see the Kingdom of God come into full manifestation. Jesus is coming for a glorious Church. What a wondrous day that will be!

But for now, we must be about the Father's business even as Jesus was while on the earth and still is. And we can only be about His business if we know what it is. We must find the will of God for our own lives so that the Kingdom of God can be demonstrated through each of us.

6

GOD'S PLAN FOR MAN

**"And God said, 'Let us make man in our image,
After our likeness.'"**

♥ Genesis 1:26

Now that we understand the rebellion of Satan (Lucifer) more clearly, we can see why God made the decision to create man. Lucifer, the light bearer, was created with the most beauty because he was the angel who ushered beings and praises into the Presence of God. He was in charge of worship. When he fell, there was a vacuum created in Heaven and the Kingdom of God. There was no one to take Satan's place. You might ask, "Why didn't God just promote Gabriel or Michael?" I do not know. Perhaps it is because they already had their functions. That is what I was told by one former member of the Dark Kingdom. More likely, however, I think it is because God wanted to demonstrate His Kingdom through the weakness of human beings. Consequently, God created man to fill the vacuum left by the fall of Lucifer (See **Figure II**).

Because we were created to take the place of Lucifer in the Kingdom of God, part of our duty is to praise God. We are to bring forth praises and worship into the Presence of the Godhead.

As we will discuss later, this is the reason the praise and music ministry of a church is always under attack. We have not understood nor recognized the importance of the praise and worship ministry in the Church.

So we see that man was primarily created to take the place of Lucifer. As such, we were also to have dominion over the earth just as Lucifer did before the rebellion. And as the Bible tells us, we will exercise authority over the angels as Lucifer did.

“Know ye not that we shall judge angels?”

♥ I Corinthians 6:3

Bible scholars often divide God’s plan for man into five main ages or divisions. These are:

1. The Antechaothic Age. This age deals with the time from the original creation until chaos. In other words, it deals with the time from creation of the heavens and earth mentioned in Genesis 1:1 to the chaotic state of the earth after the rebellion of Lucifer.
2. The Antediluvian Age. This age is from the six days of recreation of the earth until the flood of Noah. It is found in Genesis 1:3 through 2:25.
3. The Present Age or Church Age. This age covers the period from the flood of Noah until the present time. It will continue up until the Second Coming of Christ.

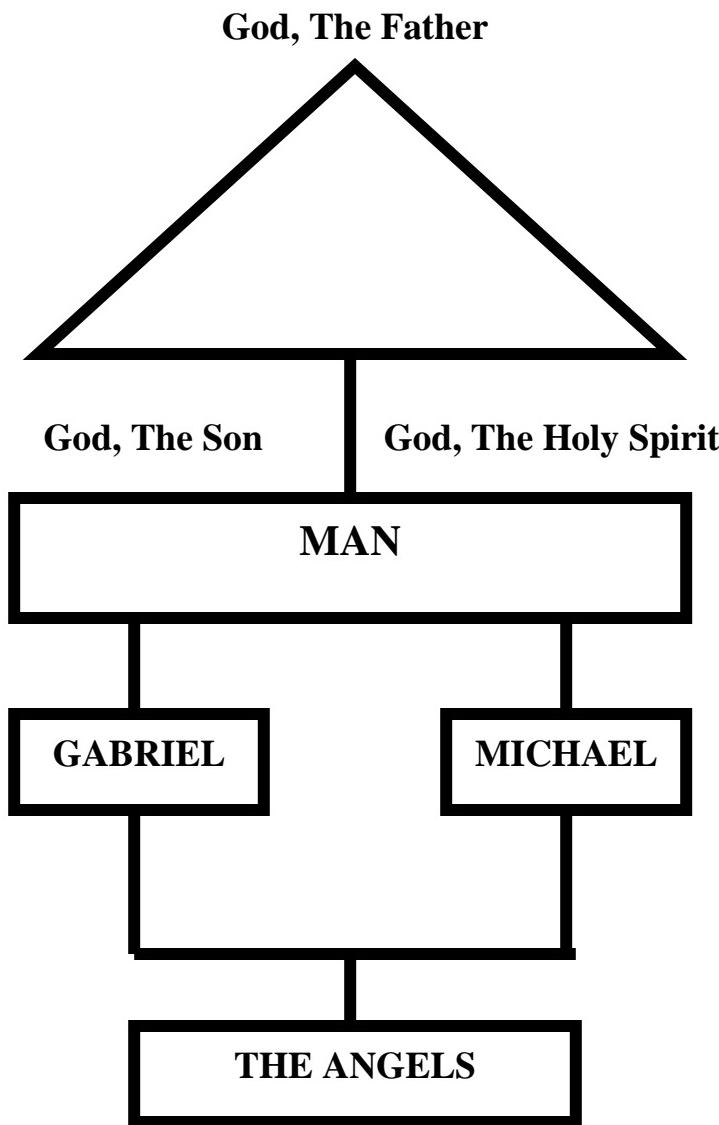


Figure II
God's Kingdom After Creating Man

4. The Age to Come. This age is called the Millenium, Latin for 1,000 years. Christ will rule the earth during this time which extends from the Battle of Armageddon in Revelation 19 until God makes a new heaven and earth (Revelation 21). During this time, Satan and his angels will be bound and there will be a thousand years of true peace and prosperity. God will demonstrate to the world what it is like with peace in His Kingdom.
5. The Endless Ages. This age is eternity—time without end. Because God is outside of the dimension of time (He created it!), we as saints are in Him and are eternal beings. All human beings will dwell during this time either with God on the new earth or with Satan in the Lake of Fire (Rev. 19:20). It is at the beginning of this age that God will move the Holy City, the New Jerusalem, to the Earth from Heaven. The Earth will then be the center of God's Kingdom in the universe.

GOD'S PLAN FOR MAN IS ETERNAL

We should emphasize that God's plan for man is eternal. When the devil rebelled and tried to take over Heaven, God was not taken by surprise. He already had planned the creation of man because He sees the future from the past. The Bible says that God had devised this plan of sending His Son from the very beginning of the world (Rev. 13:8). God's plan for man, despite thousands of years of interference by the devil to stop the complete plan, will be fulfilled in the ages to come.

We should also point out here that the Church is the central fact of God's will for man and His Kingdom. Those who teach that the Church was just an alternate plan devised by God when Israel did not fulfill its destiny are in error. This teaching goes against the entire scope of the Bible. The Scripture does not teach this at all! We, the New Testament Church, were in the mind of God before He even created the angels. Everything God intends to do in the universe in the future will be accomplished through the Church. Of course I believe the Bible teaches that Israel will at some point during the tribulation period come to an understanding that Jesus was, in fact, the promised

Messiah. Therefore, there will be many Jews who will accept Christ and become Church members.

In summary then, God's plan for man is primarily twofold: (1) to worship and praise Him, and (2) to reestablish the Kingdom of God and His control upon the earth. Are we accomplishing these main tasks? I think not. However, it appears that God is stirring us to action by the Trumpet Call to the Church in this hour.

Why is God's plan for man not being realized? There are many reasons, but the main one is very simple. Christians simply do not believe the Bible! Oh, we say we do. But like Israel who could not enter the Promised Land because of unbelief, we suffer from much unbelief today. We say we believe the Bible but one look at the Church shows that we do not. In October of 1991, the Lord said to me, "You say when ministering in churches that the main problem with the Church today is that they don't believe the Bible. And that's true. But another problem equally as bad is that the Church is not being led by the Holy Spirit—it's being led by religious spirits."

God confirms the Word and not what you believe or what your church teaches. If your church is not teaching the Word, then God cannot confirm it. He simply will not confirm the doctrines of men as the Pharisees learned 2,000 years ago. This is why, as we will see in detail later, Satan has a Principality in charge of false religion and doctrine. Satan's operation is like a cafeteria where you have a large selection from which to choose. If he can't get you to order false religion, then he will encourage you to order false doctrine.

Another big hindrance to the fulfillment of God's plan for man is the fact that He created us as free moral agents. We can cooperate with Him or we can

resist Him. And even though we may be ignorantly resisting the Holy Spirit in our lives, the result to the Kingdom of God is the same. A favorite trick of the devil through his religious spirits is to enlist Christians, especially ministers, in a task which looks religious and good, but is actually a hindrance to the Kingdom of God. We see much of this in the ministry today. You see many of these who are sincere, but they are sincerely wrong. They are collecting money for their project and not God's. Can you see how Satan can use a ministry this way? It is another way to siphon off money which could otherwise be used for the Lord's work—it is the operation of religious spirits.

The same is true today for “Christian” television—God did not ordain all those networks; based on their fruit there's a good indication that He didn't ordain any of them. One thing is for certain. There are too many to serve the market and thus they cannot all survive; however, this is the reason—though by no means a justification—for their constant appeal for funds and the same dishonest approach to fundraising that we see on them. One of Satan's main strategies is to raise up *false* churches and ministries in order to kill off the true churches and ministries.

Another reason we do not see God's plan manifested in our lives is because we do not pray much and we do not pray effectively. This subject is dealt with in more detail elsewhere in this book; however, let me state here that you must learn to pray correctly. I have identified at least twelve different types of prayers in the Bible. If you expect God to confirm His Word when you pray, then you must use the correct scriptural prayer.

Finally, God's plan for your own life affects the rest of the world. If you are not following Him, you are resisting Him. This is especially true if you are not a Christian. However, because this book is written primarily for Christians you should be prayerful and attentive to ways in which you may be thwarting or resisting the Spirit of God in your own life. He is trying to

mature you and “conform you to the image of Christ.” He is your Helper but you are the one, i.e., your spirit, that controls your body. You can allow Him to help you or you can resist Him as He tries to mature you spiritually.

Also, you are the one who sets your schedule each day. Do you consult God? Is He really your Lord or merely your Savior? I’ve found that many people want to become a Christian as “fire insurance” but they don’t want to submit control over their lives to Jesus. The Bible says that we “were bought with a price” and that our lives are not our own.

Remember, it’s the Word that will judge you on the Judgment Day. Jesus will ask if you did what He said in the Word. Did you obey the Great Commission? Did you visit those in prison? Did you heal the sick and cast out demons? Was your heart pure or were you deceitful and manipulative?

The Bible teaches the reality of Satan, fallen angels and demons. These members of the Dark Kingdom are the source of sin and disease. They function in the earth to propagate sin and death. By so doing they are able to control the law of sin and death in the human race.

God sent His Son Jesus to the earth to stop this control over man through the establishment of the New Covenant. Through this covenant, sin and eternal death were abolished for all who accept the sacrifice God has provided in His Son. Also, by accepting the sacrifice of the stripes laid upon the back of Jesus, we are able to defeat sickness and disease in our lives.

“Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a Curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a Tree: That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles Through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit Through faith.”

♥ Galatians 3:13-14

What is the curse of the law? What are the blessings of Abraham? These are some of the questions you must ponder if you are to live victoriously against all opposition from the Dark Kingdom.

The curse of the law includes poverty, sickness and eternal or spiritual death. Christ has redeemed us from this curse, but the Dark Kingdom has held much of the Church still captive through ignorance and doubt.

This truth emphasizes one of the most difficult things for any Christian, both new and old, to learn. We are to lead the victorious life and be what the Bible teaches: “more than conquerors.” That does not mean we will not suffer attacks—remember this is a war! Begin to think militarily and remember, Jesus never promised us it would be easy just as physical combat is not easy and there are dangers. Indeed, if we are not being attacked we should be concerned whether we are indeed in the Army of the Lord. But we have to learn what the Apostle Paul did. He learned to be content in the Lord no matter his outward circumstances (Phil. 4:11, 1 Tim. 6:8, Heb. 13:5). Should we not do the same?

BOOK III

SATAN'S KINGDOM

“For we wrestle not against flesh and blood”

♥ Ephesians 6:12

7

SATAN, THE DEVIL

As most people are aware, the head of the enemy forces and of the Dark Kingdom is Satan. His name means adversary and was given to him by the Lord after the rebellion since he is now an adversary and enemy of both God and man. He is called by many other names as well. He was the number one angel, directly below the Triune Godhead as shown in Figure I earlier. He was created as Lucifer, the Son of the Morning, and the Bible tells us that he was very wise and beautiful. He possessed great wisdom and knowledge. My close friend, Emmanuel Omoobajesu, has commented in his messages that the devil is “the only student who never graduates; he is always learning.” He is a keen student of man and he wants to destroy us!

He was also known as the Anointed Cherub and was the guardian of the throne of God Almighty. In this office, his duties were to usher in the praises and worship to God on His throne. As such, living in close proximity to God for millions of years, he knows much more about God than you or I could ever hope to know. This is one of the main reasons he is such a dangerous adversary. Because he lived with God for so long, he knows how God thinks and operates His Kingdom. As a result of this knowledge, he is in a position to cause man to sin. Then he uses this information against us as he assumes his role of the “accuser of the brethren.” He personally told an evangelist friend of mine who used to be in the Dark Kingdom, “We know what God hates.”

In his position as the number one archangel, Lucifer was also the ruler of the earth before the creation of man. He ruled what we call the pre-Adamite world. At that time, the world was composed of the same minerals as today, but there was no visible land mass. The world was covered with water. This is the reason why in the recreation God said,

“...and let the dry land appear: ...” ♥ Genesis 1:9

Of course the lack of land did not present any problems to spirit beings because the physical construction of the earth was immaterial.

Then, as already discussed, the Bible tells us that Lucifer fell through pride and rebellion. But as a result of his knowledge about God and creation, he is forever trying to copy and imitate the true things of God. For everything in the Bible, including the Trinity, he has an imitation. Satan has his own “unholy trinity.” This is a very important concept that we ignore at our own peril. Everything in the Kingdom of God has a Satanic counterpart. Probably more than anything else in Christianity, this calls for wisdom on our part to discern. Man’s inability to do so is why people get into false religion and doctrine. Satan even has his own false “church” with his own false Five-fold ministers who possess a false anointing from him that is so close to the real that, as Jesus said, “If it were possible, even the very elect would be deceived.”

It should be noted, however, that we can also use this knowledge to our advantage. The more I have become acquainted with the Satanic Kingdom, the more I have learned about God’s Kingdom because for everything new I have learned about the Dark Kingdom, I have looked for God’s counterpart as well. The Dark Kingdom is merely a diabolical mirror of God’s Kingdom.

Discerning the true from the false will become even more important as the end of this age approaches. And it is fast approaching. I will never forget something the Lord told me in 1980. He said, "*The power of the devil will become so strong in the last days that only those who are strong in prayer, faith and the Word will survive.*"

I believe it is imperative that you learn how to engage in spiritual warfare. If you are not strong in prayer and the Word, how can the Holy Spirit help you discern the true from the false? The Beast and the false system of worship are being prepared today. One of his prophets is in Nigeria. When this religion comes on the scene, will you know that it is false?

As we discuss Satan, it is important to realize that he is more powerful and dangerous to us today than he was during the time of the early Church. There are several reasons for this:

1. He is able to possess and oppress more human beings today than ever before.
2. He has more servants today in human form.
3. He has another 2,000 years of experience warring against man on the earth, and
4. Through his continued scientific research in the spirit realm, he has continued to advance his earthly and spiritual realm. He has scientific laboratories in the spirit world where research is carried out day and night against both God and man.

Because he has been able to advance his kingdom, many of those who are in positions of high authority with him actually believe that they will be victorious and win the conflict with God. They believe they will ultimately rule completely over planet Earth and the heavens. As a result of this belief,

Satan has already promised certain prominent positions in this government for those loyal to him.

SATAN CAN CHANGE FORMS

I've seen the devil six times—the first time was in 1985 which was three years before I first went to Africa and the last time was in January, 2008. All six times I personally saw him he was in the form of a man. He was very similar in appearance to some of the pictures artists have painted of him. His face, which was an ashen gray color but with a black beard, is oblong in shape and was very diabolical. In his present form—that of a man—Satan is able to transform himself into 999 different forms.

He can also appear in his original form of beauty (making 1,000 forms in all), but he can do so for only a limited period of time. I have talked with human beings who have seen him in the form of a vulture (but talking like a human; he knows all the languages on earth), a black man, a white man, a ram, a lion and other forms.

“And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed
Into an angel of light.” ♥ 2 Cor. 11:14

He can transform himself into an angel of light as this Scripture says. I have spoken to those who have seen him, as well as other demon spirits, in the form of Jesus or an angel of God. Would you know the difference? This accounts for the appearance of the angel Moroni to Joseph Smith, the founder of the Mormon Church. He didn't make it up; it's just that Moroni was not an angel sent by God—he came from the Dark Kingdom.

This ability of spirit beings to change forms will be discussed with greater detail in later chapters. However, I believe you can see from this knowledge how the Islamic prophet Mohammed heard the voice of an angel and how false religions such as those of New Age are brought forth. That is why we must be spiritually mature and know the voice of the Holy Spirit in order to not be deceived.

Other forms in which Satan has been identified include:

1. A red-eyed demon possessing webbed wings, cloven hoofs and a tail.
This is our characteristic picture of the devil as portrayed by the media.
This is Satan when he appears as the accuser of the brethren.
2. The image of a lion in which he imitates, Jesus, the Lion of the tribe of Judah.
3. A python, cobra or other snake such as a Black Mamba. This is a common form for many in the Dark Kingdom. Whenever I am in Africa, especially in the jungle villages, I am always on the lookout for “snakes.”
4. A wolf.
5. A large ram with fully curved horns.
6. A fox.
7. Various human or angel-like beings with a white robe, usually surrounded by a cloud of glory.
8. A large dragon, breathing smoke and fire. In this form he is very fierce in appearance. He likes to assume this form when coming to a meeting with members of the Dark Kingdom. Humans in the meeting shake uncontrollably from fear when Satan arrives in this form.

It should be pointed out that in none of these forms can he fool the Christian who is in tune with the Holy Spirit. Also, the fact is that Satan rarely comes to the earth personally. He prefers to send one of his errand boy spirits, normally Beelzebub, one of the Powers.

Satan is the most vulnerable the last Friday of each month. The devil is involved in an all night meeting with his evil government and is thus preoccupied. He is not available to reinforce his spiritually wicked rulers of darkness and wicked spirits. This is a night when the whole Church should pray effectively for maximum results.

Another good time to pray when your prayers will not be hindered as much is during the hours of midnight and 2 A.M. Nigerian time. This would be the hours of 6-8P.M. (CST) in America. At this time of the evening, Satan rests for two hours. If anyone wants to see him, his bodyguard, Beelzebub, will tell them, “The master is resting.” Therefore, this is another excellent time to enter into concentrated prayer which will bring much fruit.

And, as you will learn later, the witches and wizards are meeting during this time as well. They are usually involved from midnight to 3 A.M. Nigerian time each morning in their meetings at the coven. Our deliverance ministry ministers all night to people on Friday night of each week and there is much prayer. The reason for our success in this area will be seen when we discuss deliverance.

8

SATAN'S EARTHLY KINGDOM

**“In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds
Of them which believe not,”**

♥ 2 Corinthians 4:4

Satan is called the “god of this world.” As the god or ruler of this world, he has established a ruling hierarchy according to the geography of the earth.

The earthly kingdom of the devil is divided into four separate kingdoms located in four separate geographical locations upon the face of the earth. They are, of course, in the spirit realm. These kingdoms are as follows:

1. The Western Kingdom – headquartered in Rome, Italy.
2. The Eastern Kingdom – this kingdom is headquartered in Saudi Arabia at the city of Mecca, the most holy shrine of Islam.
3. The Southern Kingdom – located in Sydney, Australia.
4. The Northern Kingdom – headquartered in Moscow.

Each of these kingdoms is ruled not only by Principalities and Powers, but also by Rulers of Darkness of this world as the Bible tells us in our key scriptures on spiritual warfare found in Ephesians 6.

Satan has both spirit beings and humans working together to fulfill his purposes. It is not unusual to find a human Ruler of Darkness supervising demonic spirits in his Dark Kingdom. The rulers in each kingdom can, of course, change as Satan seeks to promote people to keep them satisfied and working for him. I was told by a former Ruler that Satan was a “master manager.” He is excellent in administering his rule and reign.

Each of these Rulers of Darkness would have reporting to them both wicked spirits and servient or phantom spirits, as well as other human beings “on their way up” in the Dark Kingdom. All of these humans are in various stages of corruption and power. What makes them this way is the continual sin and destruction in which they partake each day, as well as the “medicine” and charms they ingest into their bodies that affect them spiritually. The longer a person is involved in the Dark Kingdom and the further up the spiritual ladder they travel, the more their heart becomes corrupt and they become hardened in spirit and soul. They have little or no compassion for other humans whom they see as pawns with which to play in achieving their wicked aims. Their only objectives are the increase of power, money, prestige, fear and respect of their peers. The wickedness and deceitfulness of sin hardens them.

“And God saw that the wickedness of man was great
In the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts
Of his heart was only evil continually.” ♥ Genesis 6:5

The longer a person is involved in the Dark Kingdom, the more difficult their deliverance. Those who have been delivered from deep bondage in the Dark Kingdom all state the same thing. They are one by one delivered from various

charms and medicines which they have ingested into their physical bodies (but these charms have a spiritual effect). We can learn a lesson from their deliverance—what you do with your physical body affects both your mind and your spirit.

All of these charms and medicines are operated by evil spirits, but they do give power to the one possessing the charm. There are literally thousands of charms throughout Africa. For example, a common charm is a ring which would give various magical powers. A person in the Dark Kingdom is given such a ring as a reward for killing people. As long as they are wearing this ring, they will know whenever they are in danger. They can use the ring to kill or to cause an enemy to go blind or mad. This is usually accomplished in one of two ways depending upon the magic of the particular ring. All members of the secret societies and cults in Nigeria wear rings of this type. This also allows them to identify one another.

One former Ruler told me how he used such a ring to smuggle drugs. When going through customs, if they asked to open the bag containing the drugs, he would touch the bag with his ring which rendered the drugs invisible.

It is surprising, however, that while the ministers in this part of the world (Africa) know more about spiritual things in the Dark Kingdom than we do in the West, they are overall inept at spiritual warfare for the most part. This has occurred mainly because they are deficient in understanding and using the spiritual weapons the Lord gave to the Church.

We are involved in training the churches there about how the evil powers attack them and what to do. Their lack of knowledge in spiritual warfare is probably because the Gospel is relatively new there as revival just began in the early 1970s. So although they know much about the Dark Kingdom, they

do not know much about the spiritual weapons God has given to the Church with which to fight our enemy.

You should be able to see how Satan has tried to control not only the earth, but also the spirit realm. His major purpose each day is to extend and consolidate his *control* over man, the earth and God's Kingdom. He is seeking each day to extend his kingdom and rule upon the earth. He is highly organized. He controls his own kingdom directly and seeks to control the Kingdom of God upon the earth through direct and indirect means. If he cannot control a specific church, for example, directly through the pastor or elders he will send people into that church to influence it and control it indirectly thus getting them out of the will of God.

We will now discuss his ruling hierarchy.

9

THE PRINCIPALITIES

**For we wrestle not against flesh and blood,
But against principalities, ...”** ♥ Ephesians 6:12

As I began to learn about the Dark Kingdom and its organizational structure by former members, I became awed that the structure is *exactly* as described by the Apostle Paul in Ephesians 6:12.

Within the organizational hierarchy of the Dark Kingdom, directly under Satan, we find the principalities. These spirit beings—powerful demon Angels—are *four* in number.

These four principalities control the world for Satan. They exercise this control and dominate the world through five means: (1) religion, (2) occultism, (3) finances, (4) politics, and (5) sex. In essence the pentagram, which is the symbol for the Dark Kingdom, symbolizes these five areas of their dominion and control throughout the world.

You may wonder how they can dominate the world or if they really do. You may believe, as many Christians do, that because God is omnipotent and sovereign, He can do anything that He wants to do. This is a common misconception that most Christians retain in their thinking. Consequently, when we carry this rationale further, we come to believe that, ultimately, God is responsible for everything that happens to us. For example, most Christians believe that Satan has to go before God and get permission for everything bad

that he does to us. But I believe it is easy to see that this line of reasoning is flawed. Jesus Himself called Satan the “god of this world.” And it is easy to see that God’s will is not being carried out in the earth today (totally). If God’s perfect will were being carried out, we would not have any little children who were starving or being abused. We would not have murder, robbery, rape, disease and so many other things that occur in the world every single day. These evil crimes are not His will or they would be occurring in Heaven. Because of covenant, God limited Himself by the terms of the covenant. God’s perfect will is normally *not* done on the earth because He limited Himself through covenant and depends upon imperfect human vessels.

Since God created man He has always had a covenant people—currently the Church—through which He is working to try and reestablish His Kingdom here on earth but God’s perfect will shall not come to pass on the earth until we see the fulfillment of Revelation 11:15

“And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great Voices in heaven, saying, ‘The kingdoms of this world Are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ; And he shall reign for ever and ever.’” ♥ Rev. 11:15

No, Satan is the god of this world and he administers his control first of all through the Principalities. They are his field marshals and all four possess extreme power. Together, they possess more power than Satan. Because of this fact, he is somewhat afraid of them and lets them have their way. He is concerned that if he does not, they may rise up and overthrow him like he tried to do to God. Those who used to work with these principalities call them the “evil gang.”

These four members of the evil gang dominate the world by giving orders to millions of evil spirits and human beings. The spirits work for them because they have to. The human beings do so for money, power, and sex.

These four Principalities are:

1. APOLLYON

2. ABADDON

3. BELIAL

4. THE BEAST

These four are extremely wicked and very powerful. They are of equal rank, although The Beast is the most wicked of them all. They are almost autonomous in their duties for the Dark Kingdom as Satan does not want to risk a coup d'état. He must exercise extreme diligence in dealing with the Principalities. This fact demonstrates Satan's expertise as a manager in his ability to keep his evil government together. He is still able to use the wisdom God gave him in this area. Satan does give them assignments to carry out, such as how many people to kill, how much human blood is required for their blood banks in heaven, and who should carry out the assignments. But in reality Satan's control over these very wicked angels is minimal. They only serve him because of self-preservation as they fight their common enemies of God and the Church. These beings know that they already control the world through those who are not Christians. They have also stated that the biggest danger to them is "those who give themselves to purity and prayer."

These Principalities were angels who rebelled with Satan and were close to him thousands of years ago. They now serve him (and themselves) in the highest positions of the evil government as the immoral governors of our world. Each of them, working with the eight Powers and millions of demon spirits, interfere in the affairs of our world each and every day. They cause war, death, false religion, immorality, sexual pollution, backsliding among Christians, strife and divorce in the family and any other evil thing you can imagine. They are behind it all!

These four spirit beings occupy the heavens above the earth along with Satan. It is from here that they prefer to control the affairs of men by sending the Powers or Rulers of Darkness to carry out their wicked schemes. Thus, they are both *celestial* and *terrestrial* demons, unlike the lower demons who are

confined to the earth. There are thirteen planes above the earth where Satan and these ruling demons live. Satan dwells on the thirteenth plane and these four occupy and control planes 9-12 with each being in control of a plane or “heaven” of their own. This is another mockery of God’s control of Heaven (the Third Heaven).

Figure III illustrates the Dark Kingdom’s organization up to this point. Now we will discuss each of the Principalities.

1. APPOLYON

The main function of this Principality is to promote false religion. His primary goal is to turn people away from God into idolatry. We should be careful to define idolatry also. It is not just the worship of graven images, sticks and stones. It is these but much more. Anything can be an idol. In America, most people’s idol is money, sex, entertainment or sports. Whatever you spend the most time doing and thinking about, that is your god. Apollyon wants to keep you from thinking about God and His Kingdom. He wants to keep you from reading the Bible and prayer. His purpose is twofold in this endeavor: (1) he wants you to go to hell, and (2) he wants to keep you from doing anything for God. How often have you thought about passing out tracts, helping feed the poor or some other worthwhile endeavor for God only to not do it? That is the work of Apollyon!

According to former members of the dark Kingdom, he raised up a total of 120 false religions before Jesus came to the earth as the Messiah (c. 5 B.C.). And we know he has raised up many others since that time. After the birth of the *true* church on Pentecost he has been instrumental in birthing and propagating a *false* church in an effort to destroy the Lord’s true Church.

Although the Principalities can and do work with all of the eight Powers from time to time, Apollyon normally works predominantly with two—Ashtaroth and Baal. These two Powers work mostly in the area of false religion. That is why we see their names in the Bible over and over in connection with false religion and idolatry.

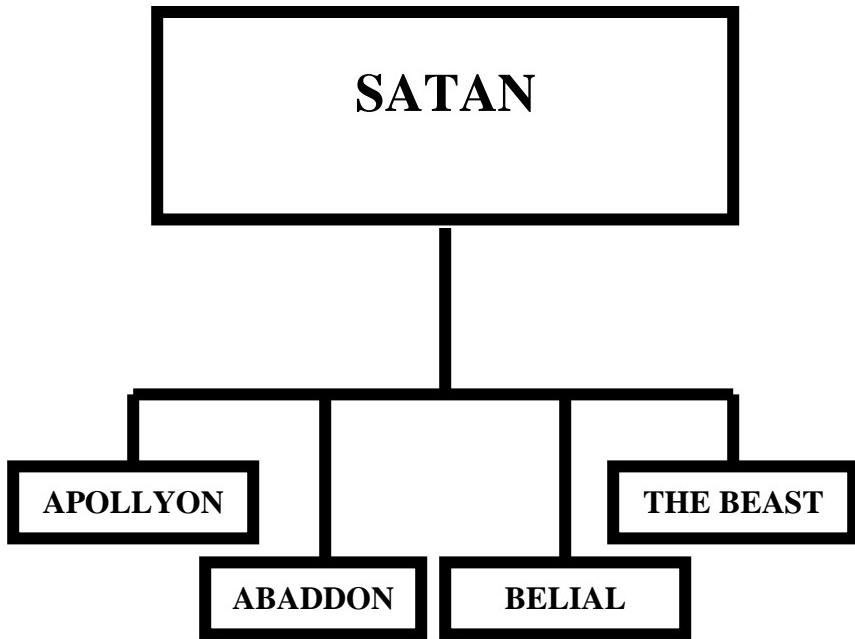


Figure III

Satan And The Principalities

2. ABADDON

Like the name Apollyon, Abaddon means “eternal destruction.” Abaddon is the Hebrew word while Apollyon is Greek. They mean the same thing. Their functions in the Dark Kingdom are different, however. Abaddon is a tall, black and foul smelling demon. Often when ministering deliverance to homosexuals, a minister can smell his presence.

Abaddon is sometimes called the polluting demon by people in Africa. His goal is to pollute the human race by any means. He is in charge of polluting and corrupting habits such as smoking, cocaine and other drugs, heavy metal music, pornography, homosexuality, fornication, incest, bestiality, pedophilia, and alcohol.

According to those who know him, he was instrumental in raising up the many discotheques throughout the world to encourage sexual immorality. He was the Principality responsible for inventing the strobe light used at these establishments. It is also obvious that he is behind the terrible demonic rise of satanic rock music where altar calls are given for youth to accept Satan as their lord and master. Today, much of his time is devoted to designing demonic video games to waste the time and enslave the minds of people, especially our youth, so that they will not seek God.

3. BELIAL

This evil angel is often called the god of the planet. This is in reference to Earth. His main objective is to cause war and death. He likes to destroy people and see them die. We see his name mentioned quite frequently in the Bible, often as a synonym for a worthless, evil person—a “son of Belial.”

Among the Powers we see reporting to him include Magog, the god of war. They work together to cause bloodshed and to provide blood for the demon world.

4. THE BEAST

Almost every Christian has heard of “the Beast.” We read about him in the book of Revelation. Those in the Dark Kingdom have described him to me as “Satan’s ace in the hole” for the end time. He will be used on a massive scale to deceive mankind and cause bloodshed, false worship and much destruction. He is extremely wicked and is barely being restrained by Satan now.

He will cause wide-scale destruction and desolation for the human race during the end time which is almost upon us. The Bible speaks about him and this time as follows

“Therefore when you see the ‘abomination of desolation’ spoken of By Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place (whoever reads, let Him understand), then let those who are in Judea flee to the Mountains. Let him who is on the housetop not come down to take Anything out of his house. And let him who is in the field not go back To get his clothes. but woe to those who are pregnant and to those With nursing babies in those days! And pray that your flight may not Be in winter or on the Sabbath. For then there will be great Tribulation, such as has not been since the beginning of the world Until this time, no, nor ever shall be. And unless those days were Shortened, no flesh would be saved; but for the elect’s sake those Days will be shortened.”

♥ Matthew 24:15-22 NKJV

These are the words of our Lord. It is obvious that the time of the Beast is not going to find many happy people on the earth. You should also read and study Revelation 13:1-18 and 17:8-11.

While Satan's number, as mentioned earlier, is 999, the number of the Beast is 666. He is able to transform into 666 different forms. I should point out something of extreme interest at this juncture. Although these various wicked angels and humans in the Dark Kingdom can transform into different creatures, there is one form none of them can assume—that of a dove! This is a well-known fact in the Dark Kingdom. Before Emmanuel Omoobajesu was converted by the Lord, after the Lord had spoken to him in his crystal ball for the first time, the Holy Spirit came to his house that night and flew through his window in the form of a Dove. This Dove spoke to him in a human voice and said He would return. This is one reason Emmanuel knew He was not from the Dark Kingdom because they cannot assume the form of a dove. When I first stayed at Emmanuel's house in Ifon he related this experience and showed me the very window through which the Holy Spirit came.

The Beast, along with the others in the Evil Government, has already decreed that Germany will fight Israel in the Third World War and that Germany will win the war. We know from the Bible, of course, that this will not happen. In the battle of Armageddon, Germany (along with other allies such as Libya, Persia (Iran), Turkey and Ethiopia) will be defeated by God as recorded in prophecy (See Ezekiel 38 and 39).

The Antichrist's (Gog's) army at Armageddon is from the ten countries which made up the old Roman empire. These countries include Hungary, Bulgaria and Rumania. And because the Soviet Union had controlled these nations, we had thought the Soviets would have to be defeated in war in order for these countries to be free to join the Antichrist and the Beast. Now they are free on their own and this is another ominous sign that the appearance of the Beast is near!

His prophets and religious system are being prepared at this very moment. I have personal knowledge of some of his religious leaders who are being prepared for the time when he establishes his ecclesiastical system in the world. Their primary purpose will be to instigate the greatest deception every perpetrated on the human race.

Many who will see these signs and wonders in the last days will be deceived, particularly in the Western countries. People here have not been exposed to the counterfeit miracles we have seen in Africa. Many are those who will be deceived by the Beast and the Antichrist. And we know that those who take the Mark of the Beast will be doomed to eternal destruction.

“And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the Name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom, let Him That hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is The number of a man; and his number is six hundred threescore and Six (666).”

♥ Revelation 13:17-18

“And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the earth; and there Fell a noisome and grievous sore upon the men which had the mark of The beast, and upon them which worshipped his image. And the beast Was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles Before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark Of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were Cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.”

♥ Revelation 16:2, 19:20

Those who have traveled to the spiritual plane where the Beast lives, describe him as a fat, red-looking “man” sitting upon a throne. His appearance is like a gorilla, but his symbol in the occult world is the leopard. All the false religions are now in preparation for his appearing with the Antichrist. Those who follow and worship him and those who take the *mark of the beast* will be cast into the lake of fire and brimstone to be tormented forever.

It is time to prepare yourself for the coming of the Lord. Are you ready to meet Jesus or are there things you are ashamed of for which you need to repent?

10

THE POWERS

**“For we wrestle not against flesh and
Blood, but against ... powers ...”**

♥ Ephesians 6:12

Next in the organizational structure of the Dark Kingdom we find the Powers. The Powers number *eight* and they dwell primarily in the heavens above the earth. They can and do travel back and forth to the earth, however, to carry out their assignments and wicked duties. The plans of Satan and the Principalities are carried out by the Powers—they are executive officers to the Principalities. They are all spirit beings who, like the Principalities, once were mighty angels in the Kingdom of God. But they chose to rebel with Satan and they are now sub-governors and territorial rulers over his kingdom. They are both transcendental and terrestrial demons. In other words, they have access to both the earth and the heavens but, unlike Satan, do not have access to Heaven.

In carrying out their work for the Dark Kingdom, the Powers use both Rulers of Darkness and Wicked Spirits. They also use millions of servient spirits and human beings we call *Agents* of the devil.

Most of the false worship and religion throughout the world is directed to these beings. Throughout human history, the erection of wooden, stone and metal images has been in worship of these demonic angels. You will recognize many of their names from the Bible. But we did not recognize their positions of prominence in Satan's kingdom.

The Powers are especially happy when they can deceive mankind into worshipping them with human and blood sacrifices. Like the Principalities, they are very wicked and detestable beings! Even the lowest form of human cannot compare with them in wickedness. What human being would heat up a metal statue and then lay their infants upon it in sacrifice? This is nothing but the work of the Powers! We see it throughout the Old Testament. People often malign God for telling Israel to destroy the wicked people around them (Canaanites, etc.). He had them do this to stop the wicked work of the Powers operating through these people. Without human beings, they cannot carry out their assignments upon the earth.

In addition to human destruction, their main purpose is to keep man from worshipping the One True God. They also want to take as many humans to hell as possible. They have been in Heaven and they have stated that they "do not want man to inherit the blessings we used to enjoy." They hate man vehemently as well as God.

These eight demonic angles occupy the eight planes of the spirit realm directly above the earth. Each one of them occupies one plane which they control—they are ruler of their own "heaven." These planes are quite large. And, although each plane is a separate world with many spirit and human beings living and going there, you should understand that these planes are circular around the earth and not flat.

There is as much spiritual traffic in the lower planes as you would see physical traffic in New York. The higher planes, above plane six, can only be traveled to by the more spiritually advanced humans so they are not as crowded with human traffic. No human being is allowed to enter the Transcendental Plane (plane 13) where Satan dwells and operates his spiritual

satellite system. So, in a sense, each of these Powers is a little “god” ruling over their own spiritual world while also involving themselves in our world to destroy humans and carry out the spiritual agenda of the Dark Kingdom. They disperse spiritual and material gifts to those humans who assist them. These gifts include money, sex, and spiritual power which is the ultimate power. Most humans who have worked in the Dark Kingdom for any length of time know they can obtain anything they desire from the physical world *through* spiritual power.

Normally, when Satan and the Powers are enlisting a human being for service, the first question they will ask them is, “What do you want?” Most will answer, “Money and power.” They will obtain both if they work hard for Satan and kill a lot of people. But the price they will pay in eternity is spiritual death in the lake of fire. And, as you will see later, many willingly choose this route. At first I thought most were serving the Dark Kingdom ignorantly. But now I believe that most know and all are given an opportunity by God to choose life instead of death. This has been the case with all I have talked with who are now in the ministry of the Lord.

The eight powers are: (1) Ashtaroth (Astarte, Ashtoreth), (2) Baal, (3) Magog, (4) Beelzebub (Baalzebub), (5) Asmodee, (6) Mammon, (7) Paimon, and (8) Ariton. After adding the Powers, the ruling organizational chart of the Dark Kingdom looks like **Figure IV**.

However, as I believe you have discerned, this is the *formal* organization. And like in many corporations today, there is also an informal organization. Consequently, there is a lot of interaction among these spirits and humans. That is the reason why those humans who have advanced spiritually are able to meet with and have intimate relations (dinner, sex, etc.) with Satan himself. This informal interaction is necessary because each of these Powers has special gifts that the others need from time to time. We will discuss these in Book IV when we talk about their operations.

Directly under these Powers are millions of servient and familiar spirits who, along with the Rulers of Darkness of this world, carry out their assignments from the Dark Kingdom. They meet nearly every night of the year. Do you

think that this might perhaps mean they are more serious about spiritual warfare than is the Church? And, as already mentioned, the Powers and Principalities have one long, formal meeting with Satan once a month on the last Friday. This meeting lasts all night. They are serious about their business. It is time we became serious about stopping them and their evil schemes against the human race.

1. ASHTAROTH

This demonic angel is often called the Queen of Heaven (Jer. 7:18; 44:17-19, 25), a mockery of the *real* Queen of Heaven—the Bride of Christ. She is worshipped as a goddess, having first manifested to mankind as a female centuries ago. She works a lot with Baal and is associated with him. Together they often work with the Principality Appolyon in the promotion of false religion. They are the heads of the religious spirits operating throughout the world today. This is useful information to have in spiritual warfare because it is important in our prayers to come against them by name.

Ashtaroth is in charge of all nature religions such as Wicca and what we call paganism. Everywhere in the world where they celebrate crop festivals (which is most countries), she is behind it. She also delights herself in crop sacrifices from the people. You can see that she is usurping God's position in wanting to be worshipped for providing food to the human race.

In Africa, as well as Asia, she is in charge of ancestor worship. As the earth goddess, sacrifices must be offered to her before the planting and harvesting of crops. She relishes the sacrifice of firstborn children and especially twins. In countries deep into worship and reverence for Ashtaroth, they usually disdain the birth of twins.

As the Queen of Heaven, she claims the ability to give children to infertile couples. This is a big problem in Africa where barrenness is not tolerated and often results in divorce. As we shall see later, the "children" she provides are not humans, but are evil spirit beings in human form.

Also, as the Earth goddess, she has acquired from Satan the secret of various herbs and plants upon the earth. These herbs are utilized to prepare magical potions, charms or *medicines*, as they are called in Africa and by First Nations Peoples. She passes on these secrets to her hand-picked servants who often become healers (called herbalists or witch doctors in Africa; quack doctors in Asia and Medicine Men in Native culture). We will discuss later how this “healing” is used against the human race. These herbalists or witch doctors use these secrets to gain income for themselves and the witches with whom they work. They also use the knowledge to enslave people and obtain more servants for the Dark Kingdom. Consequently, *all satanic healing* originates with her!

This is one reason you must be able to differentiate the healing of God from that of the Dark Kingdom. She will work with the Principality known as the Beast in the end time to perform “healings” and “miracles” such as raising the dead to an extent unprecedented in human history. These healings and miracles will persuade people to worship the Beast as mentioned in Revelation thinking Him to be God, the Messiah. Even his number, 666, symbolizes this. Remember the Scriptures say this calls for “wisdom” to understand. Three is God’s perfect number whereas six is the number for man; therefore, 666 symbolizes the “perfect man” and the only perfect man to ever live was Jesus. But the Antichrist will be the Dark Kingdom’s counterfeit “perfect man” to those without spiritual discernment.

The incidences of these healings and miracles such as the dead being raised are almost a daily occurrence in West Africa. Can you imagine what kind of “church” I could build in America if I took this power and used it here? I would have a congregation of 10,000 people in one week and great wealth. People would come on Sunday mornings with hearses full of dead people. It could be done here if I wanted to serve the Dark Kingdom. We had better increase our spiritual acumen and know the working of God from the counterfeit of the devil.

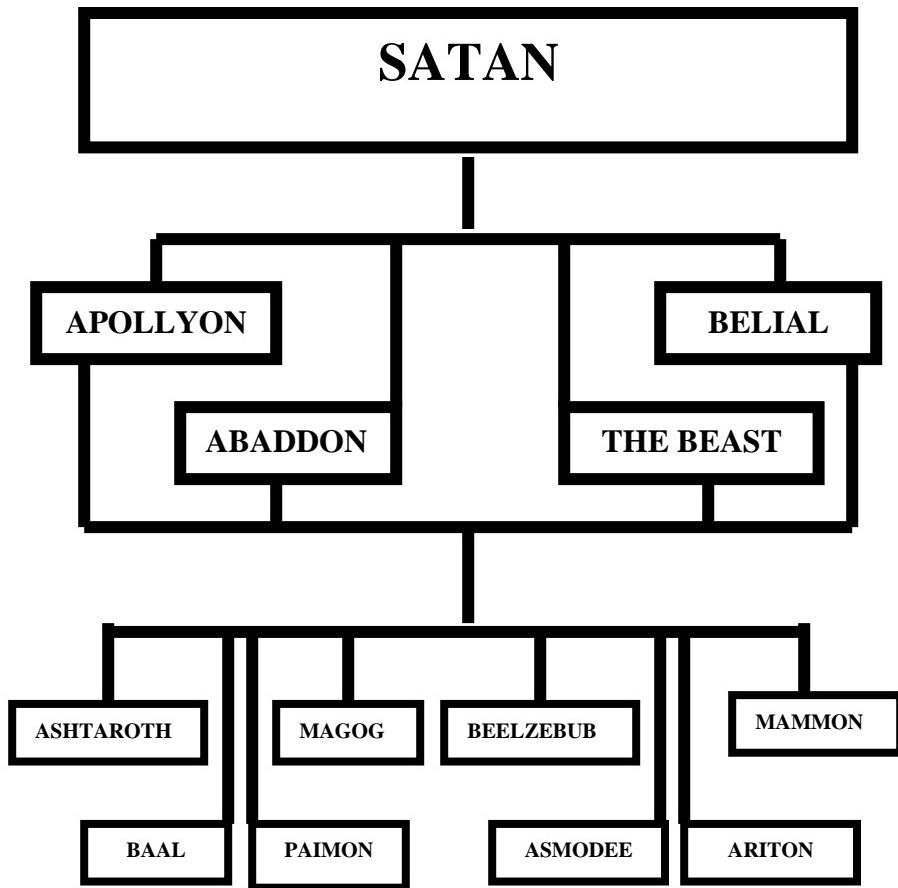


Figure IV
**Ruling Hierarchy of
the Dark Kingdom**

Ashtaroth entered into the world through the wife of Cush, Noah's grandson. The Queen of Heaven convinced the wife of Cush to kill her husband and then marry Nimrod, her son. Through this incestuous relationship between

Semiramis and Nimrod, Baal was able to possess Nimrod. This couple gave birth to demonic children who played a big part in multiplying the avenues for demons to occupy and control the earth through their possession of humans. Ashtaroth was responsible for the Babylonian cult religious system which is still in the world today. This relationship also resulted in the introduction of the pagan nature religions as well as occultism, astrology and divination (fortune telling).

Ashtaroth is represented by the moon. It is no accident that the false religion of Islam is represented by the moon as well. Mecca is the headquarters for the Eastern Kingdom of Satan. Whenever Ashtaroth is upon the earth, she dwells under the sacred black stone at the most holy shrine of Islam located in Mecca, Saudi Arabia. What do you think a black stone or black *rock* represents?

Because of this affinity for the moon, we see a lot of demonic activity taking place whenever there is a new moon or a full moon. This is why pagans and moon worshippers are driven to all sorts of rituals, dances, and human sacrifice whenever the moon is full. They will gather for a festival where they commit all sorts of sexual sins, become drunk, and dance. As you can see, the motive of Ashtaroth in all of this is not only to obtain worship, but also to anger God by getting people involved in sin.

Through her possession of people, she is able to transfer the spirit of witchcraft from the fingers of those possessed to new converts. This is a direct counterfeit of the Church doctrine of the “laying on of hands.” These spirits can even be transferred into the womb to possess the body of an unborn child. We deal with many, many cases like this in our ministry each month. A person is possessed by spirits and they do not even know how it happened to them. They never made a conscious effort to receive the spirits. We have even dealt with many who later became Christians, but still needed deliverance because of this phenomenon.

In many other cases, the unborn child is removed from the womb and taken to the spirit world where it is dedicated to the Dark Kingdom. As you may

surmise, deliverance ministry is quite complicated in Africa. It requires much wisdom and knowledge before the person can be ministered to and delivered.

Ashtaroth, like Satan and other demonic angels, has copied God. They like to work by covenant. Satan himself has a covenant with all his Rulers of Darkness. They pledge something to him, in addition to their allegiance, to obtain power, wealth, and the position as a Ruler of Darkness. Ashtaroth, however, is mainly concerned with trapping human beings and convincing them to worship the Evil Government as being “all powerful.” Then, they are able to promote humans and get them to do their evil bidding.

Like others in the Dark Kingdom, she goes by many other names such as:

1. Diana – the prostitute goddess of the Ephesians.
2. Venus – the goddess of love.
3. Rhea – the Olympian Mother of gods.
4. Isi – the moon goddess of India.
5. Isis – worshipped by the Egyptians as the goddess of fertility. She is associated with the secret societies of the Freemasons and Rosicrucians.
6. Shing Mao – the mother of China.
7. Irene – the goddess of peace in Greece.
8. Holy Mother or Mother of God – often worshipped or prayed to by Roman Catholics.
9. Madonna – honored in the art world.
10. The Queen of Heaven.

Besides the moon, she is often represented as a beautiful woman carrying a child (Madonna and child). This is her appeal to mankind as the fertility goddess. She is also sometimes represented by a pregnant woman.

In her natural appearance as a demon, she cannot be invoked by humans. She can only be appealed to for help. She can be seen in the heavenlies by those wishing to meet with her if they travel there spiritually, or by those who can travel there in their physical bodies, e.g., certain magicians.

2. BAAL

Baal is the Power who was worshipped by the Canaanites as God. He is the bull god and is represented by a bull. In his normal appearance, he is half man and half bull. Remember the Greek Minotaur? The root meaning of Baal in Hebrew simply means “lord” or “husband.” Whereas Ashtaroth is the goddess of fertility, Baal is the god of fertility. He is also known as the Sun God. As discussed previously he often works hand in hand with Ashtaroth and Apollyon to promote false religions. As the Sun God of Babylon, he is represented by the sun. All sun worshippers are worshipping Baal.

In Egypt, he is known as the Son of the Nile or Ra. He is the spirit who possessed Akhenaton, the husband of Nefertiti (possessed by Ashtaroth). Nefertiti was the originator of the Rosicrucians and Masons.

In addition to false religion, Baal promotes religious prostitution as well as shrine prostitutes such as those encountered by the men of God in the Bible.

It was through the Power known as Baal that the occult was introduced into the world in an attempt to pollute the spiritual worship of man. This he did by possessing Nimrod. Baal also brought alcoholism into the world. This was to induce man to give up control of his God-given mental faculties so that demons could fully control the human race. Not surprisingly, alcohol and sexual immorality often go hand in hand. We see Baal’s influence in Scripture in many instances such as:

“And when the people saw that Moses delayed to Come down out of the mount, the people gathered Themselves together unto Aaron, and said unto him, ‘Up, make us gods, which shall go before us; for as for This Moses, the man that brought us up out of the land of Egypt, we wot not what is become of him.’ And Aaron said Unto them, ‘Break off the golden earrings, which are in the Ears of your wives’ ... And he received them at their hand, And fashioned it with a graving tool, after he made it a Molten calf: and they said, ‘These be thy gods, O Israel, which

Brought thee up out of the land of Egypt.””
♥ Exodus 32:1-2, 4

Notice they worshipped a golden calf or small bull, the symbol of Baal. Gold, of course, is a symbol for purity. Along with alcohol, he likes to use tobacco, hallucinatory drugs, sex, murder and pride to control his victims. The original use of drugs was in religious worship and still is throughout most of the pagan world today. A favorite sacrifice Baal enjoys is that of firstborn children. This is done as a mockery of God and the Passover recorded in Exodus. It is also to mock the Jewish dedication of the firstborn to God (Ex. 13:2).

In pagan Rome, Baal was known as the god, Jupiter. In addition to working with Apollyon and Ashtaroth to promote false religion, he works with Abaddon to influence parties and discotheques by creating an atmosphere for alcoholism and sexual immorality. In furthering this goal, as the sun god, he has taught mankind the hypnotic and psychological effects of light. He was instrumental in developing the lighting system used in discos today. The purpose behind this lighting system, spiritually, is to increase the sexual desires of youth and lead them into sexual degradation. The effect of this light, along with another of his inventions called heavy metal rock music, has been to destroy our youth in many ways. I believe when you examine these facts carefully, you will be able to see the demonic work of these Principalities and Powers as they create a synergistic effect by combining all of these evil inventions.

According to those who knew him, Baal was the demon who possessed Nebuchadnezzar during the period of his insanity. They say he is the Power and chief demon in charge of insanity and mental illness. We see his work often in Africa as we deal with many cases of total insanity with root causes in the spirit realm. These are people who have been given up on by the medical profession. But thank God He has not given up on them and we have seen many delivered. As the sun god, his symbol is the sun or a star. As with Ashtaroth, it is not an accident that many Islamic nations portray a star, crescent moon or both on their flags. Baal has also been called Orion, named after the astronomical constellation.

Baal is the star not only of Eastern religions (named not from geography but from Satan's Eastern Kingdom in Mecca—the seat of false religion), but also of the secret societies (there are over a thousand in Nigeria) and lodges. Just stop for a moment and think about how many of these use the symbols of Baal and Ashtaroth. Can that be mere coincidence or could it corroborate this data?

Baal is the all-seeing eye of Freemasonry and the third eye of the Eastern religions. Most Christians should be familiar with the “third eye” and its occultic ramifications. It is representative of enlightenment. This is why Hindu women and sometimes men place a tatoo or mole on their forehead where the third eye is located. Many of those involved in the occultic world possess a spiritual third eye through which they are able to see into the spirit world at all times. Others have many of these eyes.

A young boy (witch) of ten was taken in by one of our pastors in Akure, Nigeria. The pastor did not know he was a witch. After only a week, the boy came to the pastor and confessed to being a witch. He said that he must leave. When he came to stay, he possessed four spiritual eyes. But because of the prayers in the household and at the church, two of the eyes had been put out. He said that he must leave before the other two were lost as well.

In India, Baal is known as Iswara of the Hindu religion and forbids the eating of the cow, a symbol for the Greater Witches.

3. BEELZEBUB

His name means Lord of the Flies. He exercises control in the spirit world over everything that flies. As such, he is over all the witches and wizards who fly in the night to the spirit world. Beelzebub is often seen as one of the bodyguards of Satan at large meetings of the Evil Government; he is very wicked.

Being in charge of the witches, Beelzebub is in charge of collecting the blood sacrifices made to Satan. Like all of the higher demons, he feeds only on human blood. Whenever a witch or wizard kills a person through witchcraft (often called “remote control” because of how it’s done) or occultic means, the blood is taken to the spiritual witch coven where it is transferred to the higher witches. Those in Class III, known as the Alpha and Omega order, keep some for their own use and give the balance to Beelzebub who in turn gives it to Satan. These are the blood sacrifices given to the devil. All of the human and spirit beings from Class III of the witches and up eat no human flesh—they only drink human blood. The lesser witches and the human Agents will both drink blood and eat human flesh.

In case you are wondering why they have so much interest in human blood and drinking it, the reason is not just because they like to kill humans. This is what I originally thought. According to several men I spoke with including a man who was a red witch and a wizard for forty-eight years, they drink blood to satisfy an addiction. He used to meet with Satan three times a week and he was the leader of a large company of demons and agents.

Whenever a witch is promoted into Class III or Alpha and Omega Order, they no longer eat human flesh but drink human blood only. They have very large blood banks in the heavens where the blood is taken and stored. Those who have seen these blood banks in the spirit world tell me the reservoirs are very large. They compare in size to the large storage tanks one sees at a petroleum refinery here in America.

As the chief demon of Satan in the gathering of blood, Beelzebub is a specialist in destruction and loss of life. Using his agents, he causes “accidents” and takes special delight in causing catastrophic “accidents” such as an airline crash, where there is a large loss of life.

In appearance, Beelzebub is half man and half horse. He is the pattern for the centaur found in Greek mythology. And like Pegasus the winged horse, he has wings, but they are similar to the web of a spider and are small. Those who worked with him say he can move through the air with lightning speed. He is

often seen with smoke and fire coming out of his mouth like a dragon. His wings, too, more closely resemble a dragon's than they do those of Pegasus.

Beelzebub is the most destructive and ferocious of the Powers. As such, he is feared by all the others. For this reason, Satan likes to have Beelzebub in his company by his side at large meetings of the Evil Government.

4. ARITON

This Power is in charge of all the demons and agents involved with magical powers. He can be appealed to whenever one wishes to gain more magical power.

While in the Dark Kingdom, an evangelist friend of mine was given a magic mirror by Ariton. With this mirror, he was able to see the past and the future of a person who looked into the mirror. I could detail hundreds of pages of different magical charms and how they operate. But most of this would not be believable to those unaccustomed to the creation and operation of charms. But it is through these charms that a person gains power in the physical world. It should be emphasized that charms do not work in the spiritual world! They are given to a person in this world primarily to gain power, sex (attracting members of the opposite sex), and money. There are charms to protect. Charms to draw people to a place of business or a church. Through certain charms, a person can become an instant millionaire or have great power to kill his enemies. One example of a native charm that kills is given by Evangelist Emmanuel Omoobajesu in his book, *My Conversion*.

"I had a native charm made from two hundred and one (201) black cats. It was a waist band (ONDE in Yoruba language). With the charm I could kill anybody or make him sick. It could be used in many other situations. For example, if there was a conflict or even a war between two villages or groups of peoples, and you go to the war-front with the charm on you, it will make you invisible. If you then draw closer to the enemy territory and strike the ground with the charm three times saying the appropriate incantations, almost

immediately all types of banana and plantain trees will sprout out from nowhere all over the area with ripe fruits on them. Now if a person from the enemy camp comes along feeling so hungry and he took any of these fruits, he has taken a deadly poison. There are yet many other ways this charm could be used, but the best way I had often put the charm to use is this. Four nails are put on the wall with the top-most one being about thirteen (13) inches from the nearest of the set of three nails which are separated from each other by two shorter gaps. All the nails are arranged vertically downwards.

"If I wanted to use the charm to cause body-ache to somebody, I will hang the charm on the top nail and then draw the lower end of it down to hang it on the first of three nails beneath. If to cause somebody to be fainting frequently, it would be drawn to the second nail. But if it was to kill instantly, I would draw it down to the last of the nails in the row.²"

Another deadly charm whose only purpose is to kill is a magic mirror. There must be literally hundreds of different types of magic mirrors supplied by Ariton. This particular one, however, is designed only to kill. A person who possesses this mirror can kill another person simply by summoning their spirit into the mirror. That is, they call the other person and that person's spirit must appear in the mirror. If the person appears in the mirror and you see them from the front, that person will die physically because from the moment they appear in the mirror, they are dead spiritually. However, if the person appears in the mirror and turns their back upon the person possessing the mirror, that means they cannot be harmed. They have *power* over the mirror.

Evangelist Omoobajesu also had such a mirror and he told me that Jesus appeared to him in the mirror; however, Jesus did *not* turn His back in the mirror indicating that He had power over the mirror but instead He spoke to Emmanuel about all of his sins and told him that He was Jesus.

I spoke with scores of people who had the power to summon a person's spirit into a bowl of water through incantations. Once the person's image appeared in the water, they would take a knife and stab the image in the water. The

² Ibid, p. 63

water would instantly turn blood red and the person whose image had appeared in the water would die within a few days.

5. MAMMON

Most people familiar with Scripture have heard the name of Mammon. We associate Mammon with money because of the story given by our Lord. We talk about the god of mammon. We never knew how right we were. We thought it was just figurative. Theologically speaking, we would say that a person who worships money is one who worships the god of mammon. This is in fact true.

Mammon occupies the sixth plane above the earth. From here, he is in charge of the storehouses of Satan in the heavenly realm. Anything belonging to Satan, he sells—charms, spirits such as witchcraft which one can purchase (yes, you can actually *buy* such spirits!), magic mirrors, fame and many other things. It's a huge market place.

Mammon is like a mass merchant for the Dark Kingdom. He is the treasurer and as such is often called the Golden Demon. His appearance is in the form of a man, but he has a golden complexion. He has the facial tribal marks, parallel straight lines, common among Yoruba men in West Africa. He has two such tribal marks located on each cheek. He distributes the wealth of the Dark Kingdom to the servants of Satan in the world. This is done to maintain and reinforce Satanic control over the entire world. This control will reach its zenith, we are told, in the last days during the reign of the Beast. The Beast, the Bible tells us, will exercise control over much (many theologians believe all) of the world.

I do not believe the Bible teaches that the Beast will control the entire world; nevertheless, he will control much of the world both directly and indirectly. In addition to his ecclesiastical system which we have discussed, the Beast will control the world through its financial systems. For this control of the financial systems, he will work hand in hand with Mammon. God has been

telling the Church for many years now to “get out of debt.” Now you know why He has been saying this. There is going to be a financial collapse that will usher in control by Mammon and the Beast.

The Bible tells us in Revelation,

“And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.” ♥ Revelation 13:17

We can see from this scripture how the Principalities and Powers are working together to control the world. It is difficult to survive without money.

Mammon is also responsible for establishing the contracts involving money and its distribution with the Agents and Rulers of Darkness employed by the Dark Kingdom. Believe it or not, he has contracts with certain families in the earth who do his bidding for great sums of money. Most of these families are well known wealthy and “respectable.” They are located throughout the world, including the United States. They use the money to support war, politics and the distribution of drugs. Many of these wealthy families in the West are in the occult organization known as the Illuminati. It is dedicated to establishing a *one world government* under the authority of Satan. In essence, this organization is a counterfeit of the Apostle in the Church because their primary dictum is *ordo ab chao* which is Latin for “order from chaos.” Just as God’s apostles are called to establish His government upon the earth so are the Illuminati Satan’s apostles to establish his government.

In October, 1996, the Lord awakened me in my hotel room in Kalispell, Montana, and spoke: “The apostolic banner is beginning to wave and from this apostolic move I will bring order out of chaos.” This is how I know that the Illuminati heads are a counterfeit of God’s apostles.

Another goal of this Power is to keep money out of the hands of Christians, especially those with giving hearts who want to do something for God financially. Many Christians, even those tithing, wonder why they are having such financial difficulty today. This is the god of Mammon at work.

It is no accident that the secular press and television news media are 95% atheists. Mammon has done his job well. Along with help from others in the Dark Kingdom, he has been instrumental in placing these people in key positions to ridicule and thwart the work of the Gospel. And as you can tell from the product they produce today, they are also used to further corrupt society.

Mammon entices people of this world by making them become dissatisfied with what they possess. You probably never guessed that when you got the urge for a new car, boat, television, or house, spiritual warfare was perhaps being waged against you by Mammon. He says you need a bigger house or another color television set or a boat. Before you know it, you have fourteen color sets, two boats—one for fishing and one for pleasure, an airplane and a bigger mortgage. And you are in trouble. Especially with what is coming upon the world in the near future, a total economic collapse. That is how Mammon has assisted Satan in destroying the family unit.

Mammon exercises control over all the demons of greed and selfishness. He also controls the demons of poverty and financial destitution that he sends against Christians to keep us poor.

The god or Power Mammon possesses mankind through the love of money. The Bible says in 1 Timothy that the “love of money is the root of all evil.” Notice, money is not the root of evil. It is the love of money. Like me, you have probably known people who are consumed with making money. That is all they think about from morning to evening. They are possessed by Mammon!

God wants you to prosper and have money, but He does not want you to worship money or the things of the earth more than things of the Spirit. Remember, what you think about most is your god. I hope it is *the* God and not a god.

God wants to meet your needs just as any earthly father does. He does not want you to be poor. But you can hinder God's ability to provide for you, as mentioned earlier, by failing to tithe and give to the work of the Kingdom. If you were called before God, how could you convince Him that His work here was important if you do not "put your money where your mouth is?"

What would you say to Jesus if He asked you this? No, you need to give. But when you decide that you will tithe and give no matter what happens, Mammon will attack you. He will send the demons of poverty your way to get you to change your mind about giving to God. You may lose your job. The car will break down along with the washing machine and the central air. Your wife or children may become ill. A thousand things may happen as they did to Job. Just hang in there with God and He will provide. I know, I've been there for years at a time when Heaven seemed like brass. But in the Christian faith, there is only *one decision* you have to make. It is an uncomplicated faith! The one decision you must make and never waver from, no matter what, is to believe the Bible. That's all. *Just believe the Bible.*

You see, we don't see things from God's perspective. His perspective is the Bible! Let me illustrate. Years ago I was reading and meditating in the Bible in the early morning as is my custom. I was in Psalms where David was questioning the Lord about why the wicked prosper. I stopped and said, "Yes, Lord, why do the wicked prosper?" He answered *immediately* and said, "They don't prosper." I said, "What do you mean they don't prosper?" He said, "They don't prosper!" I said, "But I know so and so who is a multimillionaire and most ungodly yet he is prospering." The Lord said, "He's not prospering." I said, "What do you mean he's not prospering?—the guy's got \$100 million in the bank!" The Lord said, "Any man who dies and goes to hell can hardly be considered prosperous!"

You see, I had never thought of it in that way. Again, as I have tried to emphasize in this book, we tend to look at things only from the physical and do not see the spiritual. Now, if you are having trouble in your finances, let me help you. The first place I would look is in my giving. Here is what you do to defeat Mammon in your life:

1. Repent and tell God you are sorry that you've been a thief. Read Malachi 3:8-11.
2. Get your heart right with God by promising you will tithe and give. Start with 15% of your gross income. You will be able to increase it as God blesses you. Make a quality decision. No matter what happens, keep giving the 15%.
3. Pray a strong prayer with your family and pastor using the Prayer of Binding and Loosing (Mt. 18:18). In this prayer, bind the Power of Mammon and all those working with him against your finances.
4. Believe that God heard and answered your prayer. From that moment on, praise and thank God each day for improving your financial situation and blessing your family.

Caution! Your financial situation will not change over night. In fact, it will probably worsen considerably before it improves because the devil and Mammon want to change your mind. That's why you have to make a *quality* decision that you will believe the Bible—that God will “rebuke the devourer for your sake”—not the circumstances the devil is sending your way to get you to change your mind. Just know that the power in the spirit realm has been broken and just as day follows night, so shall your finances experience an increase in the physical world. God has changed your situation! But the order is always the same—first the spiritual, then the physical.

6. PAIMON

This Power is the one who controls all celestial or heavenly demons. Because of his involvement in the heavens, he has influence over the stars and planets. Therefore, we find him working with Baal, sometimes known as Orion. He closely works with the Principality Belial since Belial is over the planets and stars.

Paimon is also known as the crystal demon. While working with Belial and servient spirits, he speaks to people through mirrors, crystal balls and water. From him a friend received a magical mirror while traveling to see him in the spirit world. Through this mirror, he could learn about the lives of any person living upon the earth. Once you understand the Dark Kingdom, it is easy to

see how this is possible. It is no big deal although you may think it difficult to believe. It is done through the operation of familiar spirits.

This Power is also the one who will pretend to be the voice of God to fool people. He works in the White Garment false churches of West Africa to provide false prophecy. There are thousands of these churches in Africa. They are prototypes of the churches the Beast will set up. Paimon provides information to the “pastor” which would appear to be from God. It is a counterfeit to the revelation gifts of the Holy Spirit (1 Cor. 12).

These false churches also are used to extort money from people and thus progress the Dark Kingdom. Because they know about man’s innate need for God, they are able to provide a false religious system which looks like the real thing. If you were not spiritually mature and you went to one of these churches, you would be fooled. You walk in as a stranger and the “pastor” tells you your name, where you live and how much money is in your pocket. This makes you believe it is God, since only He could know these things. They are called White Garment churches because all of the members dress in white. This is a mockery of the true Christians who always appear completely *clothed in white* in the spirit world.

Because of the tremendous amount of the false prophetic in West Africa, God commissioned us to establish a training center there to train and teach on the true prophetic. It is very important that Christians learn to tell the true from the false. Otherwise, the miracles from the Principalities and Powers could be enough to seduce you into false religion. Like many of these things I have mentioned, if I were to start a White Garment church here in America it would flourish. Because we are so unaccustomed to seeing the supernatural, we would believe it is from God.

There are many involved today in the New Age with mediums. But they have a new name—they’re called channelers. They don’t realize how exact that new name is. They are channels through which demon spirits operate. But if you don’t know the true, how can you know the false? It is interesting that in Africa people who have seen the false prophetic for years recognize the true

immediately when they see it. And this is a society used to seeing “miracles.” For example, there is a tribe in southeastern Nigeria where a dead person actually walks to his own grave. After death, an incantation is said over the dead corpse and it will get up and walk to its own grave.

In the secret societies there, whenever a member dies, he is always brought back to life by the other members in a secret ceremony with powerful incantations. After questioning him about where he has any money and who killed him, he is then allowed to die. This is done through demon spirits and incantations. And we have been told the devil has no power!

Paimon, like Satan, will often masquerade as an angel of light. He will introduce himself as Michael, the archangel. He is the lord over soothsayers and fortunetellers. It is through Paimon that those involved in false prophecy, such as Jeanne Dixon, receive their information through a crystal ball (usually) or other means. The crystal ball is the most common method or a mirror. Every Christian should know that this method is not and never will be used by God. Why have so many been fooled by Jeanne Dixon just because she correctly predicted some things such as Kennedy’s assassination? The fact that she admitted to using a crystal ball should be proof of her informational source.

You see, Satan, as a spirit possessing much wisdom, is able to see slightly ahead into the future. This is a fact we have not understood and why so many believe that fortunetellers like Ms. Dixon are prophetesses. I recall reading the book detailing her “gift of prophecy.” It’s not prophecy at all! It’s the work of hell and you had better not be fooled just because someone predicts the future. You had better be washed in the Blood and full of the Holy Spirit in these last days. Another reason many have been fooled is because the information may seem not only prophetic, but also beneficial. This is irrelevant because the devil often does this to gain the confidence of that person. Their hidden agenda, however, is to use that person and then send them to hell.

7. ASMODEE

This Power is often called the “Stinker” by those associated with him in the past. His appearance is that of a fat and smelly demonic-looking “man.” He is tall in stature and walks very lightly with a spring in his step. He also possesses wings similar to those of Beelzebub.

Asmodee is heavily involved with sexual immorality and he marries people for Satan . He is responsible for the spirit of Jezebel in the Bible and often works with Baal.

“Now Ahab the son of Omri did evil in the sight of the Lord, more Than all who were before him. And it came to pass, as though it had Been a trivial thing for him to walk in the sins of Jeroboam the son of Nebat, that he took as wife Jezebel the daughter of Ethbaal, king of The Sidonians; and he went and served Baal and worshipped him. Then he set up an altar for Baal in the temple of Baal, which he had Built in Samaria. And Ahab made a wooden (Asherah) image. Ahab Did more to provoke the lord God of Israel to anger than all the kings Of Israel who were before him.”

♥ 1 Kings 16:30-33 NKJV

You can also read in 1 Kings 18 how Elijah, Obadiah and the other prophets of God were attacked by this Power. The Bible has much to say about the Jezebel spirit here and in Revelation.

Asmodee works primarily with the Principality of Abaddon and reports to him. The following problems in your life probably indicate the work of Asmodee: (1) Prostitution, (2) Sexual perversion such as homosexuality, lesbianism or bestiality; (3) Barrenness of the womb; (4) Contempt for one’s spouse and marital conflict; (5) Repeated divorces and the inability to form permanent, cohesive relationships of the deepest kind such as marriage; (6) Miscarriages and the death of children.

Do you think Asmodee is active in Hollywood? Sad to say he is also hard at work in the Church today. The primary responsibility of Asmodee is to

pollute the human race with immorality. Because of this goal, he works with the other Principalities and Powers to foster sexual immorality, perversion, pornography, and prostitution.

He marries people spiritually for Satan and has sex with them as do Satan and others. He is the demon responsible for spirit husbands and wives in Africa. People there, even Christians, often have a husband or wife in the spirit world. This is a form of possession and must be dealt with through deliverance ministry.

This is a common problem in Africa as those possessed are involved with water spirits who work with Asmodee. The head of all water spirits, Marine, is half woman and half fish. She is where the image of a mermaid came from. Another ruler of the water spirits is Leviathan. This is the same Leviathan who started the original rebellion with Belial. He is found in Job 41, Psalm 74 and Isaiah 27:1.

In Christian marriages, Asmodee is interested in breaking down the morals of one or both partners. He is responsible for jealousy and uses it as a tool to promote adultery within the marriage. Marriage counselors could learn much by studying the tactics of Asmodee. He is at work in many ways to destroy the holiness with which God created the institution of marriage. He is responsible for men who become “middle age crazy,” leaving their wife and family for a younger woman. They find out too late, after the new relationship fades, that it was a mistake. He will also encourage a partner to just leave. He tells them they can find a prettier, more deserving husband or wife.

Asmodee encourages homosexuality as another means to destroy the institution of marriage. Today we see him actively at work encouraging society to do away with marriage altogether. He wants to junk marriage as being old-fashioned and antiquated. Who needs it and the problems? Just live life and have a good time. Enjoy sex with as many as you wish and live together with anyone you want, especially if you’re divorced and have small children who will become insecure, neurotic and feel unloved as a result of this lifestyle. The Dark Kingdom is always looking ahead! That is why they

are doing everything possible to destroy the youth of the entire world through every means possible.

People involved in sexual relationships with a spirit husband or wife will have dreams in which they see sexual parts or have sexual intercourse. Often they describe themselves as being caressed sexually in the dream. Severe cases will see demons approaching them in human form demanding to have sex with them. Members of the Dark Kingdom can also use this to cause miscarriages and other problems for humans.

Asmodee gives to his spirit partners the gifts of intelligence, beauty (always) and wealth (sometimes). He does this in order to entice other new recruits. They particularly like to obtain young women whom they send into the churches to encourage sexual sins among the ministers. Based on our case histories, we know that a woman used in this way for very long without obtaining deliverance will become a lesbian. And she will find herself unable to be satisfied sexually from either a man or a woman (what we term nymphomania). This person's sex drive and function is totally out of control, being controlled and used by demons. If not delivered, she will eventually commit suicide. This is the final reward for all eternity granted to those who willingly serve the devil and his Powers in the Dark Kingdom.

As I think you can see, Asmodee is the Power most responsible for the destruction of the family as we know it today. He and Satan know that without the safety and security of the family unit, mankind is doomed. Because of his mission, he vehemently fights those organizations like James Dobson's Focus on the Family who are trying to save the family. He knows if he can stop the family, he can stop the work of God on the earth.

8. MAGOG

Magog is the Power or demon of war! He is sometimes referred to as the Demon of Iron. He teaches people and nations to make war. He works very closely with the white witches in the design and manufacture of war equipment and technology. He has a spiritual laboratory where thousands of demons and some humans do research night and day to develop new

technology and weaponry designed to wage war and kill. The demons are usually not concerned with who wins the war, but only that blood is shed.

Magog is the demon invoked by the black witches when they wish to make a charm or medicine involving war or weaponry such as guns, knives, or special protection in war (invisibility or invincibility). Hence, the black witches work with him as well as the white and red witches.

Magog is instrumental in controlling the demons that cause anger and hate. He uses these servient spirits just as Asmodee does in marriage. Magog uses them to stir up fights or war. He normally works with Belial. Together, they like to see people possessed with what is called the *triplet spirit*—anger, fear and hate. This spirit can enter as three and usually does. This triplet spirit also works with thirteen other spirits including unforgiveness. All black witches are possessed with the triplet spirit. This triplet spirit can exercise tremendous control over a human. Through its operation in a person, that person can kill someone and then wonder why they did it. We see much of this in the world today.

Along with Gog, who is the guardian spirit over Germany, Magog and the Dark Kingdom have decreed that World War III will be fought between Israel and Germany (along with her allies). They have decreed that Germany will be the winner. This will be the battle of Armageddon spoken of in prophecy throughout the Bible (most notably Ezekiel and Revelation). Of course the Bible paints a slightly different picture—it is Israel and the Lord who are victorious, not Germany.

Whenever there is a war (which is all the time somewhere in the world), Magog and his assigned demons will march out with both forces just to see the blood flow. They need much blood for their blood banks in the spirit world.

Magog is also the guardian spirit over the communist countries of China and the Soviet Union. He is involved whenever human beings are seen fighting, cursing or angry.

This Power is so fierce in battle that no human forces can withstand him. That is why in the Old Testament, as long as the Israelites were in covenant with God and serving Him, Jesus went into battle with His people (See Psalm 124:1-8). If not, the armies of Israel would not have been victorious. Witness what happened at Ai (Joshua 7:2-13). Whenever there was sin in the camp and the Lord could not fight with His people, they were never victorious. Do you think we can draw a parallel with spiritual warfare today? Yes, if there is sin in your life, He will not be able to fight for you.

“And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse;
And he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True,
And in righteousness, he doth judge and make war.
His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many
Crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but
He himself. And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood:
And his name is called the Word of God.”

♥ Revelation 19:11-13

Along with Gog, who is the spirit of Antichrist, Magog is being prepared by the Beast and Satan to come against Israel in the last great battle upon the earth—the Battle of Armageddon.

THE RULERS OF DARKNESS OF THIS WORLD

“For we wrestle not against flesh and blood
But against principalities, against powers,
Against the *rulers of darkness of this world, ...*”

♥ Ephesians 6:12

Just as the Bible teaches, there really are Rulers of Darkness of this world. They are next in rank within the Dark Kingdom. They are directly under the Powers and work with them most of the time, although they can work directly with Satan or a Principality from time to time. The highest rank for a Ruler of Darkness is Prince or Princess. The higher demons, including Satan, often refer to themselves as Princes. But the highest rank a human being usually attains in the Dark Kingdom is that of Sub-Prince. This position is almost equal in status with that of the Powers and such a human will possess many of the privileges of a Power in the Dark Kingdom.

These Rulers of Darkness can be either demonic or human, but are primarily spirit-possessed humans. And it is with the humans we will focus our attention. By the time a human being reaches the level of promotion to a Ruler of Darkness, they are much more *spirit* than human. They can do many of the things pure spirit beings can do such as stay in the spirit world for a long time,

even years. When a human first becomes a witch or a wizard, they will leave their body each night in the spirit and travel to their spiritual coven.

In America, the white witches go physically to their coven, but in Africa the black witches are more advanced spiritually—they never travel physically, but transform in the spirit and travel spiritually. The spiritual coven, however, is tied to the physical world and will usually be in the top of a tall tree close to their village.

The human beings who are Rulers of Darkness can be delivered and set free, but it may take years. These are the most difficult of all humans to deliver from the power of Satan. Most involved in deliverance ministry don't understand how complicated and time consuming is the deliverance ministry. But the higher up in the hierarchy of Satan that a human travels, the more difficult will be their deliverance. It will not happen overnight.

The Rulers who are spirit beings, of course, cannot be delivered. They are doomed for all eternity to dwell in the Lake of Fire. But the human Rulers can be delivered, however, most will not be as we will see.

PROMOTION

As a human being travels up the promotional ladder to become a Ruler of Darkness in the Dark Kingdom, they will have become very wicked. They will have killed perhaps thousands of people and caused much pain to mankind. They will have also partaken in various covenants in the Dark Kingdom and they will know Satan's power. Thus, he is normally easily able to hold them in service through fear. He has replaced their heart with the heart of an animal through a spiritual operation and he holds their real heart. They know he can kill them in a moment by merely squeezing their real heart.

They have not grown up knowing the power of the Lord, but they know the power of the devil and they fear him. It is difficult to convince them that Jesus has more power. Each of the covenants they have made with Satan carries

with it the penalty of death for revealing anything about his kingdom and workings. This is one reason it has been difficult to obtain this information and why it has taken so much research. And this is another reason they are difficult to deliver. In order to be delivered, they must confess and renounce their various covenants with Satan. So, they are in a quandary and many are too afraid to receive deliverance. How sad—this is the ultimate in Satanic bondage. They end up choosing eternal death over eternal life just because they so fear physical death and Satan. This is the kingdom of Satan—a kingdom ruled through fear.

In this Dark Kingdom, a human being can only be promoted so far because they are human. The highest level of promotion for a human in the Dark Kingdom is in the Ruler of Darkness hierarchy as a Prince of Darkness. A Prince or Princess of Darkness is among the elite in the Dark Kingdom and has the privileges of a Power. This person often has several Sub-princes under them as Rulers of Darkness as well. Princes and Sub-princes are not all human; they may also be evil spirits. There are few humans, however, who ever attain the rank of Prince; normally they will be a Sub-prince.

In order to attain promotion to a Ruler of Darkness, one normally begins his life in the Dark Kingdom as a witch or wizard. It is to these two we will now turn for discussion because a human Ruler is simply a witch, wizard, witch doctor or magician who has been promoted.

WITCHES

Witches may be either male or female, but there are many more females than males. There are also witches who possess both male and female sexual organs. These witches are extremely wicked. They will use their sexual organs to foster miscarriages and demonic possession in the human race.

The definition of a witch is a person who is possessed by a spirit of witchcraft. This is an actual evil spirit that possesses the person and drives them to do evil. The spirit of witchcraft, especially the black, is the most

feared of all the wicked spirits in the Dark Kingdom. This is due to the terribly destructive acts carried out by those Rulers who are possessed with the spirit of black witchcraft.

There are three *types* of witches—black, white and red. Within these three types of witches are three classes. There are the lesser witches, composed of the Class I and Class II witches, and the greater witches. These greater witches are the Class III witches. This elite group of the greater witches is called the Alpha and Omega group of witches.

In order for a person to become a member of Class I, they must kill seven people. Then for promotion to Class II, they must kill fourteen humans. And for promotion to Class III they must destroy at least thirty-two lives. They have their own hierarchy in the witch world and they can be demoted or killed for disobedience, disloyalty, or creating problems for those above them, including Satan. However, a witch can only be killed, even in spiritual combat, on orders from the Powers, Principalities or Satan himself.

The spirit of witchcraft that possesses a witch has been a major stumbling block for Christians. We have not understood the spirit but only believed that witches are people who are bent on doing evil. In this manner, we have confused the evil spirit with the human person being possessed by the evil spirit of witchcraft. Witchcraft was one of the evil spirits which God cast out of Heaven along with Satan. Consequently, this spirit hates mankind.

The human who is a witch lives a double life—one in this world and another in the spirit world. However, they are more at home in the spirit world than in the physical world. Most witches and wizards have the majority of their “wealth” located in the spiritual world. They normally possess a beautiful home, cars, a family and other things in this world of the spirit which we call the “witch world.” They may be very poor here on the earth, but in the witch world, they are very wealthy. They may be barren in the physical world, but have many children in the witch world. They may have a physical deformity here, but not in the witch world. Some are blind here, but not in the witch world. Such is the life of a witch. They have *spirit eyes* with which they are

able to see into the spirit world at all times. They are also able to see the embryo or fetus in the womb of a pregnant woman. They often use this knowledge to attack an expectant mother. Unlike most Christians, they are much more sensitive to the spirit world than are we.

The purpose of the witches is to cause havoc, destruction and bloodshed. The witches, working with servient spirits, are the ones who ultimately carry out Satan's orders. However, their methodology differs according to what type witch they are. The white witches are mostly located in the countries with the greatest concentration of white people such as the West and the Soviet Union. The primary function of the white witches is in the manufacturing of large-scale destructive devices such as the Hydrogen bomb. They are the least evil of all the witchcraft spirits.

The red witches are responsible for the transportation of blood. They work with the black witches to create death and then carry the blood to their coven each night where it can be transferred to the blood banks in heaven. The red witches are located throughout the whole world. They cause "accidents" and bloodshed after which they suck the blood of the hurt and dying people. A person may be both a wizard and a red or black witch.

The black witches, which are located (i.e., physically) almost exclusively in Africa, are the most evil and powerful. They carry out plans of death and destruction through spiritual attacks against human beings located all over the world. These attacks are almost always at night. They prefer to kill spiritually by a means we call remote control because their physical body is nowhere near the murder victim so that they can never be charged with a crime by the authorities. Their physical body remains at home. By traveling spiritually to a person's home, they enter in and kill the person spiritually without ever being seen physically. God hates this witchcraft spirit very much because of its destructive nature and because it violates His principle for man of a "free will."

Evil spirits need and must have a human in order to operate in this physical world. Think of it this way. You have to have a boat to operate on the sea or a plane to operate in the medium of the atmosphere. They must have a physical

body in order to operate in the physical world. The devil and demons can sit around all day and devise all sorts of clever schemes, but until they possess a physical body, the scheme cannot be carried out.

Therefore, whenever the spirit of witchcraft comes into a person, it is not long before other spirits also inhabit that person as well. I have never dealt with a person possessed with a spirit of witchcraft where that was the only spirit possessing that person. There are always many others. Normally, there are at least a dozen more and often legions. But more about possession later in the book.

The spirit of witchcraft was originally brought into the world through Cain and was greatly accelerated through Nimrod as he was possessed by the Power, Baal. The highest form of witchcraft is called Luciferic Witchcraft.

Witches and also wizards are usually called Agents of the devil. A person can be an Agent without taking the spirit of witchcraft, but usually they do. These Agents can be neophytes or else in the class of magicians. One of the main reasons the spirit of witchcraft is given to a person is to enable that person to “fly in the night.” There are those in the school of magicians who can travel to the spirit world in their physical bodies through the use of a *magic cloth*. Thus, they do not require the witchcraft spirit in order to travel spiritually. A former magician who used to travel to Los Angeles a lot reported to me that he could leave Nigeria and be in the United States in ten minutes (a speed of about 42,000 mph!).

A witch, wizard, or magician can also travel in the Astral world (Satan’s heaven) to the twelve planes above the earth where the Principalities and Powers reside. Their ability to travel there is according to their spiritual development and “power,” but they must travel through each plane in order to reach the next.

Once we understand the structure of these spiritual planes above the earth, I believe we can see why Gabriel told Daniel it took him twenty-one days to get

through with the answer to his prayers. The Principalities and Powers resist the angels of God in spiritual combat as they come to the earth from Heaven.

Not all witches or wizards can travel to all the planes or worlds. They must have the knowledge which they learn from spiritual masters who have preceded them in traveling to these worlds. Even then, they usually accompany an apprentice since they must have permission of the Powers or Principalities to travel to the planes occupied and ruled by them. If not, they can be severely harmed (made to go mad) or even killed. There is no mercy in the Dark Kingdom.

In Black Africa (the term many in West Africa use for West Africa), the witches are the most feared of all human beings. They are even feared more than God Almighty. This is because the people of these countries know that a person possessed with a spirit of witchcraft will only do evil, never good.

In Africa, the witches in a village or an area will form a group and work with a witchdoctor—sometimes called a *herbalist*—in that village. They do this for financial support to meet their physical needs. Here's how they operate. The black witches put sickness, barrenness or some other physical problem upon a person. The person is then encouraged to visit the witchdoctor for healing. The witchdoctor obtains a sum of money from them for a “cure.” He will then give a prescription for the cure. This will, of course, consist of idolatrous sacrifices and the use of herbs. The afflicted person is then miraculously healed. In reality what happens is that the witches remove the illness. The “cure” normally lasts for only 90 days after which a new malady is placed upon that person or perhaps another member of their family and the cycle repeats itself. But the witchdoctor has established himself as a healer and thus is also able to affect the people spiritually as he leads them further into idolatry and destruction and away from God. This process will continue until the witches destroy the person financially or else kill them.

Whenever the witches are angry with a person and wish to destroy him, they will place a spiritual *mark* upon the forehead of that person. This mark can only be seen in the spirit with *witch eyes*. Thus, no matter where the person

tries to go to escape, they can never get away. The witches in the new location will see the mark and begin fighting against that person until they destroy him. The only escape is for the person to accept Christ.

Once they are covered by the Blood of Jesus, they are sealed by the Holy Spirit as God's property and the witches cannot harm them unless they backslide or else do not pray much. This is an area where we have been lax—not being prayerful! We open ourselves up to attack by not being prayerful.

Whenever a witch, wizard or evil spirit looks at a Christian in the spirit realm, they always see the Christian clothed in a white garment. Regardless of your physical dress or even if you are naked, in the world of the spirit, you are clothed in white. We are made righteous and our garments are white by the Blood of the Lamb. Glory to God! White is of course the spiritual symbol for purity. We are pure in the eyes of God through the Blood.

Also, if the Christian is a person of prayer, they will have a shield of fire for protection around them. The more prayerful and free from sin you are, the greater will be the wall of fire around you. This fire is the fire and very presence of the Holy Spirit. God is a consuming fire. This fire is what members of the Dark Kingdom call the "Fire that consumes fire" meaning that the Fire of God is an all consuming fire. It will consume anything physical or spiritual with which they attack you, including themselves. If you are very prayerful, no evil spirit will come close to you for fear. I learned this from the Spirit who directed me to Zechariah 2:5 and have had it confirmed by former members of the Dark Kingdom.

“For I, saith the Lord, will be unto her a wall of fire
Round about, and will be the glory in the midst of her.”
♥ Zechariah 2:5

“Those who trust in the Lord are like Mount Zion,
Which cannot be moved, but abides forever. As the
Mountains surround Jerusalem, so the Lord surrounds

His people from this time forth and forever.”

♥ Psalms 125:1 NKJV

The meeting and operations of the witches normally takes place during the night between the hours of midnight and 6 A.M. They normally meet between midnight and 2 or 3 A.M. and then carry out their plans between 3 and 6 A.M.

Like all members of the Evil Gang, they prefer the night time for their activities. This is especially true for the witches because they can come to a person they want to torment and attack them while sleeping. Extensive details of their operations will be discussed in Chapter 17.

OTHER TYPES OF WITCHCRAFT

Witchcraft is an interesting subject because although all types of witchcraft throughout the world are part of the Dark Kingdom there are different forms in different cultures. But, basically, all witchcraft is designed to kill.

In the Philippines there are several types I've not encountered elsewhere. In the Visayas there is a type called Aswara Witchcraft. Through this spirit of witchcraft a person is able to separate their body at the waist into two separate parts and the upper portion of their body only “flies in the night.” This type witchcraft is designed to kill—those possessed with this spirit will mark a victim and eat their heart causing immediate death.

On the island of Siquijor, the seat of witchcraft for Southeast Asia, we also encountered the *Poison Touch* spirit of witchcraft which is used to kill. Such a person possessed with this spirit can touch somebody and through the evil spirit cause the victim's respiratory system to be paralyzed. The victim will turn blue all over, fall down and die within a matter of minutes. I learned that you can buy a small round vial of oil to wear as an amulet to protect you from these “poison touch people.” If you are wearing this on your body the oil will

begin to boil when a Poison Touch person is in your vicinity. However, these people seemed reticent to come near me in the marketplace due to fear.

Another type witchcraft practiced by Quack doctors there is a group referred to as "Bubble Men." These practice their trade to heal people like the Filipino faith healers you probably know about who actually can place their hands directly within the human body without making any incision. The "Bubble Men" utilize a bottle of water and through means of a straw they are able to remove tumors, etc., from a person and *blow* it into the bottle of water. I remember seeing a television documentary titled "John of God" about a man in South America who practices healing in a manner similar to that in the Philippines.

WIZARDS

Along with the witches, the Rulers of Darkness of this world are also composed of wizards. As with the witches, I have detailed interviews with many who served Satan as wizards. The man mentioned earlier as the Chairman of the Wizards, Joshua Balogun, was a wizard for forty-eight years; he was also a red witch. He was saved at a crusade in Nigeria when we were there in 1989.

Although some witches are males and some females, all wizards are males (N.O.W. and women's lib has not gotten into the spirit world!). Their function is similar to witches, however. They travel in the night and often command hordes of demons. They use magic and charms for their power—many are also magicians. They are promoted and given more responsibility according to how many people they can kill and how well they do in carrying out their assignments against Christians.

In looking for potential candidates for Rulers of Darkness, Satan looks for those already in authority over large numbers of people. He continually strives to win them over to his side by creating circumstances in their lives. He looks for those who are heads of political, social or religious

organizations. If such a person cannot be corrupted, then Satan will bring about the promotion of one already in the Dark Kingdom. They want to be promoted. He will make a deal with them.

Say, for example, I wanted to be President of the United States. I tell Satan I want to be President by the year 2016. He would say okay and draw up a contract. It would most likely read that I would have to bring him the souls of 5,000 humans by 2012. If I do not deliver, I do not get the promotion. If I do, then I would be President of the United States by 2016. There are many political, religious and social leaders throughout the world who are Rulers of Darkness. I know the names of many of them. My friends who used to work for Satan have made some interesting statements concerning politics. They say you cannot be a true Christian and be in politics. I must admit it is difficult. I don't think I want to be President anyway. I will settle for the prestige, executive pay, and glory of being a missionary to Africa.

In order to be promoted as a Ruler of Darkness, a person must bring the blood, heart or head of people whom that person has killed. I always laugh when Satanists or witches here in America claim they are not involved in human sacrifice. How could this be when one of the primary duties of all humans in the Dark Kingdom is bringing human blood to Satan? Promotion in the Dark Kingdom at high levels *always* involves the shedding of human blood. That person, if they fulfill their contract, is then given authority as a *Ruler* over a specific physical geographical location on the earth.

For example, a person fulfills his contract and brings the hearts of 500 people. He is promoted as the Ruler over the city of Madrid. Then later, as he continues to be faithful to Satan, he might ask to be promoted to Ruler over the Southern Kingdom of Satan. Another contract is drawn up and he must fulfill it by a certain date to be promoted.

Lest I leave the impression that all the person has to do is kill people, let me add that there is more to it than that. They would be involved in all sorts of other immoral schemes of the devil. Their primary goal is to attack the Church. They will work with the Principalities and Powers to accomplish this

goal. Much as a salesman over a territory has his sales manager come in to work with him, so a Ruler might ask a Power, Principality or even Satan himself to come into their territory and help accomplish a specific task.

The Rulers of Darkness are also very active in the laboratories of Satan in advancing his sciences against man. Their primary objective in this research is to discover the secrets of creation which God has hidden from them. They are hard at work developing new diseases in biological laboratories with which they will attack man. They are also engaged in developing things with which to attack us spiritually and keep us from progressing spiritually and drawing close to God. These laboratories are located under the physical sea, but are spiritual and thus not detectable by physical means. The devil has scientists, both demonic and human Agents, working with the Rulers to develop inventions which will allow him to exert more control over humans.

Satan has said that man “likes fancy and elegant things.” He said he will provide it so that man has no time for God. Through these material things, he will continue to control the world and make sure the Church is destroyed through sex, money and pleasure.

I believe you can see from these facts why God said for us to not love the things of this world. If you don’t, Satan cannot attack you in this area through his Rulers of Darkness.

Through their “creation science” they also wish to develop new native charms in order to cause further death and destruction. They are attempting to learn all the secrets of the world and creation to destroy man and to be like God.

Like the witches, the wizards are able to change forms. They do this in order to facilitate their work. They often choose the form of a bird, cat, rat, snake or a cockroach. The form chosen will be as the situation dictates. For example, a wizard may change into an owl to fly to your house if he intends to harm you. After arriving, he would then change into a cockroach to more easily enter your home. After entering the home, he would then turn into a cobra or black

mamba and bite you resulting in your death. He would then change forms back and return home. While their spirit is in another form, they still retain their human mind and powers. Thus if a wizard entered your home in the form of a snake, you would be unable to kill him physically because you would be “charmed” by his supernatural powers as a wizard.

However, if they die while in this form, it is their spirit which has died and their physical body left sleeping at home will die as well.

Wizards are also heavily involved in the propagation of false religion throughout the world. Joshua Balogun, in addition to being a wizard and a red witch, was also a Muslim Imam or holy man.

12

SPIRITUAL WICKEDNESS

**“For we wrestle not against flesh and blood,
But ... against Spiritual Wickedness in high
Places.” ♥ Ephesians 6:12**

Spiritual wickedness, as we know from the Bible, is attributed to all the spiritual forces commanded by Satan. More specifically in this case, however, spiritual wickedness in the heavenlies refers to two specific groups of evil spirits.

In contrast to the Rulers of Darkness who can be both human and spirit but are usually humans, these beings are all evil spirits. They are comprised of the servient spirits and the familiar spirits—sometimes referred to in the occult world as Phantom spirits. The servient spirits are so called because they “serve” the Principalities, Powers and Rulers of Darkness of this World. The familiar spirits are also servants, but one of their primary functions is to gather information about humans for the Dark Kingdom. They can also possess human beings and often work closely with the servient spirits to carry out the plans of their military commanders, normally the Powers. The familiar

spirits are the ones who are *spirit* children that inhabit the bodies of humans from the womb. We will discuss this later. In actual hierarchy, the familiar spirits are higher than the servient spirits because, like the Principalities and Powers, they are both celestial and terrestrial whereas most of the servient spirits the Holy Spirit showed me are confined to “grids”—specific geographical areas—upon the earth. That is why the spirits Jesus cast out of the demoniac of Gedara asked to go into the herd of hogs—they had to stay in that area and they did not want to be disembodied in that wilderness place.

The mission given to these spirits by Satan is very straightforward and uncomplicated—take the earth from man. But they often find themselves under the command of a human being who is a Ruler of Darkness and this causes conflict and friction in the Dark Kingdom. Because they vehemently hate human beings, they naturally detest working for and taking orders from one.

These lesser spirits are the ones who do the bidding of those above them in the Dark Kingdom. Often they grumble and complain when told to do something—their behavior is like that of a small child throwing a temper tantrum. They do not possess the intelligence or power of the higher members of the Dark Kingdom.

These spirits cause sickness, poverty, and even death within the human race. There are millions of these spirits operating on the earth and they are grouped according to their function. They cause lying, adultery, drunkenness, theft, wife beating, murder, and many other atrocities. Anything that you can think of that is detestable, they are the root cause. That is why it is very important to see *by the Spirit*—you have to be able to see with your spiritual eyes that there is a root cause in the spirit world for physical things such as disease, financial problems, drug use, divorce, etc. The ability of Satan to keep his kingdom hidden has fostered the idea, especially in the West, that physical science is the only way to solve problems. In addition, the inability of the Church to take her rightful place in the earth as the Body of Christ with all His authority and power has also contributed to this problem because only the Church has the spiritual authority to stop them and their evil schemes.

These spirits operate either through oppression or possession of an individual. They can be activated by the speech of the human being as well. For example, a person begins to say, “I’m getting the flu” after experiencing some symptoms these spirits have brought their way. As soon as the words are uttered, these spirits go into operation. This is one reason why your *confession* is important.

These spirits normally operate in at least five ways:

1. Disease – they operate to cause various sicknesses, even genetic defects, in the human race. They utilize the law of sin and death to attack humans.
2. Possession – they are controlled and sent by the higher demons to accomplish a specific task in the life of an individual such as causing cancer. They would work with other servient spirits to cause the cancer because they are “specialists.”
3. Affliction – these spirits cause continued problems for a person through marital strife, loss of a job, weakness of the body, dizziness, etc. They can bring on the sin of worry as they continue to afflict the person. Then that person is in jeopardy because, without faith, they are cut off from God’s help. Worry, dear friends, is doubt and it is sin (Ro. 14:23). Without faith, the Bible tells us, it is impossible to please God. God expects us to believe His word—what’s why He left it for us to understand and gain wisdom.
4. Habits – these spirits operate in the flesh to cause unholy habits such as smoking, drinking or drugs.
5. Death – the spirits causing death are sent to assist in bringing death to a person. They normally work with the spirits who cause disease to bring this about, but they also work regularly with the spirits of depression and suicide. By working in tandem, they bring a person to want to kill themselves. Whenever you have thoughts of suicide, know that these three spirits are oppressing you. Resist them in Jesus’ Name.

This is just a general discussion of the ways in which these spirits operate so you will understand them more clearly. A more detailed discussion of their actual operations of oppression and possession is given in Chapter 18.

Just like the Rulers of Darkness and every other Agent of the devil, whether human or spiritual, the main purpose of the Spiritual Wickedness is to fight Christians. Satan has given them implicit instructions not to fight the unbelievers. He said they are already his. He has told them to concentrate only on the real Christians and not the hypocrites or “church goers” as the Dark Kingdom often refers to those claiming to be Christians simply because they go to church but really they are not. They can tell the *real* born-again Christian by the Holy Spirit living within you and, as mentioned earlier, because you are always clothed in white in the spirit realm.

One of the main ways these Wicked Spirits operate is to keep man preoccupied so that he spends no time with God. They can also arrange inconvenient circumstances in your life when you set your mind to pray or seek God. They know, just as we do in the ministry, that a prayerless Christian is a powerless Christian. Consequently, they will do everything in their power to keep you from praying and spending quality time with God.

In conjunction with this, they will work to hinder your study of the Word since they know that Bible knowledge is harmful to them. If the Holy Spirit reveals something to you from the Word, they will set out to stop your putting that truth into practice—they want to hinder you from being a “doer of the word.” Thus we find them causing not only physical problems and sins such as adultery, but also spiritual sins such as pride, anger, hate and unforgiveness.

These Wicked Spirits love to see Christians fighting over doctrine. What difference does it make whether the rapture is pre, post or mid-tribulation? I am not going to argue about it, nor am I going to argue with those who disbelieve the rapture. If they are working for God and their lives are bearing good fruit, then I am for them and will be praying for them. Jesus did not say,

“By their interpretation of scripture you will know them.” He said, “By their fruit ye shall know them.”

Doctrine and interpretation of whether the Scripture says to baptize a person in the Name of the Father, Son and Holy Spirit or in the Name of Jesus only never saved, healed or spiritually matured anybody. It seems that the Church spends so much time arguing over doctrine and beliefs that are, when you get right down to it, irrelevant and unimportant. We should be able to see that this comes from the Dark Kingdom simply because it does not promote unity, but rather fragmentation.

The fact that we have difficulty agreeing on Bible interpretation is often, like things in the secular world, simply because we are human. We often see this in the secular world. A board of directors or a jury often cannot all agree on anything. That is why someone once remarked that the optimum size of a board of directors is 0.7 people. Some of the reasons for this are because of our inability to listen and communicate, but in the case of Bible interpretation and denominational theology, it is often the work of these spirits because they want to foster dissension and division within the Body of Christ.

These spirits—especially the familiar spirits—often travel in groups or “families.” These families in the case of the familiar spirits are usually three, nine, eighteen or thirty-one. Whenever a familiar spirit family member leaves the spirit world to inhabit a human body on the earth, the other members of the family will always ask, “When will you be returning to us?”

They nearly always work in groups and they know what you are doing twenty-four hours a day. That is how they are able to give information to a person who is a medium or channeler and fool people into thinking it is a relative. How else could the person speaking through the medium have that information if they are not, for example, really your mother? No! It’s a familiar spirit speaking through the medium bringing factual information designed to deceive you and take you to hell. This is how these spirits operate and they are good at what they do. They are specialists. We deal with many water spirits in Africa. Some of these demons that work with Leviathan and Marine include:

1. Orionta – this spirit is called the chameleon spirit. It is this spirit that gives a human the power to assume different physical forms.
2. Cyriel – this spirit is responsible for speaking in tongues and prophecy in the Dark Kingdom.
3. Jezebel – this spirit has the face and body of a woman, but only has one, large breast. It has sexual intercourse with humans in high authority to gain control over a nation. It also is one of the main spirits sent to destroy the ministry (office) of the Prophet, especially through fornication. We see it mentioned in the books of Revelation and Kings.
4. Ogeaso – this spirit transfers the Obanje spirits from Marine to human bodies, making them spirit-humans.
5. Djoko – this spirit cripples the human spirit by possession. I once encountered Djoko in a magical ring that could produce money.
6. Molech – he is mentioned in the Bible as the god of the Ammorites. We see him with Baal in Jeremiah 32:35. He likes to mock God by causing his worshippers to sacrifice their children through fire rituals.
7. Tinka – he can replace the human fetus with a snake. The woman—feeling the snake moving around in her abdomen—will be terrified and can be driven to suicide.
8. Arcarine – this demon is in operation all over the world causing both physical and spiritual blindness. It possesses a spiritual knife which it uses to spiritually blind people causing them not to see the truth of the Gospel.
9. Queen of the Coast – this spirit is a beautiful woman who has a mansion under the sea. She comes to the earth to enlist people for the Dark Kingdom and to promote sexual immorality among the ministry. She can, of course, assume the form of a man as well. We encounter her quite often in Nigeria, especially in the East.
10. The spirits of Islam – like North Africa, most of northern Nigeria is Islamic. The spirits of Majaro, Fregal, and Kabah work in tandem as a

triplet spirit to promote the Islamic faith. They work closely with Ashtaroth. Majaro is the Islamic demon of war and is behind the “holy war” or Jihad. Therefore, as we might expect, he also works with the Power Magog. Kabah is responsible for polygamy in Muslims.

These servient and familiar wicked spirits have extraordinary power, especially against the non-Christian or Christians involved in sin—an open door allowing the Dark Kingdom into your life. It is their operation and power, backed by the Principalities and Powers, that cause most of the problems in the human race.

A wizard possessed with chronic wizardry told me how he would send these spirits to fight women that he hated. He could say an incantation, call the woman’s name, and from that day forward she would menstruate continuously. The doctors were always baffled because no matter what they tried, they were never successful in stopping the flow of blood. When he told me this, I immediately thought of the woman in the Bible who had experienced a similar malady (Mk. 5:25ff) for eighteen years. I wonder if it, too, could have been caused by witchcraft.

This is just one example of the control these wicked spirits can exercise over our bodies. From this Bible testimony of the woman with the issue of blood and the information contained here, it is easy to see their power in causing sickness, misery and death in the human race. Only the Word of God and the Name of Jesus are powerful enough to stand up against these *Wicked Spirits in heavenly places*.

BOOK IV

OPERATIONS

OF THE

DARK KINGDOM

“For we are not ignorant of his devices.”

♥ 2 Corinthians 2:11

13

METHODS OF OPERATION IN THE DARK KINGDOM

In discussing the methods and operation of the Dark Kingdom, it is important to note the similarities between the works of Darkness and the works of the Kingdom of God.

The Church has realized for some time that the devil is a counterfeiter. He copies the things of the Spirit of God to make them look like the real thing. He was in the Lord's Kingdom for a long time, and it is the only pattern he has. This is why I am emphasizing over and over again the extreme importance of developing your spirit. Most Christians never develop much past infancy in the spirit.

Spiritual things are similar to physical things. Your physical body requires food for growth and your spiritual body also requires food. The food for your spiritual body is the Word of God. Most Christians never spend much time in the Word of God. And I am talking about sincere, good wonderful Christians here, not just carnal Christians. They're good people, but they depend on a church service one or two days a week for their spiritual nourishment. I believe in fasting and practice it often, but how long do you think I would live

if, my whole life, I only ate one meal a week? Yet, spiritually speaking, this is precisely what most of us have done.

You simply *must* develop yourself spiritually in these last days! You must be able to discern the true from the false and the Spirit of God from Paimon. Otherwise, you are in big trouble! I have been in some church services here in America where the false was taking place. I left, but others stayed not being able to discern, just relying on the pastor.

NEW WINE IN OLD WINESKINS

It should be emphasized here, however, that there should be a balance in the Church and in spiritual matters. While it is true that we must be able to tell the true from the false, Satan can and will use this fact against ministry.

Whenever God begins a new move of His Spirit across the world, He will be resisted not by the world, but by the church. This is especially true concerning the concepts on spiritual warfare and the power of the devil I am sharing in this book.

We have too many theologians and ministers who are so conscious of the devil and his counterfeits that they reject everything new in present truth that the Spirit is restoring to the Church. That is the history of the Church. You cannot put new wine into old wineskins as the Master told us. The old always resists the new. The Church resisted Martin Luther when he got the revelation of “justification by faith.” In more contemporary times, the old Church guard has resisted the move of the Spirit in restoring the Baptism of Power or the Baptism in the Holy Ghost as our Pentecostal friends call it.

Any new move of God is declared by many self-appointed and self-proclaimed protectors of the Christian faith as being from the devil. A good example of this is the Pentecostal experience of speaking in other tongues. Many ministers say it is from Satan and/or that it passed away with the early Church.

God does the Bible! That is all He does! He will not confirm the doctrines of men or the devil. And if it is in the Bible, which speaking in tongues is, then it is of God. You might say, "Yes, but the devil can speak in tongues." See, you are becoming more spirit conscious already. You are correct. I have seen this phenomenon on many occasions during ministry, especially deliverance services which we hold every Friday night at our ministry headquarters in Nigeria. There is also a tribe of people on the island of Mindanao in the Philippines that speak in tongues through Satan's power. That is why I emphasize knowing the real from the false. You can only tell the difference when your spirit man is developed the way God intends.

Let us grow up spiritually and recognize the true from the false. Otherwise, we have limited God's ability to communicate new or present truth. We will believe it is from Satan. We must recognize true heresy from the Word and not because somebody writes a book calling a minister or a genuine move of God heresy. There are many examples of this today. It would appear that most of these authors are spending so much time cranking out books that they have no time for God to even know what He *is* doing today. What is their motive? One thing is for certain, they are truly self-appointed protectors of the faith because God is not the author of confusion. Yet we must grow up spiritually and recognize true heresy. And you recognize it from the Bible, not from a book by some self-proclaimed champion of the faith who is out of spiritual order—God has a method for spiritual correction found in the Scriptures. It would appear to me that most of them have the following definition of a heretic: anyone who does not agree with my (their) way of thinking. I do not purchase their books. But I have had several given to me from people who wanted me to comment on the book. My comment is the Bible. Consider the following:

“Who are you to judge another’s servant? To his own Master he stands or falls. Indeed, he will be made to Stand, for God is able to make him stand.”

♥ Romans 14:4 NKJV

Do you think these authors are obeying this scripture? I am not talking about true heresy. If someone preaches or writes a book proclaiming that they have a new revelation and Jesus was not the Messiah, then that is heresy. It doesn't

agree with the Bible. But what has occurred today, is that many ministers have been called heretics simply because their views on eschatology do not agree with those of most evangelical Christians. For example, will the Church be raptured? If so, when? Just because someone does not believe in the rapture does not make them a heretic. I might add that I do believe in it, but I want to make a point. The doctrine of the rapture of the Church is not central to the Gospel. If it were, it would be more explicitly discussed in the Bible. I have minister friends who do not believe in the rapture, but I still fellowship with them and pray for them. And I certainly do not consider them to be heretics.

By the definition of many today, Martin Luther was certainly a heretic. John Wesley was labeled a heretic by the Anglican Church when God gave him the revelation of itinerant preaching. Do you know that this was his greatest contribution to the Christian faith and not the founding of the Methodist Church? Yet today we have lost the truth God restored through John Wesley. For the most part, the Church has returned to only preaching the Gospel in the church building.

Even our modern day concept of the office of the evangelist find them preaching almost exclusively in churches. How absurd! The primary ministry of the evangelist is salvation. This office has a powerful anointing to get people saved. You have to go where the unbelievers are to get them saved and they are not in the churches on Sunday. They are on the golf course or at the movie theatre.

We could go on and list other men of God who gained present or revealed truth from God that were branded heretics. But without their boldness to step forward, the Church would still be in the dark ages where I think some wish we were still mired.

But as pointed out earlier, if there is a counterfeit, then there must of necessity be the real thing. Our job is to recognize the difference. God is attempting to restore Truth to the Body of Christ each day. If we are fearful of this fact, we will miss the Truth. We will miss the Spirit of God through a spirit of fear.

The devil has two main purposes in counterfeiting the spiritual gifts of God:

1. To draw disciples to himself and the Dark Kingdom and thus take people to hell.
2. To take away from the true gifts and power of God so that He is not able to bless His people and bring His Kingdom upon the earth. His Kingdom will come. That is a fact. But Satan knows that the longer he can hinder God, the less time he will have to spend in the Lake of Fire.

It is an historical fact in the Church Age that any present truth is always persecuted by the ministry and what I term the *old guard*. This is surely the work of religious spirits. We look at the Pharisees, Sadducees and the Lawyers during the time of our Lord. We marvel at their unbelief as Jesus did and yet we do the same thing today. We in the ministry resist revealed (or re-revealed) Truth saying that there is nothing new. Everything has already been revealed. Yet any immature Christian knows better than this. One of the present day ministries of the Holy Spirit is to reveal the Truth to each of us. Do you spend any time with Him so He can reveal Truth to you?

REVELATION IS PROGRESSIVE

You should be gaining Truth every day of your life or you are not growing spiritually. You should be gaining revelation knowledge from the Bible every day. The Bible was not written so you could find out about salvation, get saved and proceed no further. Many in ministry today are afraid of the term *revelation knowledge*. I define it as *revealed absolute truth*. While we could say that there is in fact no *new* Truth, it is also accurate to say that there is much *new* Truth. Is this an enigma or a contradiction? Not at all! Truth is *new* to those who have not heard it before. This is the essence of revelation knowledge. God the Holy Spirit is constantly revealing (at least He is trying to do so) His Truth and Knowledge in light of the Scriptures to mankind as a whole and to each individual.

Philosophically speaking, we can say that all Truth we need at this time is revealed in the Word of God. Yet is it not also abundantly clear that this Truth is progressive in revelation? I think so. It would be difficult for me to teach Calculus to my nine-year-old daughter until she has learned the basic mathematical concepts. And if she never learned the basics, she would never be ready for Calculus. Would that mean that Calculus does not exist simply because she cannot grasp the concepts of it? If we apply this analogy to the Holy Spirit and the Word, you will get my point.

God is progressively revealing His Truth as we have it from the Bible. But just because you or I do not learn the basics does not mean He will wait until we do before going forward. The Holy Spirit loves each of us deeply. I call Him the Great Lover of Men's Souls. But if we do not develop ourselves spiritually, He cannot reveal Truth to us. Consequently, we have to mature and grow up spiritually in order to progress with God and move forward spiritually.

Spiritually speaking, you are either going forward or backward. There is no standing still. Most Christians are surprised to learn that you can't just read the Bible once and then never need to read it again. Most have never read it through even once. How can they grow spiritually? It is clear that they cannot. The Scripture says we progressively build our knowledge from the Bible:

“Whom shall he teach knowledge? And whom shall
He make to understand doctrine? Them that are weaned
From the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept
Must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon
Line; here a little, and there a little: ...” ♥ Isaiah 28:9-10

Have you been weaned from milk? We must be very careful that we don't let the devil steal the real inspired Truth which the Spirit of God wants to reveal today. In this regard, we should do what Rev. Kenneth Hagin used to say when he taught at our church—we should “have as much sense as an old cow.” A cow eats the hay out of a haystack, but leaves the sticks behind.

We should be more intelligent than a cow and do the same thing spiritually. Let us mature to the place God wants each of us to be spiritually. We should be able to understand the fact that God reveals His Truth progressively from the Bible. Apart from the Master, Solomon was the wisest man who ever lived, yet he knew nothing about the Church. The Church was a mystery hidden in Scripture.

The Apostle Paul, when he was Saul, was one of the most theologically trained men of his time, yet he discovered after his confrontation with Jesus on the Damascus road that he was in grave error—he was shocked to learn that he was actually fighting against God. And as a Christian Apostle, Paul had no equal among his contemporaries in revelation knowledge, yet he did not have the whole truth of God. There are probably many today in the Church who know more about God than Paul. You may think this is blasphemy, but the nature of God is to reveal Himself progressively to mankind.

On the contrary, we should all know more than Paul since we have what he knew to build upon. I hope that everyone I am training in ministry surpasses me in their knowledge of God. This has been one of the problems God has had with contemporary ministries. He gives them some knowledge or a gift and instead of using it for the Kingdom and His glory, they prostitute it. They draw attention to themselves through pride or because of money and seek to exploit the gift(s). And then they are finished with God. They may still go to Heaven, but their ministry is through! God will not share His glory and He demands absolute integrity from His ministers.

I believe it is clear that it is God's method to progressively reveal Himself and His Truth to us. We must mature spiritually in order to be able to accept further revealed Truth. Just like the mathematical example of Calculus given earlier. Many people, including theologians, quote Hebrews 1 as proof that God does *not* speak to us today or that He does not speak through prophets today.

“God, who at sundry times and in divers manners
Spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets,

Hath in these last days spoken unto us by His Son,
Whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom
Also he made the worlds;” ♥ Hebrews 1:1-2

Many interpret this scripture to mean that once God sent Jesus, He is no longer speaking to us and that He is no longer speaking through prophets. I do not believe this scripture says that at all. In fact I'm quite certain of it. On the contrary, if God is not speaking to you through the Holy Spirit, then you should be concerned about your sonship and whether you are truly in the family of God. If you're *not* expecting God to speak to you then there's really no reason to even read the Bible or to pray.

The Lord spoke to me about *revelation knowledge* in 1988 when the Jimmy Swaggart ministry was under siege and there was some discussion on Nightline and other programs about revelation knowledge and whether or not God speaks to people today. The Lord said to me, “I have more revelation knowledge to release to mankind than I have vessels prepared to receive it.”

No, God is still speaking today. The real question is not whether or not He is speaking. But rather the real question is, “Are we hearing what God is saying?” And you cannot hear from the Spirit of God while watching Days of Our Lives on television.

It is only as you yourself spend time with Him in prayer, meditation on the Word, and just waiting before Him that He can speak to you. Going to church or watching a service on television is not a substitute for this. You should do those in addition to your private prayer time with God. These things are spiritual exercises which you must do to develop yourself spiritually. God, as a Spirit Being, communicates with our spirits, not our minds. He wants to lead us into all Truth. But we have a part to play in hearing from God. He never forces Himself upon us.

We should note, however, that it is primarily the fear of the devil's work that has kept many from receiving the restoration of Truth God wants for the Body of Christ. Let me illustrate.

I was ordained into the ministry as a Southern Baptist pastor. I was taught that the Pentecostal experience of “speaking in tongues” had passed away. As a young minister and spiritually immature, I was too dumb to ask my spiritual elders for chapter and verse from the Bible that says this experience passed away—I simply took their word for it because they were my elders.

But often the real problem is that we fear what we do not understand. I have had many Christian friends today tell me that they have “been taught to be afraid of tongues.” Here we have a curious phenomenon, Christians are actually being taught to fear something scriptural. Why? Because we fear what we do not understand and *where* does the spirit of fear come from? Most people, even Christians, do not understand the extent to which they are *controlled* by the Dark Kingdom. No, if you can find it in the Bible, then study it for yourself.

There are many in ministry today who insist on everything being in the Bible or they don’t believe. For example, I have had some ministers reject some of the information presented here about the Dark Kingdom simply because it is not in the Bible. Yet they also reject tongues which is in the Bible. What twisted thinking!

Many say that speaking in tongues is of the devil. They are treading on thin ice where the unpardonable sin is concerned! And I might point out, that if speaking in tongues is of the devil, why don’t we see the manifestation of it outside the Church? Why don’t we see it in the bars, honky tonks, massage parlors, pornographic studios and in Hollywood movies? If this gift were really “of the devil,” would we not expect to see it in the places which he controls? Yes, of course.

And perhaps even more important a question is: why would Satan counterfeit this gift if it had already “passed away?” If he did not fear this gift, he would not be counterfeiting it today. That means the gift still exists to all who wish to receive and that is precisely what the Bible teaches in Acts 2:39.

By the same token, there is a counterfeit “gift of tongues” which is manifested by the servants of the devil. I have observed this manifestation in church services and deliverance ministry. But it was *always* manifested by a person who was heavily involved in the occult, Satan worship or witchcraft. I have *never* seen “tongues” manifested by a person who was merely a sinner outside the family of God.

I have ministered salvation to prostitutes and homosexuals here in America and never once did any of them speak in “tongues.” On the contrary, it has been my experience that this counterfeit “gift” is from the devil operating through his religious spirits to deceive the ministers of God and other Christians.

Generally speaking, when I have observed this counterfeit “gift,” it has nearly always been manifested by an Agent of the devil who was planted in a Pentecostal church. This “gift” of false tongues is obviously a ploy to deceive the church eldership into believing the person is a genuine Christian. These Agents are master “spiritual chameleons.” I have exposed ministers, deacons and elders in churches who were Agents of the devil but nobody in the church knew it. They had been deceived.

Never once have I seen it among true believers whose hearts and minds were right before God. The devil is very fearful of the true Gift of Tongues because it is a powerful gift of the Holy Spirit. We will see why he is so fearful later. Therefore, he seeks to discredit the True by making Christians fearful of it. I believe you can see by now how intelligent and cunning Satan is. I have great respect for his ability in spiritual warfare. But thanks to God, the Lord and the Church will soon crush his kingdom forever.

“And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under
Your feet shortly.” ♥ Romans 16:20

14

THE OPERATIONS OF SATAN

The devil has a very interesting kingdom and he rules it strictly by fear and intimidation. He often comes to the meetings of his kingdom in the form of a dragon breathing smoke and fire just to instill fear into the humans there. He gives the Principalities a lot of freedom because he is afraid of a coup by Them—the human beings in his kingdom, however, are ruled through fear and greed.

The devil himself rarely comes to earth. He presides over what is called the Transcendental Plane which is just above the twelve planes the Principalities and Powers dwell on in the heavens above the earth. From this Transcendental Plane, the devil is able to observe the whole earth. He also controls those humans under his command from there by controlling their minds. He possesses a spiritual satellite control system.

I do not yet know precisely how this giant satellite control system operates. Human beings cannot travel to the Transcendental Plane so no one has seen it or knows exactly the principles by which it works. What we do know is that somehow through this system, Satan is able to project thoughts and images into the minds of human beings. This is why even Christians sometimes find themselves thinking unholy thoughts. Satan is projecting those thoughts into your mind to make you sin. He will also flash pictures into our minds and we wonder, “Where did that thought come from?” But if you are a true Christian, he cannot control you through this satellite system. The Holy Spirit will

simply push his projected thoughts aside. Satan uses this satellite control system in two ways:

1. To control his human servants by controlling their minds. Ever wonder why somebody walks into a restaurant and shoots twenty people? This is one way Satan gets people to do it. He can also use direct possession which will be discussed later.
2. To attack Christians and the Church by mentally bombarding them under heavy spiritual attack and warfare. Thank God these types of attacks do not occur often and don't last too long or we would wear out. But you should be able to relate to this. When you are under heavy attack where your mind is being bombarded constantly with thoughts of immorality, suicide, or murder, you can be certain Satan has the satellite system focused in upon you!

Satan has told his followers that he will destroy the Church through:

1. Money
2. Power
3. Women

This was told to a minister friend of mine while in the Dark Kingdom. I am sure Satan meant sex and not just women because there are many more women in ministry these days.

Satan gives special spiritual television sets to his Agents. Through these special spiritual sets, they are able to watch the true Christians and the church-goers. Whenever they see a true Christian repent of sin, they always will pursue him to make him backslide again. If they are unable to make him backslide, they will attempt to make his boss terminate his employment so financial pressure can be exerted. If he is self-employed, they will work feverishly to bankrupt his business.

In Nigeria, many come to the devil desiring to open a church just to make money. He will give them special charms to attract people. However, the

“pastor” must agree to donate many souls from this church to the Dark Kingdom every year. This is always what Satan requires in payment—the lives and blood of human beings.

Should a man come to the devil requesting money, he would be given certain conditions to fulfill. He might be asked to donate a part of his body (you can see how this ties in with deliverance) or if he is married and has children, the life of a child is usually asked. Satan also always makes sure that the one who does the donating of the blood relative is the person who actually does the killing. I have a minister friend in Benin City, Nigeria, who saw fathers come in the spirit world and pour the blood of their own children into the blood banks. This is the true picture of Satan (and a human) at his lowest.

The primary ways by which the devil fights Christians are:

1. Causing sickness and disease.
2. Causing problems in the churches such as sleeping, confusion, fighting and backbiting.
3. Operating in the churches and on church members to make them ignorant of the Word.
4. Developing new *scientific* ways to take the minds of Christians off of God. Consider the fairly recent invention of video games as a prime example.
5. Developing fancy or flashy new things such as jewelry, cars, clothing, and boats. An evangelist who formerly traveled into the spirit realm daily informed me that he had seen an automobile that also flies being worked on there; it was being prepared for the use of armed robbers by the devil’s Agents.

The devil and his Agents know the true Christians very well. When they see you in the spirit realm, you always appear dressed in white no matter what your physical body is wearing. Also, there is a very bright light that shines continuously in the heart of a Christian and a wall of fire around us at all times (also see Zech. 2:5). Normally, there are two or three angels which accompany us at all times—one in the back and one on either side. This should be a great comfort to us.

However, the moment that you commit sin, the wall of fire goes down and you are open to an attack of the devil until you repent and are restored to fellowship with God. If the Church could only understand the awful nature of sin to a Holy God and also how it opens us up to attack by the Dark Kingdom, we would not commit the casual and premeditated sins we so often do. These sins have led many to an early death and are sometimes categorized under the term—cheap grace.

Sin is serious business with God. He sacrificed His Son because of it to rescue the human race. And although sin is serious to God, the devil is also serious about sin. He concentrates on how to make you commit it. Then he attacks you swiftly before you can regather your defenses. We all will sin, but knowing this fact should keep you from flagrant sins and make you quick to repent of sin.

Satan has a huge computer system and he possesses a complete dossier on you and your family tree. Many of the problems which plague mankind, such as alcoholism, which we believe to be genetic are not. However, knowing your family tree and how they *got* your great, great grandfather, will cause demons to operate the same way through a family for years, or even centuries if you let them, until that curse is broken and you cleanse your bloodline. More on this in the chapters on deliverance.

The devil has a nice, soft, air-conditioned cafeteria with a huge selection of sins for you to choose from and he will use it. You don't like lying? How about stealing? No, then here, choose adultery. He will plan, scheme and maneuver you around to where he has you if you do not stay full of the Spirit. That is why Jesus said the way to eternal life was "narrow" and few would find it. Most humans never get out of the cafeteria and meet Jesus. They just die and go to hell. But his cafeteria is also available to Christians and this is our emphasis in this book.

Let me illustrate with one testimony. An evangelist friend of mine who was formerly a wizard and Chairman of all the Wizards took orders from Satan

whom he met with three times a week. The following was conveyed to me by him as an example of what Satan would ask him to do to attack a church:

“Our first tactic would be to send one or two beautiful female agents into the church. Many would even come forward and pretend to get saved in order to win the confidence of the pastor. They would then attempt to entice him into committing sexual immorality so that the anointing of God would wain from his life. This might take some time, but we were in no hurry. If this tactic was unsuccessful after sending several beautiful young women there, we would use the servient spirits and try to get him to commit another sin such as theft of the church money. In order to get him to commit a sin like this, we would first have to attack his personal finances, otherwise he would never think of doing such a thing. If all of these failed, we would attempt to kill him physically.”

At the same time they are attacking the church leadership, they are doing the same thing to members of the congregation. By attacking your finances, for example, Satan can destroy the church because he knows most Christians stop giving when the pressure is on.

If he can get enough church members into financial difficulty, the church will fail or the pastor will become disillusioned with God. No! Don’t become disillusioned with God! Just get busy in spiritual warfare and you will be victorious!

One of their favorite tactics against members of the congregation is to encourage them to mix magic with Christianity. They use this tactic very effectively in West Africa. Once a Christian becomes involved in magic, they will leave the church. Satan uses this tactic in the West too. He will encourage you to read your horoscope, to see a fortune teller, or something else.

Satan normally works with his Rulers of Darkness by giving them power, position and wealth. When they reach a level where they are promotable to a Ruler of Darkness, they are asked to sign a contract with Satan. These contracts are ratified in one of four ways:

1. Having sex with the devil.
2. Sharing a meal with him.
3. Drinking human blood with him.
4. Dancing with him to his music.

I have talked with several former members of the Dark Kingdom who shared a meal with Satan at the graveyard. Evil spirits like to frequent the graveyard. In all cases, those who have eaten with Satan said the ground opened up and they walked down some steps into the underground spirit world.

The devil likes to copy God so he prefers to work by covenant with all who serve him from the human race. He likes for humans to drink blood with him because it is his version of what Christ did,

“Then Jesus said unto them, ‘Verily, verily, I say unto You. Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and Drink his blood, ye have no life in you. Whoso eateth My flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and I will Raise him up at the last day. For my flesh is meat Indeed, and my blood is drink indeed. He that eateth My flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.’”

♥ John 6:53-56

Because the primary objective of the devil in the earth today is to wage war against the Christians, especially those in Five-fold ministry, it should come as no surprise to you that when you become a Christian, you will encounter severe opposition. This is why many “fall away” as the Bible tells us in the parable of the sower. Based on my experience, however, I believe there is a honeymoon period when a person is not attacked after receiving Christ. I do not know if this will continue until Christ returns, but it appears that God places an absolute hedge around new, baby Christians until such a time as they can become grounded in the faith. If they do not become grounded, however, or drift back into old, fleshly habits, then they are subject to the devil’s attacks.

However, after gaining some maturity, God allows the devil to attack. I believe this is so our faith can be strengthened. Your faith is like a physical muscle, if you don't use it, atrophy will set in and it will become useless. It is only through adversity that we are able to strengthen our faith and dependence on the living God who promised,

“I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee.”

♥ Hebrews 13:5

Unless you are a new, baby Christian, every time you make a *quality decision* for the Lord, the devil will attack you. His purpose is to get you to change your mind. Then he will heap guilt upon you for failing God. When we analyze this behavior on the part of the devil, we come to realize one very important fact for every Christian to know. Despite all his power, the devil is afraid of you! The stronger you become in spirit, the weaker his kingdom becomes. It's as simple as that. Also, he knows if he can stop you, the blessings of God will be cut off from you to any great degree, thus further strengthening his kingdom. If you are not available to work for God by passing out tracts, casting out devils, giving to the poor, or preaching, then the devil's kingdom is advancing while God's does not. The devil knows that God will bless you whenever you make a quality decision to do something for the Kingdom of God. And he especially wants to stop the spiritual blessings of God from coming to you because he knows we have all the power and authority of Jesus and the complete Kingdom of God at our disposal. We just are not using it. If Satan can stop you now, you will never mature to the point of being much of a threat to him in spiritual warfare.

The devil is a master of spiritual warfare. He knows the rules and he knows how to win. But we know how to win also and it's spelled P-E-R-S-E-V-E-R-A-N-C-E. You will never do much for the Lord without perseverance. That is why each decision you make for God must be a *quality decision*. Those are the only kind that count in spiritual warfare.

Let me illustrate how he accuses us before God and conducts spiritual warfare against us. I was preaching at a church convention in West Africa when, on a Saturday night, the minister who was supposed to preach did not show up for

the service due to illness. The pastor asked me to preach on tithing and giving. Although I had not prepared notes, I began to preach on the subject trusting the Holy Spirit to bring out the message and scriptures He wanted communicated that night. As I was discussing Malachi 3:10-11, all of a sudden under inspiration I saw a vision of the devil coming before God and saying to Him, “This person is not a tither and therefore I have a right to attack their finances.”

This experience shows how the devil uses the Word of God to attack Christians. It also shows another reason why it is important to study and meditate in the Bible to get your mind aligned with God. I believe it also shows why many Christians stay in financial difficulty because it is a statistical fact according to the latest Gallup Poll that only about 3.6% of Christians actually tithe; this has declined from around 10% when the first version of this book was published in 1991. It seems so insignificant, yet when you are out of covenant with God you are open to attack from Satan. One of our responsibilities under the New Covenant is to tithe to the Kingdom. If you’re having financial difficulty, then you should check up on whether you are a tither.

In his operations, the devil works both directly and indirectly in the affairs of the world. Because he is subtle and prefers to use trickery and deceit, he likes to interact indirectly using spirit or human servants.

But you can defeat the devil in spiritual combat. Remember, the devil is afraid of you once you know your authority and your weapons. Years ago the Holy Spirit spoke something to me in a moment of prayer. It will illustrate my point in the words of the Lord. The Holy Spirit said,

“When the man (or woman) of God comes on the scene, the strong man trembles.” That “strong man” is the devil, my brother and sister. He trembles when you come on the scene. He is afraid of you. So make a resolution this day to learn your authority as a Christian and then use it in spiritual warfare against Satan, the weak “strong man.”

15

OPERATION OF THE PRINCIPALITIES

**“The sorrows of death compassed me, and the
Floods of Belial made me afraid.”**

♥ Psalm 18:4

The Principalities receive their orders directly from Satan. They then pass down these orders to the Powers and to the Rulers of Darkness who coordinate their activities with the Wicked Spirits and Agents to carry out the missions.

The Principalities serve Satan, yet, in a sense as we have already discussed, they are almost autonomous because they are so wicked and powerful.

Like Satan, their only ambition is to steal, kill and to destroy. They devote the majority of their time to combat against Christians—they are Satan’s generals.

In addition to working with the Powers and Rulers of Darkness, each of these Principalities controls approximately 50,000 demons who have a staff

function. They will be sent directly on errands of destruction. As supernatural spirit beings, the Principalities occupy the second heaven above the earth with Satan. They dwell on the four planes directly below the Transcendental Plane of Satan.

In addition to what has already been discussed, the primary operations of the Principalities are as follows:

I. APOLLYON

He is a huge, clad demon draped in iron and terrible in appearance. His primary work is to keep human beings from serving God. As such, he resists the true worship of God the Father, Son and Holy Spirit. He is very active in promoting false religion.

He is one of the main spirits in operation upon the earth today because we have never had a time in the history of the world when there were more false religions. He has special servient spirits who are specialists in promoting false religion and worship—we call these particular spirits *religious spirits* because they exhibit all the characteristics of a *particular* religion, even Christianity. I have cast the religious spirit out of many Christians. It's the only spirit that calls on the Name of Jesus for help while you're casting it out.

Appollyon is also responsible for causing church splits over doctrine, as well as introducing false doctrine into the churches. He is primarily responsible for introducing the “doctrines of demons” mentioned by Paul in I Timothy 4:1.

Another area he works hard in is commitment. He seeks to prevent Christians from becoming committed to their church or to the work of God. He works subtly in this area and we have not recognized him at work. If you pastor a church and you are having difficulty getting your people committed to the vision God has given you, then you can be sure Apollyon is at work in your church! And if you don't enter into spiritual warfare against him, he will

destroy your church. That means you had better pray against him, binding him by name.

He also seeks to prevent financial commitment or support. He works closely with Mammon in this area. He will especially attempt to stir up strife in the local church so people will become too disgruntled to give. For example, he will mobilize the busybodies in your church to gossip. “The pastor’s got a new car.” “Yes, and did you hear that the pastor’s wife just bought a silk dress?” “Bless God, they don’t need my money, then.”

Apollyon is also actively at work sending demons against Christians to keep them spiritually dry and prayerless. He fosters the sins of spiritual pride and criticism within the Body of Christ; he knows full well that the Spirit of God cannot work much where there is a lack of unity and where there is pride. Ministers, don’t ever forget this, he is the *number one* head demon you fight every day. You had better learn to pray against him using his name and the Name of Jesus.

Have you ever wondered why there is so much argument in the ministry over insignificant things? You might answer, “Jealousy, pride, arrogance, and stupidity.” The answer is Apollyon—he is behind all of them. His name means eternal destruction and you had better believe that is exactly what he has in mind for you, your family and your ministry if you don’t engage him with the Holy Spirit in spiritual combat!

He is seeking any means possible to cause a spirit of disunity within the Body of Christ and the local churches while raising up false churches to sow confusion into the Body of Christ.

Apollyon works very closely with the two Powers of Baal and Ashtaroth. These two Powers each control about 20,000 demons. So among the three of them, they have at their instant disposal about fifty legions (100,000) of demon angels. Apollyon is a very difficult adversary.

II. ABADDON

The chief goal of this Principality is to pollute the human race, especially Christians. His purpose is to make them unholy and thus unable to stand before God. Once this goal is achieved, that Christian is virtually powerless since they are cut off from God and having their prayers answered.

Consequently, this Principality also seeks to keep a person from repenting once they fall into sin and are out of fellowship with God. And, by blaming God or some other person for the situation, Abaddon can keep one in a state of perpetual unrepentance such that the person cannot receive from God. A Christian who cannot receive from God not only has no power, but also is not in any way a threat to the government of the Dark Kingdom. They have effectively been spiritually neutered.

Abaddon works with Satan to promote filthiness of thought and action. He is the one primarily responsible for the bad habits which Christians have a hard time disposing of in their lives. He is responsible for adultery, fornication, incest, homosexuality, bestiality and pornography. He is responsible for other forms of sexual depravity as well, such as pedophilia which is greatly on the rise in the Western world.

This Principality also is the one most responsible for alcoholism. He wants to break down the ability of the person to control their own mind. Then they are an easy target for control by other members of the Dark Kingdom. He uses drugs and sex in a similar manner. A person engaged in such behavior not only is unclean before God, but their mind is being kept from even thinking about God as Abaddon sends the demons of lust to possess that person. Such a person may become totally possessed by a spirit of lust seeking only sex (nymphomania), liquor (alcoholism) or drugs (cocaine, heroine). Such a person is totally controlled by Abaddon to do his bidding. Being totally consumed with their habit, such a person cannot even think about God for a moment. Naturally he would like to enslave them to more than one habit if at all possible. We see examples of this in Rock Music and drugs, prostitution and drugs, etc.

Like Apollyon, he controls and directly supervises about 50,000 evil spirits whom he sends on errands of “no mercy.” He works primarily with the Powers of Asmodee and Mammon.

Through his work with Mammon, he controls the whole world through the financial markets, sex and greed. He is responsible for the “back stabbing” attitude prevalent in many companies and the “dog eat dog” attitude of people. This attitude and behavior is gradually coming into the Church as well.

Adaddon also likes to work on Christians to make them dissatisfied with their possessions, job, or spouse. Thus they become more materialistic in their outlook which is contrary to the spiritual principles we have learned from the Lord Jesus and the Holy Spirit.

“If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things
Which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right
Hand of God. Set your affection on things above, not
On things on the earth.” ♥ Colossians 3:1-2

Whenever we violate this principle, we get into trouble. Abaddon knows that and is seeking to keep our thoughts and actions in the physical realm away from spiritual things and God. And by keeping Christians spending money on things they don’t need, he can work with Mammon to keep you on the treadmill of “climbing the corporate ladder” with all of its ungodly ramifications. As the cycle progresses, you find that you have less and less time for God and your family. In ten years, you come home one day and your wife has taken the kids and left you divorce papers. Next, you begin to drink, and then are fired as you drift into alcoholism. If this scenario fits your lifestyle or that of someone you know, stop Abaddon now! Just get one thing straight forever as a Christian. You will never get anywhere until you can learn to say no to the devil and Abaddon.

Abaddon is also the one most responsible for other lusts of the flesh such as gluttony. The major tools of humans that he uses are the stomach and the sex organs.

Like Satan and the other evil spirits, and contrary to what we have been taught by the Church, he cannot make you do anything. These spirits all pride themselves that humans willingly serve them. They never force a person against his will. They will, however, put pressure on you to willingly go along. That is why it is a good idea to obey the scripture which says to “flee temptation.” That’s what Joseph did. If you give in to a particular sin, then immediately repent. If you do not, Abaddon will build up a stronghold in your life with that sin and you will require deliverance ministry to be set free.

In order to prevent the works of hell Abaddon wants to bring your way, you must make a quality decision to follow God and live a clean life. Whenever you sin, repent and ask God’s forgiveness as soon as possible so you can remain in fellowship with Him. It is only as Abaddon can separate the branches from the Vine that he can wage successful spiritual warfare against us. See John 15:5.

Also, since your body is the Temple of the Holy Spirit (if you are a Christian), you must attempt to live as clean a life as possible so that you will be a vessel which is fit for the Master’s use.

III. BELIAL

This Principality is in charge of all occultic and magical arts. He is also the main one we see behind the practice of metaphysics in the world.

Belial is the spirit who heads up all of the mystic schools and lodges such as the Rosicrucians, Masons, Shriners, Reformed Ogboni Society, *et al.* There are literally thousands of secret societies throughout the world. A friend in Africa told me that his father, from whom he learned all of his occult magic,

was a member of over one thousand secret societies. Being free to travel in the spirit, they can belong to every one in the world.

Belial is the spirit behind all of the false prophetic churches that we see in West Africa. They are called White Garment churches and they rely on Belial, Paimon and others to assist their growth. Satan and Belial are good buddies. And they know man's affinity for the supernatural. This is perhaps the biggest battle we face in our churches in Africa. Because the devil's Agents are in all the churches, they are constantly approaching members with statements like, "Sister if you need a job, go see this man. Give him 100 Naira (100 Nigerian dollars) and he will give you some water to drink. After you drink it, you will be able to get a job." It sounds mighty tempting when you're sitting in the church broke without a job. Once a Christian gets involved in magic, they will usually leave the church. We are seeing Agents of the devil more and more in Western churches now as well because the power of Satan and the occult has become stronger in nations such as our own. This is because as the Holy Spirit leaves a battle area the devil comes in and occupies more territory.

Belial is the one who opens up the future to the fortune tellers, soothsayers, and astrologers. He is the Principality behind Pharaoh's magicians who stood against Moses. Please notice that the Bible says these magicians *did* perform many of the same miracles which Moses did by God's power. Or do you not believe the Bible? How could they do this if they had no power? Was it an illusion? Hardly! They performed miracles through Belial and the assistance of the Dark Kingdom. Most theologians have no idea how advanced the Egyptians were in the cults of the Dark Kingdom. He encourages people to practice both magic and yoga with their religion. He often works with Paimon, Ariton, Marine and Leviathan to promote this evil agenda.

Belial is also the spirit responsible for intellectualism in religion. He will deceive people into believing a lie on the basis of how great it sounds to their intellect, *e.g.*, reincarnation. He is very cunning and good at this tactic. Belial is almost as cunning and as great a deceiver as Satan himself.

The best protection against his evil operation in your life is through prayer, praise, worship and faith. You must stay close to the LORD and mature spiritually to keep from being deceived. Ask the Holy Spirit to grant you the gift of *discerning of spirits* (cf. 1 Cor. 12) so you will be able to detect people with the wrong spirit and/or motive, even those in the ministry.

IV. THE BEAST

This Principality, as we well know from Scripture, will terrorize the earth during the last days before the LORD returns to establish the millennial kingdom.

He will come forth as a great master of deception in two areas:

- (1) Ecclesiastical System – he will set up a religious system upon the earth for demonic worship. Those who refuse to worship him will be killed. This ecclesiastical system is already being set up around the world. From this as well as Bible prophecy, we know that the time of his appearance is near.
- (2) Governmental or Political System – He will use the Antichrist to organize a ten-nation confederate force with which to attack Jerusalem. He will govern politically by controlling the world's money and food supply.

The number of the Beast is 666. He can appear in 666 different forms. Those who have seen him say that he is a red, fat man sitting upon a throne. His symbol is the leopard which is a prominent symbol in Bible prophecy, also being the symbol for Greece. Please study Daniel 7 in addition to Revelation.

16

OPERATION OF THE POWERS

The operation and function of the Powers is similar to that of the Principalities. They work very closely together. The main function of the Powers is to carry out the orders of their Commander-in-Chief, Satan, and the Principalities. They are field generals and executive officers for the Dark Kingdom.

Like the Principalities, the Powers each have their own areas of expertise. They will often work in conjunction with one another to bring about some evil mission or goal, but they are also *specialists* in their own individual areas. These areas include: false religion, deception, control of the finances in our world, sexual depravity, pollution of mankind through drugs, propagation of magic and the occult, and other evils.

Much of the specific activities of each of the eight Powers has been covered elsewhere in this book. However, it should be emphasized that their main function is to reinforce the lower spirits and give them more power in carrying out their assignments against the Church and Christians.

These spirits come to the earth much more regularly than either Satan, who seldom comes, or the Principalities. They occupy and control the eight planes in the heavens just above the earth. These spiritual planes are not flat, but

round like our world (they encircle the earth as concentric, circular planes). They rule over their own little world there in the heavenlies.

Those from the earth—both spirits and humans—travel to these spiritual planes when they require assistance from a Power. The Powers can also be summoned to the earth by certain incantations invoked by humans. Many humans travel to the spiritual planes each night in search of power and wealth. To those humans seeking gifts, the Powers will grant their desires according to what they are willing to give in return. Normally, the gifts they must bring are: the blood of a relative, a part of their body, or perhaps the successful completion of a certain evil mission. It should be emphasized that the price is usually a steep one, e.g., the life of your wife, child or perhaps your own eyesight.

In our deliverance ministry, we often run into persons wanting a miracle, such as the restoration of their legs if they are crippled. Upon working with the person, we often find that the reason they are crippled or blind is due to covenants they or a member of their family previously made with Satan. Consequently, they will never be healed without deliverance ministry. God respects covenants. They must confess and renounce their covenants with Satan before God will heal them.

I believe this is the single greatest reason why more are not healed during healing or miracle worship services in Africa. Those seeking God will, of course, be delivered. But those coming just for healing or a miracle will not receive it unless their heart is right before God. In the culture of West African nations, there are many, even pastors, who try to walk with the Kingdom of God and the Dark Kingdom. It will not work. You cannot seek the gift apart from the Giver.

Every night of the year, the spirit world above the earth is filled with teeming millions of beings in transit to and from the earth. These beings are traveling to the spirit planes primarily to obtain wealth or power. These spiritual planes contain roads, cities, and traffic just like on the physical earth. This traffic is similar to what one might encounter in a large city such as New York or Los

Angeles during rush-hour traffic. The spiritual planes closest to the earth are the most populated since they require the least *spiritual development* to attain.

In addition to controlling these spiritual planes or worlds, another function of the Powers is to reinforce the lesser spirits in their activities. We learned this through deliverance ministry and have verified it through interviews with former Rulers of Darkness.

Whenever a human who is possessed or oppressed by spirits goes for help to a church or deliverance ministry, the spirits involved in the life of that person may call on the Powers for reinforcement. Both familiar and servient spirits may call for the Powers or even a Principality for reinforcement. This makes the deliverance case that much more difficult to deal with—more fasting and prayer is required.

This reinforcement can also be requested when the spirits and humans are fighting against Christians. We experience this especially during evangelistic crusades. Here is an example given by Evangelist Omoobajesu when he was a powerful witch doctor sent by Satan to kill an evangelist using a magical stick he possessed:

“The black stick was deadly and most dangerous in operation. Its only purpose and use is for destroying things and people. For example, if a person offends you and you point the stick at his building after saying certain conjurations and you ask the building to collapse; no matter how deep or solid its foundations and regardless of whatever material it was built with, the building would collapse immediately. Also if you quarrel with a person, and you point it at him, no matter what charms he is putting on for protection, he would fall down and die instantly. I used the stick to do many damages before the power in the BLOOD of Jesus Christ consumed the satanic stick.

“So, on the third day of the Revival meetings, I took my stick and headed for the crusade ground in the evening. Before I got there, the place was packed to full capacity. I forced my way through the thick crowd to the very front of the

platform where I could face the evangelist directly. I waited patiently for an opportunity to attack him ... This was the moment I had been waiting for. I waited till I was quite sure no one was looking at me. Then I brought out my demonic black stick. Looking straight into the preacher's face, I pointed the stick at him and commanded that he should fall down dead. But what happened?

"The rod developed temperature instantly, becoming very hot in my hand as if it were an iron rod kept inside fire for a long period. It burned my hand severely. So, I threw it away and there was a big spark from it. The demon in charge of the stick fled out and with him came very loud vibrating noises as he escaped from the crusade ground ... Brethren, this was the first time the stick encountered Jesus Christ and it got totally consumed by the Consuming Fire – (Hebrews 12 v 29). Nothing happened to the evangelist ..."³

This is an example of the Power of God opposed to the power of the devil and his workers. The power behind the black stick was not reinforced because they did not have the power to do so.

Here is another example of their operations and work together with other members, including human, of the Dark Kingdom:

"Revival! Revival! Revival! The blind see; the lame walk; the deaf hear; the dead are raised and we have the gospel preached to the poor." I read this inscription and laughed like a mad-man. I wondered and said, '...Why is he campaigning about raising the dead when after all I used to raise up the dead in invocation at any time while performing magical shows? He is not printing leaflets that he can raise the dead ...'

"To begin with, I ordered some demonic sprits to stand on guard around me, and ensure that nobody passes through the area. I told them I wanted to 'work' on the evangelist, and I started the 'work' right away. I called a

³ Ibid, pp. 16-17

demonic spirit known as Jehoholahi, who is in charge of fire in the kingdom of Satan. It is this demonic spirit that fire-eaters and Sango worshippers who carry fire have to appease before they perform. From him, they obtain the power to overcome any earthly fire. But know surely that the fire from heaven has no antidote. I told this demon, ‘Go to the midst of those people and cause any of their electrical appliances to spark fire. Or let the live wires of the lightings touch. Do anything you can to cause a big fire, so that some people will get burnt and hurt.’

“Go forward, I commanded. He took three steps forward and then he stopped. ‘What’s wrong?’ I asked. He replied that he couldn’t proceed any further than that. ‘Why?’ I asked again. He then called me to come and “see.” So, I too moved forward to ‘look’. (However, it’s not with the natural eyes.) He asked me what it was that I could see and I replied it was fire. He then said, ‘That Fire, is the Fire that consumes fire.’ (Actually, the fire was like the fire of an ordinary furnace and it encircled the whole congregation then extending for several metres in diameter. The flames went skywards indefinitely.) So, this demon told me that he could not go. I rebuked him saying, ‘But you are fire yourself, why are you afraid of fire?’ He said, ‘It is not like that,’ and he repeated his earlier assertion. ‘That Fire you are looking at, is the Fire that consumes fires.’ I shouted at him and gave him licence to depart. Immediately, I called another demon to carry out the assignment, but he responded with a question. He asked, ‘You had sent someone who couldn’t go, how can I go?’ I sent him away also. Then, I called the fourth of the superior spirits in the government of Satan, whose name is Belial.”⁴

As you can see from this true life testimony, the Powers and Principalities can be summoned to assist in devilish activity and to reinforce lesser spirits with less power.

We have found from our own experience that these superior spirits must be bound during deliverance ministry in order to obtain meaningful results. One must deal with the higher Powers and bind them as well as the spirits in operation within the mind or emotions of the person receiving ministry or

⁴ Ibid, p.68

they will not be set free. This is why it is important to know the names of the Principalities and Powers so one can specifically bind them by name to stop their operations. Let me illustrate why this is important.

You may have heard those in ministry say, “I bind you Satan, in the Name of Jesus. I command you to cease and desist in your activities in the life of so and so.” That is good to do. But you must realize that you have only bound Satan! What about Belial, Baal, Ashtaroth, Apollyon and the others? They are still free to work as they have not been bound. Binding only Satan does not bind the whole Dark Kingdom. This should be obvious to us from our experiences, but perhaps it has not been. When you say something such as, “Satan, I bind you in the area of my finances,” how long has this been successful? About fifteen minutes.

What happens spiritually is this. A person comes forward for deliverance ministry and they are placed in deliverance if their problem is something we know, based on experience, will take some time. If it is a simple problem, dealing with what I call *casual spirits*, our deliverance team will deal with the problem then and there. Often, however, this is not the case.

Most severe problems such as homosexuality (not much of this in Africa), satanism, occultic involvement, sexual immorality, alcoholism, insanity and others will take some time. Normally, these problems will take from three days to over a year to completely free the person.

In these cases which require some time, when we begin the initial deliverance ministry, the person being ministered to will often become violent and try to get away or else attack those ministers on the deliverance team. That person was perfectly calm the moment before and now they are a raging storm! Just seconds ago they were in complete control of their faculties asking to be delivered and now they are fighting savagely like a wounded cougar. What has occurred?

When we begin to deal with the servient spirits that are possessing a person, they call for reinforcements in the spirit world. They do not want to leave the body. Many times they have been in that body for decades and the longer they have been there, the harder they are to dislodge. They will not go peacefully without a vicious fight. Consequently, they call upon the Powers for reinforcement and maybe even the Principalities or Satan himself. At this point, it is important to attempt to discover which of the Powers and/or Principalities are involved so that they can be bound through the prayer of binding and loosing found in Matthew 18. May I emphasize again, they must be bound by name.

If, as is commonly the case in most deliverance ministries where they do not know how to obtain this information and indeed may not even know that it should be done, the person *may* still be delivered, but it may take ten times as long to deal effectively with the spirits. However, my overall experience is that the proper function of deliverance ministry is not well known in the Western world.

Spiritually speaking, the longer the person has been bound with a particular problem, e.g., lust, the more difficult they are to extricate because the Dark Kingdom does not want to give up the use of this vessel. This is the reason they fight.

As previously mentioned, they must have human beings in order to function in the physical world. And once they have someone they have used effectively, they will not give up that person unless they are made to do so. And you had better know what you are doing or you are in serious trouble. We will discuss this at greater length in the section on deliverance.

The Powers are often directly involved in the carrying out of assignments passed down from Satan. For example, he may tell Beelzebub to pass the order that he wants 260,000 people killed next month. The order is passed down the chain of command and the plans are laid to kill this many people. Their blood will then be taken to the blood banks in the spirit world. The Powers will work with the Rulers of Darkness and servient and familiar spirits

(Wicked Spirits) to carry out the plan. This is particularly true if the task involves massive loss of life such as a bombing, an earthquake or a war.

So, we can very definitely see the hand and work of the Powers in our world every day. Most of what we think are “accidents” are no such thing. There is not an accident. There was a plan carefully carried out by the Powers to cause untold human destruction and desolation. In fact, they are able to cause “accidents” not just through physical or mechanical means but also spiritually as well. For example, they might place a spiritual “boulder” in the path of a train, automobile or bus causing wreckage and loss of life. Then the red witches show up to suck the blood of the dying victims.

It's also clearly seen that often their work is in a certain area. We should notice this and realize that it is part of a larger plan. For example, you might note in our own country the numerous shootings on university campuses the past few years. This is not a mere coincidence but a plan of the enemy to not only take lives but also instill fear into the hearts of both the students and their families. Once the spirit of fear is present it will bring other spirits in with it as well. If you're a Christian and notice these things it should not trouble you except to pray for the unsaved in these schools but you should have perfect peace about your own children who are students if you are prayerful and pray protection over your own.

This, then, is the primary function of the Powers—to use their tremendous spiritual powers to assist the Rulers of Darkness and Wicked Spirits in carrying out the assigned duties of killing, stealing, destroying and harming.

Remember, these Powers were formerly mighty angels and they have great powers. By working together, they are able to mount a continuous assault against a Christian. These assaults will become more frequent in these last days. Indeed, it often seems that the attack is never over. It is only by using your spiritual weapons that you will be able to stand against these “wiles of the devil” and be victorious against the operations of the Powers.

17

OPERATIONS OF THE RULERS OF DARKNESS

These evil spirit and human beings are called the Rulers of Darkness because it is during the hours of darkness that they “rule.” During the hours of 11 P.M. to 6 A.M., the operations of the witches and wizards take place around the world.

The witches and wizards are all human beings, but they are possessed by an evil spirit which utilizes their spirit, soul, and physical body. However, the spirit of witchcraft is mainly concerned with controlling both the spiritual and physical bodies of the person. It is with the help and aid of the person’s spirit body that the spirit of witchcraft is able to travel out during the night. And by controlling the spirit body, the witchcraft spirit is able to control the physical body as well. They also often threaten the person through the physical body. In this way, they are able to intimidate the person to do their will. This is necessary because the person still has their own free will even though they are possessed with a spirit of witchcraft. They can still say no to the devil. As they progress spiritually in the Dark Kingdom, however, they find it progressively more difficult to say no. They are controlled by fear because to say no could mean instant death.

In Black Africa, where the most evil and powerful spirits of black witchcraft predominate, the very mention of the word “witch” in a town or village can

bring terror to the hearts of the people. That is because the people know the operation of the witches is only to cause evil. These people live in constant terror that they will be *troubled* by a witch.

In West Africa, especially Nigeria where they are the most advanced in the science of witchcraft, the native people pay homage and honor to the witches in their neighborhood. The witches operate in highly organized districts. An analogy to this is the organization in the corporate world. Most large companies operate from a headquarters where they office their executives. Then they have regional offices over a certain geographical area such as several states. Finally, they would have district offices in each city from which sales, engineering or other support functions might operate. The setup in the Dark Kingdom is similar. And a district office is the meeting place in the spirit world for the local witches, wizards, and magicians to meet. It is called a witch coven, but unlike America where it is in the physical world, in Africa it is located in the spirit realm and thus cannot be seen by the human eye. However, they can be heard. These covens are normally built up in the sky such as at the top of a tall tree. They then travel there in their spiritual bodies during the night to meet. They normally travel in the form of a bird such as an owl.

Witches in the district coven normally meet together every night between the hours of midnight and 2 or 3 A.M. A person possessed with a spirit of black witchcraft will normally leave their body between the hours of 11 P.M. and midnight to "travel" to the district coven. The human body or carcass as they call it, is left sleeping at home on the bed while the person's spirit and the spirit of witchcraft travel out to the coven.

The meeting in the coven is normally concluded by 2 or 3 A.M. after which the spirit of the witches will go out to perform the devilish, evil things that were discussed in the coven meeting. They must return to the physical body by about 6 A.M. or the body will become sick and die. However, as they progress spiritually, they are able to stay out of their bodies for longer periods of time without physical harm. Also, if anything happens to the spiritual body, no matter what form it is in, then the physical body will die.

For example, if I were to shoot a snake and it was really a witch in the form of a snake, the witch's physical body at home would die. It should be mentioned here, however, that while in the form of a snake , the Ruler of Darkness has all the physical characteristics of that particular species. For example, if in the form of a cobra (a form they like to assume to cause fear), the Ruler possesses the ability to bite and cause death just like a real cobra. They are in essence a cobra with the mind of a human being, an extremely deadly combination.

There are three classes of witches. For a person to join Class One, they have to: first, receive the spirit of witchcraft. This spirit is easily obtained for money or, if under the age of seven, they can receive it free as an "initiate." Second, they must kill at least seven people to be promoted to Class One. For promotion to Class Two, the witch must kill fourteen human beings. And to be promoted to Class Three, the witch must kill thirty-two people. This class, Class III, is called the Greater Witches or the Alpha and Omega order. Their symbol is a cow or snake. If you have a dream involving cows or snakes, the Greater Witches are at work. They are the elite and the rulers among the witches. It is here that we often find the Rulers of Darkness.

Promotion within the Dark Kingdom does not just consist of killing people, even though this is a large portion of their tasks. A person will be promoted to a Ruler of Darkness based upon this plus their overall loyalty and willingness to take orders from the Principalities, Powers and especially Satan himself.

Satan is the only one who promotes humans in the Dark Kingdom. It is because he wants to maintain their loyalty directly to him. He also maintains contact with these Rulers for the same reason. Promotion is contingent upon loyalty to Satan plus willingness to carry out assignments from Satan, the Principalities and the Powers. These assignments can vary from causing catastrophic accidents, such as an airplane crash, to attacking churches, pastors, or government leaders.

These Rulers of Darkness also function in the area of obtaining sacrifices to Satan and his friends in the spirit world. These sacrifices include everything from humans to animals and vegetables. It is through this means of *sacrifice*

that the physical bodies for all the humans in the Dark Kingdom are cared for and money is raised for the Dark Kingdom. Through this process, they are able to ruin human beings physically and financially while at the same time raising support for their work. Quite an accomplishment and all in one package. At the same time they are ruining the person or an entire family, they are also reinforcing idolatry in that person or family since the sacrifices made for “healing” evolve into idol worship.

Whenever the witches wish to kill a person, they will usually kill the person spiritually during the night. They seldom will do it physically. Only if they are unable to kill the person through spiritual means, for example if the person is a Christian, will they resort to physical means. However, it should be noted here that Christians can also be killed spiritually if they do not take certain precautions, are not quick to repent of sin and are not prayerful.

Consider the following portion of a dialogue I had with a witch, a young girl of eighteen, in Benin City, Nigeria, in 1989.

“What methods do you use to attack and *trouble* people?”

“If we want to destroy a person, we will use lust, alcohol or drugs to cause their destruction.”

“How do you implement these into their lives?”

“If we want to plant, say, the spirit of drinking into a person we would first plug their spiritual ears with cotton so that they could not hear. We then plant the spirit of drinking which will cause them to drink. If anyone seeks to speak to them about their drinking problem, because of the powers of witchcraft and the cotton in their ears they will only grow more and more angry with anyone trying to persuade them not to drink any longer. They cannot hear the truth and will soon be destroyed.”

If you have ever tried to talk to someone, especially a relative, about their smoking or drinking, you know that they do become angry.

The Rulers of Darkness greatly prefer to use the spiritual methods which they have developed simply because they can avoid detection. Their methods are quite advanced and something we in the Western world find difficult to comprehend. Because the witches and wizards are so much more at home in the spirit world and because their motives are all the same as dictated by Satan, they almost always attack a person spiritually. How they operate is as follows:

They will usually kill the person only on orders or an okay from the Powers or Principalities. A Ruler of Darkness may wish to kill a certain person, but if those above do not approve it, they cannot carry it out as they risk insubordination and possible forfeiture of their own life.

How they kill a person spiritually is this. They will attack the spirit of the person they wish to kill in the spirit realm or in the dream world. They have the power to change the spirit of a human being into the form of a goat similar to their own ability to change spiritual forms. This form of spiritual science they have learned from Satan. It was most difficult for me to comprehend because I thought that it violates God's laws of freedom of choice for human beings. However, these evil beings try every way they can to upset God and this is one of the reasons for God's hatred of the spirit of witchcraft. God hates witchcraft!

“Thou shalt not suffer a witch to live.” ♥ Exodus 22:18

Because these Rulers of Darkness have the ability to change the form of a human spirit, they will “arrest” (their term) the spirit of the person whom they wish to kill and take that person’s spirit body to their coven where they will transform the person’s spirit body into the form of a goat. They will then sacrifice this “goat” to Satan by cutting its throat there in the coven. Then the lesser witches, those in Class I and Class II, will eat the flesh of the goat there

in the coven. The blood drained from the goat's body is taken for the Class III and higher demons because they do not eat flesh, but drink only human blood. Whenever the lesser witches eat the *heart* of the goat, the person whose spirit has been transformed into a goat dies. Then because of this spiritual death, the physical death of the person is imminent, usually immediately or within a few days after a brief *illness*. At this point in time, physical death cannot be prevented by even the best medical care since the spirit of the person is already gone.

Another operation of these Rulers of Darkness which they perform in their covens is spiritual surgery. Perhaps you have heard of this type of surgery being performed in the Philippines or other places in the physical world. Here in Africa, they perform spiritual surgery in their spiritual covens. They are able to do all kinds of evil things that we have difficulty comprehending. Here is an example of such *surgery* given to me by a former Ruler of Darkness.

“Everyone ought to know that witches and wizards all have some sort of supernatural powers which have been planted on them by Satan. Through this power, he (Satan) masterminds them to reciprocate to his desires and transmit his evil purposes into their already possessed spiritual bodies.

“Here in Nigeria, witchcraft is so powerful because the minds of those possessed have been so easily overshadowed by the devil because of their ungodliness nature. Once a person is afflicted or possessed of witchcraft, his or her entire self is taken over and controlled by Satan and his devices are planted in. The satanic power changes the person’s mind by spiritual affliction. He or she will be, of course, able to conquer his or her second person (called “Shadow” in the spiritual world or “Ka” in Egyptian language). Once this “Ka” is captured, then one can change at will in spirit to any form one so desires.

“Here in Nigeria, as a wizard, at night (because we are men of darkness with evil intentions mostly perpetuated at night) I would lie on my bed as a normal person would do, and I will (through spiritual inclination in me) transform myself into a deer, and go to a known farm to eat all the okra grown there or

into a black cat and go into a poultry to swallow day old chicks, or into a poisonous snake to crawl into the room of a marked victim to bite him.

“While I am away in spirit, my body (carcass) remains on the bed motionless. Should any havoc happen to my spiritual body in the spiritual realm, then I would not wake up here physically. The perpetuation of my evil act is masterminded by a forceful power which controls the forces of thought in me which enables me to take the form or shape of any object willingly.

“No spirit changes anybody’s physical body. The body remains a carcass. The spirit only goes out of that body and becomes solidified into a form. That is why it is difficult for an ordinary person to want to attack a spiritual cat and succeed. He may not be able to raise his hands up to hit or raise his gun up to shoot because the spirit in that cat has charmed his physical strength into submission.

“Witches perform operations on their marked victims not in the physical form, but in the spiritual form. I remember how I removed the male organs of my wicked and uncooperative landlord and replaced it with that of a goat. By this spiritual operation, his sperm has been animalistically bewitched. He had sex with his wives and one of them became pregnant. During labor, she could hear the bleating of a goat in her womb. Because she was the only one who could hear the bleating and every one else could not hear, before she gave birth to the monster she had gone mad.

“She eventually had a baby with a human head, but with a goat’s four feet and hairy body. The nurses in the ward ran for their lives and of course after it was the talk of the town.”

As a wizard and a Ruler of Darkness such as this man was, he would work with the witches, wizards and evil spirits. They will normally command a large horde of demon spirits to whom they give orders. One former wizard I interviewed was the captain over a host of sixty demons. He met with Satan

on Mondays, Wednesdays and Fridays to get his orders. Most of his operations were against the churches. He would operate as follows:

“I would be commissioned, for example, to enter a certain church which was growing and doing the work of God. My assignment would normally be to get the pastor or church leaders to fall into sin through adultery or another means. Adultery was our chief weapon. I would have the demons under my command enter the mind of a weak or stubborn woman whom they could then control. Through the thought processes, they would then control and maneuver this woman into an adulterous affair with the pastor. Through sin, the anointing and ministry of the pastor would then be destroyed and the church as well.

“If the pastor would not yield to the spirit of adultery, we would either send other women or tempt the pastor to commit some other sin which would discredit him in the eyes of God and his congregation. These other tactics included financial attacks, the sowing of anger and discord within the family and the church, the temptation to use alcohol or drugs, and other sins.”

As you can see, their plans can be many and they are well organized to carry out their purposes. They have been very successful up until now against the church because we have been almost totally ignorant of their (Rulers of Darkness) methods of operation.

Let me repeat. It is very, very important that you pray for your pastor, his family, and church leadership, as well as your own family to stop the work of the Evil Government. God will hold your church responsible as a corporate body if your pastor falls through the work of hell against him. This is one reason why He gave us corporate prayer. We will discuss this when we discuss the weapons of our warfare, but I can guarantee that Peter would not have escaped from prison if the Church had not been praying for him. Every church should regularly have a time where they call the church leadership down to the altar at the front of the church and pray over them as a corporate body.

Something interesting along this line was spoken to me by the Holy Spirit the night before I was to teach an all day seminar at a minister's conference in Africa. While preparing a few notes the night before, the Spirit said,

"God always makes the man (or woman) before He makes the ministry. And the devil always destroys the man (or woman) before he can destroy the ministry."

And you should know that the devil will have a good shot at destroying your pastor and church leaders if you do not pray for them. They are the number one targets of the devil and his servants. In a similar manner, the father as head of the household needs prayer and intercession. The devil recognizes headship and he will always preferentially attack the head first. If we are able to recognize this headship and what occurs spiritually, we can see why the devil has put so much effort into causing divorce in the home.

God always works through the *Headship Principle*. I discovered this from the Bible and preach on it often because our lack of understanding in the Church about this principle has caused many problems, not the least of which is a multitude of church splits. Another area where lack of understanding this principle has caused problems is in Church government.

Most evangelical churches today are run by a board of elders or deacons. It is important to have deacons and elders, both are certainly scriptural. However, their functions are not the same, although their qualifications are basically the same. But God never at any time or any place called a board to run a local church. They may assist, but God always calls a Five-fold minister to head a local church—He always follows the Headship Principle. The New Testament pattern also includes the foundational offices of apostle and prophet. Study Acts 13 and you will see prophets and apostles working together as teams of two.

Another good example of the headship principle can be found in the Old Testament example of Moses and Joshua. God chose Moses to lead the Old

Testament type of the Church, Israel, out of Egypt and bondage. And when the time came for Moses to leave the scene, a successor had already been chosen—Joshua. Yet God never spoke to Joshua until *after* the death of Moses. Then God spoke to Joshua and said,

“Moses my servant is dead . . .” ♥ Joshua 1:2

God is a good manager. It is a well-known, although seldom followed, management principle that you do not go around a boss to deal with subordinates and a good manager does not allow subordinates to go around their boss to the senior manager. Unfortunately, this principle is violated every day in the business world causing loss of productivity and employee behavioral problems.

But God does not operate that way. He works through headship and the headship over a local church is normally the pastor. He never went around Moses and said, “Okay, Joshua, you will be the next leader. I am going to let Moses die and then you will take over.” No, it was only *after* Moses died that God spoke to Joshua first.

If we understood this Headship Principle, we would not be as susceptible to attack as we have been by the Rulers of Darkness. We would not allow “ministers” to rise up in the local church and split the church taking half the congregation with them. God never works that way. Why have we allowed the devil to “divide and conquer?” Whenever we ordain deacons or elders (Five-fold ministers), we always discuss this principle with them. We also discuss the Absalom spirit which always rises up in a church to destroy it if it can through a split. We emphasize Acts 20:17-31.

The Ruler of Darkness over the country of Nigeria is named the Queen of the Coast. “She” is a demonic being which we run across quite often in our ministry there. Although she can change forms, she normally appears as a beautiful black woman because she is living among black people. She is often

the principle spirit mentioned when the person receiving ministry is possessed with many water spirits.

She often works with Dagon (Judges 16:23; I Sam. 5:25; I Chron. 10:10) who is the guiding demon over Nigeria. He is the husband of Marine, the mermaid-looking head of all water spirits. She has many Agents, human beings on the side of the Dark Kingdom, who do her bidding for sex, money and power. Many of them are killed, however, because they fail so often in their attempts to harm Christians. The bodies of those killed are ground up and used for magical potions in the Dark Kingdom.

If the Queen of the Coast wants to entice a female, however, she will assume the form of a handsome man and attempt to win the favor of the female under attack.

This knowledge should make one very much aware of maintaining a clear idea of whom one is dealing with in every circumstance of life. We find it is very necessary to stay in tune with the Spirit of God to determine if any of the people we are ministering to (or with if they are ministers) are demon spirits or Agents of the devil. Their ability to transform and change forms makes it especially necessary to know those “who labor among you.”

18

OPERATIONS OF THE WICKED SPIRITS

The main function and operation of the Wicked Spirits in high places or heavenly places is to cause misery for the human race. They function under the authority of the higher spirits and the Rulers of Darkness. Some of these spirits are serving in a staff capacity, but most operate in a line capacity—they work under the direction of a Power or a Ruler of Darkness.

These spirits are active in promoting sickness, death, and general misery among human beings. They are grouped for specific purposes as each is a specialist in his area of misery. These groupings include sickness, lying, smoking, drunkenness, adultery, drug addiction, greed and death.

Have you ever wondered why a particular city in the United States has a propensity for certain sins? For example, New York for greed, San Francisco for homosexuality and Washington for lying. This occurs in a city because there is a preponderance of those types of spirits in that city. As Christians and intercessors, we must learn to see a city spiritually and pray accordingly. People act a certain way because the spirits are driving them to act that way. Whenever a spirit attacks a human, it is always through either oppression or possession. Once a spirit possesses a person, however, then that person takes on the characteristics and personality of that spirit to a large degree. This is why there is a correlation, for example, between pornography and spirits of lust or adultery. A person's eyes are one of the main doorways through which these spirits may gain entrance to the body. If they have a spiritual means to enter a person, they will do so. If not, then they will operate by oppressing the

person they are attacking through suggestions to the mind of that person. These spirits normally operate in five ways to accomplish their evil purposes:

1. Habits in the flesh of a person. These would include smoking, drinking, sexual immorality, gluttony, and cursing.
2. Total possession whereby they control the person. To gain complete control of a person where they go completely insane takes time. Charles Manson is an example.
3. Oppression of an individual through sickness such as cancer or diabetes.
4. Operation in the area of a person's life such as strife, financial problems, or family problems.
5. The death of an individual. These spirits are a group of spirits called the spirit of death.

It should be noted that the Dark Kingdom will ultimately be striving to involve all of these spirits in your life. They will be working on you from all sides. While one group of spirits is seeking to bankrupt your business, another group is causing your expenses to go up by attacking your possessions such as your automobile or washing machine. What are the mathematical odds for so many things to go out at once? It is high. Do they ever all go out whenever you have plenty of money? We have coined the phrase Murphy's Law to explain these occurrences. I am not implying that all such occurrences are initiated by demon spirits, but it would appear that much is.

These particular spirits are also the ones who hinder the spiritual development of a person through the blinding of their eyes to see and understand. They are actually able to spiritually blind a person. The only way that person can then receive spiritual sight is through the correct intercession of a Christian. Otherwise, they will remain spiritually blind. For example, if you have a

loved one who will not accept Christ, they are being blinded by these servient spirits, primarily Arcarine. Let me illustrate.

“But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: In whom the God of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, Lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.” ♥ II Corinthians 4:3-4

The god of this world is Satan and he uses these Wicked Spirits to carry out the mission of blinding the minds of humans. And only through correct prayer can those persons become saved. It does no good at all to pray a spiritually immature prayer such as “God save Uncle John.” God is already trying to save Uncle John and He will do it if you will help Him by learning to pray correctly.

When possessing a person, these Wicked Spirits can cause blindness, lameness, deafness, and muteness. These spirits are very easy to cast out if they are not reinforced by the higher spirits. They take the least time of all to deal with if one is properly prepared for ministry.

An interesting aspect of these spirits is that they dwell in families. Often their main home is on the lower spiritual planes and this is why the Bible calls them Wicked Spirits in High Places or Heavenly Places. The familiar spirits are in this category. Whenever they leave their “family,” to come to the earth the other spirits will ask, “When will you be returning to us?”

SPIRIT BEINGS IN HUMAN FORM

Perhaps the most important and disturbing information I have obtained about the Dark Kingdom is the presence in our world of wicked spirits in human form. This is a special form of possession. During the initial drafts of this book, I only briefly mentioned it. I knew it would be difficult for most Christians to accept. In church meetings on spiritual warfare, I only share this

information with those I know to be spiritually mature and able to use this information in ministry, never with the general congregation.

When I was reading back over this chapter, however, the LORD said that I needed to more fully develop this information because it is very important.

There are four different forms of possession. *First*, there is possession whereby Satan controls a person through his satellite control system. He operates this system from the Transcendental Plane, plane thirteen, where he dwells.

Second, a person can be possessed by spirits which interfere with the person's mind and emotions and influence the person to commit heinous acts such as rape, child molestation, or murder. In this type possession, spirits are actually present in or on the body—they control the body, very often almost completely, by controlling the mind.

Third, a human who is a member of the Dark Kingdom can be possessed by giving their body willingly to a wicked spirit. For example, a person possessed with water spirits could travel to the city under the sea in the spirit world. Their spirit would stay there while an evil spirit actually returned in the place of the human spirit and possessed the human body. After the spirit has done its dirty work, it would return to the sea and the human spirit would then return to its body. The human, however, must be very advanced spiritually in the Dark Kingdom in order to stay out of their body for very long without the physical body dying. Emmanuel Omoobajesu once stayed in the spirit world for three years and his spiritual master, a magician, stayed there seven years at one time.

Fourth, a human body can be possessed from birth by a wicked familiar spirit. It is these first, third and fourth types of possession about which nothing has ever been written—they have not been understood before. We only thought bodily possession could be achieved through the second means discussed above.

We know from Genesis that demonic angels came to earth and married human women in an effort to genetically destroy the human race to prevent the Messiah from being born. But we never knew that they were still able to do so. Although I have not confirmed it, we have received reports that the Illuminati and other occult groups are involved with breeding similar demonic human beings like the Nephilim mentioned in Genesis.

The presence of these spirit children is well-known to only a few in Nigeria. They are called Obanje or “die-and-go-children.” These Obanje children are not *real* children at all, *but are spirit beings in the form of children or babies.* Of course, as their human body grows, they become adults.

I have a great deal of experience with these spirit beings. I have even seen infants that some poor mother brings for deliverance. How does one tell a mother that the child is not “normal” and cannot be delivered because it is not a human being? I have even talked to several Obanjes who were young adults.

Evil spirits can and do come to earth by inhabiting the bodies of human embryos from conception and onward to cause havoc within the human race. They normally enter the womb of an expectant mother between the third and eighth month of pregnancy. The familiar spirit kills the child’s spirit and then takes over the growing body. The youngest child I have personally dealt with that was an Obanje child was a nine-month-old girl; however, I have seen them as young as 1-3 months but this spirit is there from the womb because it is planted into the womb of an expectant mother.

Knowing this fact concerning spirit children should make us realize even more the need for prolonged prayer in the decision-making areas of our lives concerning relationships, both ours and those of our families. If you have a child about to marry, for example, you should pray long and hard concerning this decision of a life mate.

One of the prime areas we see these spirits at work is against the ministry. For example, let’s say you are a prominent, powerful minister who is doing great

damage to the Dark Kingdom. As such, these spirits would not be able to attack your wife when she became pregnant. She would not mother an Obanje child because there is too much prayer in your household for them to accomplish this so what do they do? They do the next best thing.

When your wife becomes pregnant, a spirit enters the womb of another pregnant female and kills the human spirit of the child in the womb. This is always accompanied by a huge loss of blood by the mother who thinks she has miscarried. But upon going to her physician, she learns that everything is okay—the baby is fine. What she does not know is that she is now carrying a spirit child. This child has the express purpose of marrying your offspring! Even as an infant, it possesses the intelligence of the spirit in that body. It will, as it grows older, seek to bring about the circumstances to marry your child. It is, of course, in communication with its fellow spirits who assist it in this endeavor.

In addition to its main purpose of destroying your ministry through your offspring, it also causes untold misery for this family to which it is born by inflicting them with financial problems and sickness. These “children” are very easy to discern when you are around them, but we in the West never knew they existed. I have spoken to them and questioned them. They rarely live past age thirty and often will die at set times such as when they graduate from college (after they have “soaked” the family financially), when their first child is born, or after marriage.

My ministerial associate, Pastor Edward Umukoro of Benin City, Nigeria, told me about a young woman who died after giving birth to her first child. After birth, the nurse said, “It’s a boy.” The woman immediately turned her head to one side and died even though there was nothing physically wrong with her. This was an Obanje.

These Obanje spirit-humans, I believe, are the same type of being brought into existence through the intermarrying of the angels with human women mentioned in the book of Genesis and Jude and discussed earlier in this book. Heretofore, we did not know of their existence. Now that we do, I would

expect to begin receiving many reports here in America. There are whole villages in Nigeria made up on these Obanje children. Those who have been Rulers of Darkness in the Dark Kingdom tell me that there are millions of these spirit-humans in the earth today. This is a sobering thought.

I do not believe there are very many of them here in America, but I do not minister much in America anymore and perhaps there are many. I received a prophetic dream from the Lord in 1998 which seemed to indicate this was the case. I believe there are many more of them in Africa simply due to the presence of the black witchcraft spirit. We do not have much black witchcraft here in America. But with what is occurring in this country, if the Church does not begin to earnestly intercede, the increase of demonic activity will continue to escalate and we could see much more of these Obanges here in our own country. Look at what has occurred here with the Islamic religion.

The point is, we need to be aware of this activity and the potential presence of spirit-humans and pray accordingly when confronted by situations where we may believe there is more available than meets the eye. We must have great spiritual discernment and wisdom in these last days to deal with the problems of the spiritual realm which confront us each day.

SPIRITUAL AWARENESS

These spiritual things, such as a spirit-human, are very difficult to believe. The reason they are very difficult to believe is because we do not know very much about spiritual things. We know so little about the spirit world. Consequently, when we learn something new we tend not to believe it instead of saying, "I'm going to pray about that; it might be true." Human beings have great difficulty in comprehending new truth. Our tendency is to discount it.

But the truth of the matter is that learning spiritual things is no different than learning other new things about the physical world. Once we set our minds to learn as much as possible, we find there is much knowledge there which God

wants to impart to us. Like a radio station on a certain frequency, we are only able to receive when we open our minds and tune our spirits to the proper frequency. Once we do, we find we can learn and grow spiritually.

For example, because we do not see many people using charms here in the United States, we do not understand what they are and how they work or function. We are spiritually dense and thus ask the wrong questions. How can a charm, for example, attract people to my place of business? How can a charm cause me to become wealthy? How does one cause death for my enemies? We fail to understand because we focus on the *physical* aspects of the charm and fail to see the underlying spiritual forces behind the operation of the charm. That is where the power is and not in the charm itself.

A mirror of itself has no power. A waistband of itself has no power. A thread of cloth of itself has no power. A ring of itself has no power. Therefore, we tend to disbelieve the truth because we think, “How can a ring cause people to go blind?” But the truth of the matter is it is not the ring, but rather the demon forces operating through that ring that cause these things to happen. How else could an inanimate object such as a clay doll move. A clay doll cannot move!

These wicked spirits operate through such clay dolls, called Sigidi, in Nigeria. The only purpose of these dolls is to kill. They are sent out with incantations to a person’s house. The doll will appear suddenly out of nowhere in the room the person is in and cause tremendous fear as it walks toward them. When it gets close to the victim, the wicked spirits then attack that person causing instant death.

FURTHER OPERATIONS OF WICKED SPIRITS

One of the most numerous spirits we see the devil using against Christians today is the spirit of Cancer. The Lord told me in 1980, “Son, the devil is going to put cancer on more and more Christians.” We have certainly seen this come to pass now thirty-two years later. I did not ask the Lord back then

why or how the devil was going to do it. Most Christians today, however, reject the idea that cancer is an evil spirit.

I felt led by the Lord from the years 2000 through 2005 to study William Branham's life. Brother Branham was a prophet the Lord used to birth a return of healing and his ministry birthed other great ministries of healing such as Oral Roberts, T.L. Osborn, A.A. Allen, F.F. Bosworth and others. As a spiritual scientist I was interested and intrigued by Brother Branham's spiritual gifts—I wanted to learn what they were and how they operated. I always encourage Christians to understand the spiritual gifts God has given them and learn to use them effectively to advance the Kingdom of God.

Brother Branham had an infallible gift of the Word of Knowledge (he called it a gift of discernment) which operated through visions and the Angel of the Lord who worked with him on the platform. But Brother Branham also had a good gift of Discerning of Spirits as well. He learned how the two worked together. When Branham knew through the Word of Knowledge that a person coming for ministry had cancer he often *saw* a black spirit go from that person out to one or more people seated in the auditorium and Brother Branham would point them out and say, "You have cancer too." There was a *spiritual* connection among these evil spirits.

Unfortunately, like other things shared in this book such as the *power* of the Blood that the Church used to understand somewhat we seem to have regressed to believing that cancer is simply a medical condition. No, it's an evil spirit intent on killing a person if it is not stopped. It seeks to build a body within a person's body in order to destroy them if it is not dealt with. But most Christians deal with it physically instead of spiritually as they should to make certain that it never returns.

In order to better understand how these spirits might operate in tandem under the supervision of a Ruler or Power, consider the following example the Lord gave me regarding how they attack. The specific example, though hypothetical, shows their methods of operation. The example is a Christian school.

Most Christian schools operate on a very tight budget. The members of the Dark Kingdom know this so their strategy is to destroy the financial base of the Christian schools. Let us assume that you are the proprietor of a Christian school and you need fifty students just to break even financially. Currently in your second year of operation, you have sixty-two students and are showing a modest profit after paying all the teachers and other expenses. But then the Dark Kingdom attacks!

First, five of the students are forced to withdraw because all of a sudden their fathers have been transferred in employment to another town. Next, three or four students inform you they will be leaving the school because their parents are getting a divorce and can no longer afford the school. Soon, you find yourself losing four or five more because their fathers have been laid off at the local factory. Suddenly in a matter of just a few months, you have lost about fourteen students and are now losing money. So (hopefully), you begin to pray and pray.

Then three or four more students leave for various reasons, such as their parents didn't like the school. You continue to pray, but things only get worse. You wonder, "Why isn't God answering my prayers?" You continue to pray and it only gets worse. Now it is decision time and you talk to your husband. You decide that it must not be God's will for the school to continue so you make plans to close it. One more victory for the Dark Kingdom. They have seen this type plan succeed over and over again so they continue these same strategies.

Let me just pass something along to you or you would not believe it. The Dark Kingdom will work to close an entire factory just to get one Christian school or church. Some members of the Dark Kingdom told me how they arranged an "accident" which killed everyone on a bus with over 100 people on board just to kill one single pastor. By the way, the pastor was the only person on the bus who did not get killed. But the point is they have no mercy. If you are doing something for the Kingdom of God, they will destroy as many people as it takes just to stop you.

This is one reason we have failed to understand why our children or spouse are attacked through sickness or death. They tried to kill my seven-year-old son the second trip I made to Africa in 1989, but the angels protected him. And one of the reasons he was protected is because the Lord gave me II Thessalonians 3:3 years ago to confess over the children each day. He fell ten feet onto a concrete floor at a warehouse and was not even hurt, despite landing on his back. God is faithful when we are faithful. But this is why they seek to harm our family members preferentially. It is to get you to quit preaching, teaching, casting out devils, laying hands on the sick, visiting the prisons and nursing homes, etc. Whenever the battle is the roughest, just know this; the victory is near. Remember, God has answered your prayers, but the answer has perhaps just not manifested in the physical yet. Keep on believing because you have the Truth, the Bible, and it says:

“And let us not be weary in well doing, for in due Season we shall reap, if we faint not.” ♥ Galatians 6:9

Remember, every attack of the devil is to get you to faint. He knows that this scripture is conditional, we *shall* reap if we faint not! This is the good fight of faith we must all wage to defeat the members of the Dark Kingdom. So, when the attack comes against you, your church, the Christian school, your ministry to the poor, or whatever, know rather that you are doing something great for the Kingdom of God or you would not be under attack.

The servient spirits, like a flood, will descend upon your situation in an effort to defeat you and prevent you from reaping. But stand still, don't waver. Be strong in prayer along with your other spiritual weapons and you will be victorious.

19

THE OCCULT WORLD

Because the use of the occult is so central to the operation of the Dark Kingdom, we have included it in this section on the Operations of the Dark Kingdom. We will discuss various aspects of the occult and how Satan uses it to enslave the minds and souls of human beings in the world today. His use of occultic practices is perhaps the greatest indication of how intelligent he is and how well he knows mankind. Since the first edition of this book in 1991, this has become an even more serious problem—particularly with children—by the increase in content of magic, witchcraft and the occult even in cartoons as well as general television programming and such movies and books as Harry Potter.

There is much available in both Christian and secular literature documenting the *explosion* of the occult in our world today. It is a world-wide epidemic—a great invasion by the Dark Kingdom. It is not the purpose of this book to discuss what others have already well documented. However, it should be stated that the main purpose of this tremendous rise in occultic activity throughout the world today is to prepare the coming of the Antichrist and the Principality known as the Beast.

Whether you are a Christian or a non-Christian, you should be able to recognize the dangers in the occult and cease any activities or areas of involvement in which you are engaged. That is the main purpose of this

chapter—to highlight strongholds of the occult in which a person may be engaged so that they can renounce these activities and turn to Christ.

Let this be a dire warning from one who knows! Whenever you engage in occultic activities, even minor ones such as the reading of your horoscope, you are opening yourself wide open to access and possession by the devil. This holds true even if you are a Christian. Perhaps you do not believe a Christian can be possessed. We will deal with this subject at length when we discuss deliverance. However, let me say here to emphasize the importance of this subject, that a Christian can be possessed. There are many examples today. I see them *every day*. About 95% of the people I minister to are Christians. So, whenever someone tells me, as almost everyone preaches today, that a Christian cannot be possessed, I know immediately that they do not know anything about the deliverance ministry. It is impossible to work in this area very long without realizing Christians are possessed just like unbelievers are. Let me pass on one of the greatest truths I have learned about the Dark Kingdom and its operation. The Bible tells us:

“Neither give place to the devil.” ♥ Ephesians 4:27

This scripture highlights perhaps the greatest fact I have learned about the Dark Kingdom and Satan—any place you give to him, he will surely occupy. And, once you give him one place, he will certainly want to occupy more. In fact, this is precisely how a person, even a Christian, becomes possessed. Do not ever forget this scripture—give no place to the devil.

Believe me, you cannot involve yourself in the occult without opening yourself up to the devil and giving him a place. He has a right to your mind and your body when you are involved in the occult.

There are a great many people who serve Satan for power, money and sex. They know what they are doing. But the vast majority become involved innocently. They did not know what they were doing and now they feel trapped. The devil has held them hostage through fear. Many come to the

occult seeking God and the Truth. They simply are searching 180 degrees in the wrong direction. The fact that they are held through a spirit of fear is itself an indication of which kingdom they are in—the Dark Kingdom. God never uses fear; He never goes against our free will. God never goes against our free will—He always grants us the right to choose. The Holy Spirit gently leads whereas the devil always ruthlessly drives a person. Whenever a person threatens to leave the control of Satan, he is always threatened with death.

If you are involved in any of the following, you should cease these activities at once and seek counseling by a reputable Christian who is familiar with demonic possession. This is no easy task in itself. More than likely, you will require some deliverance ministry to extricate yourself from satanic bondage.

The main areas of the occult where Satan is working and holding people in bondage today are:

1. **Astrology** – there are even financial gurus using the stars to predict the stock market.
2. **Spiritists** – this would include the spiritist churches. You will know them by their “fruits” as Jesus told us and their doctrine which is contrary to the Bible.
3. **Spiritual Healers** – never get involved with anyone if they are not a Christian no matter how many crosses they wear or how many scriptures they quote. The only real lasting healing comes from God and is available to the Church, but be sure you know it is a genuine church and not a substitute church of the Dark Kingdom.
4. **Fortunetellers** – these people are Agents of the devil even though they may not know it. The reason I say that some may not know it is because they are possessed with many spirits by practicing necromancy. Often they are possessed by deceiving spirits such that they actually believe they are helping people and that their gift is from God. Their information, as already discussed, comes from the Dark Kingdom through the Powers and is given to the fortuneteller by religious and familiar spirits.
5. **Transcendental Meditation** – the only meditation a Christian should practice is that advocated by King David. It is meditation upon the Word of God. Any other type of meditation, including yoga, is from the Dark

Kingdom and is designed to control your mind. It is a subtle but sure method to eventual total demonic possession. Talk to someone who thinks they “Found it” and you will learn what they found—demonic possession.

6. **Yoga** – while the physical benefits may be there, like much of the martial arts, the spiritual practices are part of the Dark Kingdom. The only true power is not physical but spiritual.
7. **Satanism and Satan worship** – anyone should know better than to get involved. If you find yourself already involved, you definitely need deliverance ministry.
8. **Mediums or Channelers** – the same as fortunetellers. These people are totally possessed by spirits when in their trance. They are able to fool people because they often impersonate a loved one and reveal information that only the departed loved one and God know. What people do not realize is that the familiar spirits know everything about them ever since birth. They feed this information to the person while speaking through the medium. For example, you go to a channeler and your deceased mother speaks through the channeler relaying information to you that only you and she knew. Therefore, you believe it to genuinely be your departed mother. But when you realize that familiar spirits know everything about you, it is easy to see how they can fool the spiritual neophyte. A channeler is one of Satan’s counterfeits for the prophet’s ministry in the Church.
9. **Secret Societies** – Christians should not be involved. I do not know of one that is not occultic even though much of what they do may *appear* good.
10. **Metaphysics** – do not show any interest here either. It is a trap to draw humans into the Dark Kingdom.
11. **False Religions** – more about this below.
12. **Ouija Boards** – don’t even think about it. This is spiritism and the spirits will talk to you. But the question you should ask yourself is “do I really want to talk to demons?” I doubt it. I never do unless I need information in deliverance ministry. Once you start talking to them via the Ouija, they will begin knocking on your windows and doors, seeking to possess you. For several years I was involved in prison ministry at the maximum security units in Huntsville, Texas. One common fact I observed with all these inmates who were on death row—they all were either involved in Ouija boards or had family members, normally a mom, that were. In 2000, we ministered deliverance to a man in Canada who was 38 years old and had been institutionalized since age 18. The Lord revealed that

while playing with the Ouija Board at age 18 a “friend” placed a spell on him that made him go mad. When we ministered to him he had received 60 shock treatments and was always trying to kill himself.

13. **Rock Music** – forget it, even “Christian Rock” which is a paradox. Heavy metal groups today are into Satan worship.
14. **New Age** – in any form, stay away from it or you may be pulled in through *deceiving or seducing spirits*.
15. **Hypnotists** – never allow yourself to be hypnotized; demons gain access when we are not in control of our minds.

SPIRITISTS AND SPIRITUAL HEALERS

A spiritist is the name given to those who are involved with spirits. For the purpose of our discussion, it would also include those involved in necromancy such as mediums. Of course today they have changed the name to channelers to make it more appealing. But it is the same old devil.

All forms of spiritism are condemned in Scripture. They involve the work of the familiar and servient spirits of the Dark Kingdom. These are what are commonly called poltergeists or Phantom spirits. They can manifest physically during a meeting or séance. They are able to reveal information about an individual or pose as a relative through the work of the familiar spirits, so named because they are “familiar” with you or the person they are assigned to watch.

They know everything that has ever happened to you and your lineage simply because they have a dossier and information available to them as previously mentioned. However, because much of the information is not known to another human being and certainly not to the medium, the person attending the séance is fooled into thinking the spirit actually is their loved one.

Once this occurs, the person is hooked on these meetings and usually begins to attend a spiritist “church.” Here they talk about Jesus but it is not the Son of God we Christians worship. He is just someone who can lead one to

enlightenment. They discuss other occultic jargon such as the “pure white light of Christ” within each person and the god within each person. This is all spiritual nonsense from the Dark Kingdom. Stay away from it! If you’ve been attending such a church, you *definitely* need deliverance ministry.

Once this person is hooked on attending a spiritist church, the devil really moves in on them. They begin to hear the spirits in their home knocking on windows or moving tables and beds. These things actually occur. I have witnessed them when ministering deliverance to those here in America who have been in the occult.

Because this person has no protection from God while in their spiritist church, they are soon in very deep bondage to the devil. The deceiving and religious spirits of the Wicked Spirits move in forcefully upon the person. Their mind becomes *fuzzy* and they are unable to think clearly.

Spiritual healers, such as those who perform operations without the use of anesthesia or medical instruments, also utilize the power of the devil. Having interviewed people here in the States who have undergone this type of spiritual surgery as well as having been to four islands in the Philippines where this is a daily occurrence, it appears that there is some truth to its validity. However, because it is from the Dark Kingdom, it can only be designed to lead one into bondage.

In Africa, this type “surgery” is never done under the cloak of goodness, but always at night in the spirit realm with evil intentions. In the Philippines, what are called witch doctors in Africa are referred to as Quack Doctors. I have ministered salvation to some and they thought they were doing “good”—they were deceived!

Do not get involved in such spiritual healing. People normally do out of a sense of desperation when the medical profession tells them there is no hope. But one thing we have learned that you can count on—any relief from the devil is only temporary since he is the author of sickness and disease and

because he hates the human race. Therefore, he is able to remove the ailment, albeit only temporarily, but when it returns it will be much worse. Once again we must emphatically state, “Give no place to the devil.” Christians must avoid any behavior which will open them up spiritually to his attacks.

TRANSCENDENTAL MEDITATION

Involvement in TM as it is called, opens one up to demonic possession. This is also true of other similar cultist groups which appeal to self-improvement such as Eckankar, the Gray Message, *et al.*

God created a human being with control of his own mind and thought processes. We are also given control of our own emotions. However, whenever a person begins to “give up” that control through the taking of drugs, alcohol, or through meditation techniques such as those practiced in TM or the Eastern religions, then that person is opening the gate to the devil. Your mind is the gate to your whole body. Through the mind, the devil is able to control your whole body and he will seek to enter by any means possible.

The longer a person is involved in this activity, the more demons can and will possess that person. The person will begin to notice symptoms of this possession, but unless well-versed in spiritual possession, will probably not recognize what it is.

The classic symptoms of possession are a *progressive* series of problems with the mind and the emotions. A person will begin to notice that his or her thought processes are not as clear and decisive as they used to be. Their mind becomes *clouded*. Their emotions, too, become shredded and they are very easily upset, much as a woman is during her pregnancy or menstruation. They will often go to pieces or become violently angry over insignificant problems. This is one of the first signs of demon possession. Deliverance ministry is now necessary.

There is a correct form of meditation and we learn the most about it from studying the Psalms. Meditation upon the Word of God is one of the best ways to really know God and to have Him speak to you. It is my belief that this is why David was so close to God.

It is from the Psalms that we get the clearest picture of what God is like and we can learn to meditate upon the character and nature of God as we meditate upon His Word. In essence, this form of *Godly* meditation involves reading a portion of Scripture and then quietly meditating upon what God is saying as you slowly turn this Scripture over and over in your mind and spirit. The longer you practice this spiritual exercise, the more your own spirit will grow and the closer to the Lord you will become. By practicing this Godly meditation in the Word, you are also renewing your mind to absolute Truth and away from deception.

This form of meditation is quite different from reciting your own personal mantra given to you by a “spiritual master.”

FALSE RELIGIONS

This discussion could in itself cover dozens of books on each religion. Hence, we will limit ourselves to a few poignant remarks about the most common false religions we see today.

We should note first of all that there are many common *threads* among all false religions. If you are wondering whether a religion is false and you are not sure, look for one or more of these common threads. If they exist, the religion is false no matter how much “good” it appears to be doing. There are many false religions, such as Mormonism, which appear to be good. I have known people to join simply because of the emphasis on the family life. This is an area where we need to observe the proverb of the world which says, “The road to hell is paved with good intentions.”

The most common thread of all false religions invented by the Dark Kingdom, specifically Apollyon, is that they all deny the Lord Jesus Christ as the Son of God and Redeemer/Savior of the world as revealed in Scripture. Some seek to soften this point by such statements as, “Yes, Jesus was a Son of God but we are all sons of God.” Upon close examination, one will find that they *deny* the True Son of God. Often they admit He was the Son of God but yet they deny a fundamental tenet of Scripture—that Jesus was *Divine*—that He was both *fully* God and *fully* man! The Bible clearly warns us that this is the spirit of antichrist.

“Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard That antichrist shall come, even now are there many Antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time. They went out from us, but they were not of us; for If they had been of us, they would no doubt have Continued with us: but they went out, that they might be Made manifest that they were not all of us. But ye have An unction from the Holy One, and ye know all things. I have not written unto you because ye know not the Truth, but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the truth. Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is Antichrist, that denieth the Father and the Son. Whosoever Denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: (but) he that Acknowledgeth the Son hath the Father also.” ♥ I John 2:18-23

It should be cautioned and noted that many of these same religions will use the Bible; so will fortunetellers. The devil knows that you will not take poison, but if he mixes the poison with a steak dinner, you will eat it.

Almost without exception, these religions will admit that Jesus actually lived and walked upon the earth. A few such as Islam will even admit that He was a prophet, but not *The Prophet* spoken of in Scripture (although He was):

“The Lord your God will raise up for you a Prophet Like me from your midst, from your brethren. Him you Shall hear, ... and it shall be that whoever will not hear My words, which He speaks in My name, I will Require it of him.” ♥ Deuteronomy 18:15, 19 NKJV

Another benchmark by which you may judge whether a religion is false or not is by the Bible, the only True Word of God given to mankind. Here again, the Dark Kingdom has been clever. They have given us the Quran and the Book of Mormon as other “Bibles” supposedly given by God. The Book of Mormon is even called another *testament* of Jesus Christ by the LDS Church. Nothing could be further from the Truth. If you are Islamic or a Latter Day Saint, then study it for yourself and see if your “Bible” agrees with the Holy Bible. If it does not, then how can they both be from God?

Having dealt with false religion in people such as those named plus others like Jehovah’s Witnesses, it is my observation that they are often deceived because they are taught that there are too many versions or interpretations of the Bible. They have their own interpretation and version of the Bible, however, and it’s covered in I Timothy 4:1 under the Doctrines of Demons.

We should realize that if nothing has ever been found erroneous in the Bible from our scientific and historical perspectives, then it must be the Truth.

There is more scientific evidence to support the Bible than any other piece of literature known to man. Over six thousand manuscripts of the Bible have been found and they are in agreement. So, accept it, believe it and act upon it. Then you will know the Truth and the Truth will make you free.

Another danger, here, however is that the false religion may use the Bible, but they have their own interpretation or version of the Bible. They may use Scripture to support reincarnation or in the case of the Jehovah’s Witnesses, they have their own version of the Bible, however, it is interesting to note that:

- A. Not one single noted Greek or Hebrew scholar was involved in the compilation of their “translation” of the Scriptures. It makes one wonder how they could come up with a “translation” from the original Greek and Hebrew using persons unfamiliar with the original languages. A most difficult task to say the least!

- B. The name by which they call themselves and they insist upon being the *one true name* for God is Jehovah. Yet this name does not appear in the Hebrew text of the Bible. The personal Name of God, as revealed first to Moses, is YHWH because there are no vowels in the Hebrew language. It is commonly pronounced Yahweh with the vowels added. Theologically speaking, we call this Name the Tetragrammaton. It was not until the Middle Ages that the Name Jehovah appeared. Although the King James does translate YHWH as Jehovah, it should be noted that this name does not appear in the original text. Perhaps it is okay to use Jehovah—I don't have any problem with it—and many do, but I point this fact out because the Witnesses insist that the True Name of God is Jehovah. This statement is false. Scholars translate the real Name of God as I AM.
- C. Finally, we should point out that they claim to worship Jehovah and not Jesus but, in fact, the Jehovah of the Old Testament is none other than Jesus Christ. He is not the same as the Father whom they believe they are worshipping—they deny the Trinity. So to me, the Witnesses have always been a contradiction. They claim to worship Jehovah and they insist there is only One God, not three, yet they deny Jesus Christ. Since Jesus and Jehovah are One and the same Person, it would be safe to assume that their worship services are most confusing.

There are of course many other inconsistencies in their doctrine and beliefs, not the least of which is their eschatology which has proven to be incorrect legions of times. One other thing my wife and I have observed about the Jehovah's Witnesses—all of their Kingdom Halls never have any windows. We have decided that they are structured this way to eliminate the chance of any *light* ever entering!

Let us emphasize again, if you are unsure about a doctrine or religion, go back to I John (the scripture quoted above) and remember that if the religion denies the Divinity of Jesus, it is false. Had Jesus not been Divine, He would not have been *qualified* to die for our sins—He would not have been an *unblemished Lamb* because He would have been born in sin.

ISLAM

We should also touch briefly upon the Islamic religion since it is the fastest growing religion in the world. It is also the greatest threat to our Christian heritage in America. If the Muslim population continues to grow here as it has in the past, then their political muscle could grow to overshadow both Christians and Jews.

Muslims are difficult people to win to the Lord. They have their own “bible,” the Quran (pronounced Koran), and their own prophet, Mohammed. Islam believes that Jesus was a prophet, but they do not believe He is alive today and they believe that the final revelation of God (Allah) was given to man in the Quran through Mohammed the Prophet. This giving of the Quran to Mohammed who wrote it down presents some difficult problems for Islam considering that Mohammed is known to have been completely illiterate—he could neither read nor write.

I have studied the Quran from a copy I obtained in London. I found many contradictions between it and the Bible, not the least of which is the spread of their religion by force. This alone tells you it is a religion manufactured by the Dark Kingdom because God does not work by force—He always gives us a free choice.

Islam, it should be noted to those not familiar with it, is a religion of little hope. Like most false religions, it is a religion of works and not grace; you try to live a *good* (whatever that means) life and hope that you were good enough to get to Heaven.

Devout Muslims pray five times a day. Too bad Christians cannot copy this behavior. Most Christians don’t pray five times a month and only then because they are in trouble. This is why they live such defeated lives. The Dark Kingdom is working hard to make sure they continue prayerless, too, because they know that prayer is one of the greatest weapons given to the Church.

Because the greatest spirits in operation today in the world are *religious* and *deceiving* spirits (the Lord told me this in 1985), we should close this chapter with *caveat emptor*— let the buyer beware.

Before you buy into any corporate training program, church, meditation, mind improvement seminar, or karate lessons you had better check it out thoroughly. And you had better measure it against the Truth, the Bible. If any portion of the activity is contrary to Scripture, don't get involved. This applies to your church as well.

I spoke to a friend from Corpus Christi about his pastor not believing in the virgin birth. I said, “Sitting in that church with your children is as dangerous as letting them play with a cocked and loaded gun!”

Just because it has a sign saying “church,” doesn’t mean you should go there. We must not only mature spiritually to recognize these attacks from the Dark Kingdom, but we also need to stay awake spiritually. We must develop our spirit consciousness so we are attune to the Holy Spirit at all times; He can then guide us into all Truth. But if we grow careless or lackadaisical about it, if we don’t spend much time in prayer or the Word—He will not be able to get our attention and warn us. Know what you are doing spiritually at all times and what you are exposing your family to as well.

Have a spiritual plan for your life and family—take out your Bible and lay out a spiritual plan for your entire family to keep you strong and free in the Lord and then stick to this plan.

ANOTHER GOSPEL

From 1997 through January of 2006 the Lord had us shut away in Montana and He rarely allowed us to minister at any churches in America. He spoke through many visions and dreams about a false religious system that masquerades as the Church. Most Christians can discern the difference between false religions and Christianity. They cannot so readily discern a

religious system façade if it names the name of Jesus and calls itself a “church.” Many of these visions and dreams are detailed in my two books, *Revelations from God, Volume I* and *Revelations from God, Volume II*.

One of the great problems in the Church today is the inability of God’s people to see with the “Eye of the Eagle”—the lack of being able to see and know what is going on spiritually. They may be mature physically but spiritually most Christians remain babies and more often than not they are spiritually blind. As I stated earlier, the spirit realm *dominates* the physical realm. This truth is borne out in many of the Scriptures and is precisely why a spiritual substance such as faith can dominate physical things such as sickness, disease, poverty, etc., and change them.

The great apostle Paul, the revelator, makes a very important statement in 2 Corinthians 4 regarding *afflictions*. How many of you enjoy afflictions? I know I don’t! Where do they come from? Notice what Paul says:

“For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh
For us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory;
While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the
Things which are not seen: for the things which are seen
Are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal.”

Now let me ask you an important question—how do you, you personally, obey this verse of Scripture? Specifically, how do you “look at the things which are not seen?” Where do these “things which are not seen” reside? How do you “look” at them? Can they be perceived with the five senses?

You see, our problem is because we don’t *recognize* spiritual things, e.g., that cancer is an evil spirit, we end up doing the *opposite* of what Paul by the Spirit of God recommends in 2 Cor. 4:18—we begin to *look at the things which are seen!* Do you see it! The devil has confused and bamboozled us into not obeying the Scriptures; we are not doers of the Word like we are supposed to be! Instead, as the Spirit pointed out to me with this scripture, we do the opposite! We *look* at the things—the cancer tumors—which are physical and ignore the things which are “unseen,” the spiritual, as we are supposed to do if we are obeying this scripture to “rightly divide the word of truth” and “renew our minds with the Word of God” which is the *real* truth.

Sure a person with cancer has a physical manifestation in the form of tumors but there is a root cause in the spirit realm for that manifestation my brother and sister and it’s the spirit of cancer! The more you *look* at the things which

are seen—the physical tumors—the greater they will impact the “things which are not seen”; particularly your faith. The devil will use this tactic to defeat you in spiritual warfare but if you can develop your faith and obey this scripture, the spirit of cancer will be unable to kill you and other things that he attacks you with—such as a financial attack—will also be unable to destroy you.

During the time we were shut away in Montana we were on the radio and began a church in Libby, Montana, preaching about this false religious system, especially from Revelation 18:4,

“And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, ‘Come out of her, My people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not Of her plagues.’”

I mentioned earlier the most shocking thing the Lord has ever said to me and it ties in with this false religious system. In October, 1991, He said, “The Church is not being led by the Holy Spirit; it’s being led by religious spirits. There are more people in America today in need of deliverance ministry than there are in need of healing.”

If you were to outline the subject matter discussed in the New Testament, especially in the epistles, I think you would be shocked to learn how much is devoted to false teachers, false Christs and *another gospel*. In other words, this is not something new—it’s been around for thousands of years.

Because the devil is such a good counterfeiter and can appear “as an angel of light” we should not be surprised to learn that he has his own church system that he propagates by his own teachers, prophets, apostles, evangelists and pastors—his very own five-fold ministry.

There are a number of behaviors that inhibit human learning. One of these among Christians is the idea that because we are under the New Covenant that somehow mankind is different. Somehow we are not subject to the same conditions and deceptions that Israel encountered. No, the devil is the same.

Jesus is the same. And man is the same. Under the old covenant, most of the prophets were *false* prophets. Should we expect things to be different today? How can you tell the difference?

Paul said, “I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel: which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ.” (Gal. 1:6-7)

How were they perverting the gospel then and how is it perverted today? Paul said in Galatians 3:3, “Are ye so foolish? Having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?” The way Satan perverts the gospel is the same way God preserves His Gospel—by the Spirit and the Word. A perverted gospel is a mixture, a hybrid, between the *true* word of God found in the Bible and the doctrines of demons and men. A true Church preaches and teaches the Word as found in the Bible and the authority of the Scriptures. False religious systems such as the Catholic Church and the Mormon Church have their authority vested in men, not the Scriptures.

In addition, as Paul said, they preach not only *another* gospel but also *another* Jesus. Who is this *other* Jesus they preach? He is a different Jesus than the Scriptures portray. He is a Jesus who no longer performs miracles or works of power as pictured in the Bible.

“For if he that cometh preacheth another Jesus, whom we have not preached, Or if ye receive another spirit, which ye have received, or another gospel, Which ye have not accepted ...”

♥ II Corinthians 11:4

Not only are many preaching *another* gospel as this Scripture talks about but also another Jesus and another spirit. In January of 2008, the Lord gave me a message to minister in Fairfax, Virginia, regarding *another* Jesus and *another* spirit that illuminates this verse of Scripture for today. If you accompanied me to minister deliverance to an alcoholic or someone else needing deliverance you would recognize an evil spirit speaking through that person

when they begin to manifest through profanity, anger, etc. However, most Christians are not able to discern other evil spirits that manifest through people, especially religious spirits. We should recognize the spirit of *antichrist* speaking through a person at our church when they say something like, “Healing is not for us today” or “The office of the apostle and prophet passed away with the early church.” That is the spirit of antichrist manifesting through a person because it is in opposition to the Scriptures and anything opposing the Word is the spirit of antichrist—we’ve just not been taught to recognize its manifestation. If you are standing in faith for something from God by believing His promises, for example healing, what do you suppose is the purpose of this evil spirit speaking through a person to attack your faith?

The *true* Church preaches the Word of God under the anointing and direction of the Holy Spirit. False churches preach a hybrid—a mixture of the Bible and doctrines of demons or men—political correctness for changing times. They have departed from the faith as Jude would say (Jude 3-4).

The *true* Gospel is a gospel of power as Paul said—a gospel of signs, wonders and miracles preached by the wisdom of the Holy Spirit. If the church you’re attending does not follow the Scriptures and use them in preaching and teaching then you should leave and find a true Church.

How do you recognize a true church? By the Bible, the anointing (or lack thereof) and what they preach. Pay particular attention to Acts 2—when the Church was born through the Holy Spirit on Pentecost. A true Church will follow the pattern given in the New Testament and they will preach the *Doctrine of the Apostles* as mentioned in Acts 2:42. All false religions practice three out of the four things listed in this verse—fellowship, breaking of bread and prayers. But all false religions including this false Christian system *neglect* the same one of these four—the doctrine or teaching of the Apostles.

If your church does not resemble the *true* church in the Book of Acts then you’re probably in a false church hearing a false gospel.

BOOK V

THE WEAPONS OF OUR WARFARE

“His intent was that now, through the Church, the manifold wisdom of God should Be made known to the rulers and authorities In the heavenly realms.”

♥ Ephesians 3:10 NIV

20

SPIRITUAL WEAPONS

“For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the Flesh” (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but Mighty through God to the pulling down of strongholds;) Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that Exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing Into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;”

♥ II Corinthians 10:3-5

Please study this scripture carefully. Do not rush through it, but take about thirty minutes now to meditate upon it. Think about what you have learned so far. There is a tremendous amount of information in this scripture. Aside from the obvious discussion of our battle and weapons not being carnal but spiritual, notice the phrase, “Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God ...”

Anything and everything that exalts itself against the knowledge of God is a “high thing” from the Dark Kingdom. It is a lie sent from Hell to destroy you. It is an “imagination.” Why is it an imagination? Because it is exalting itself against the knowledge of God. What is the knowledge of God? It is the Bible.

And anything that exalts itself against this knowledge is false. It is the work of Hell trying its best to destroy you.

You will never get very far in your Christian walk and life if you are not able to obey this scripture and “cast down these imaginations” which the Dark Kingdom sends your way. Any thought which comes to you that is not in line with the Bible is not from God; He is not the author of confusion.

It is amazing how many times we see this principle violated in the Church today. People, even ministers, have come for counseling about whether to divorce their wife and marry another woman because their wife is “holding back their ministry.” This is an imagination—it does not require any prayer or counseling. You just have to obey this scripture and cast it away. You have to learn to say *no* to the devil when he has his satellite system focused on you and is attacking your mind. It’s that simple. But instead we let our emotions be used against us by the Dark Kingdom.

Now that we know the enemy and his forces, so what? What are we going to do about it? Because this is a war, we must begin to think militarily—we must take stock of our resources and how we can best use them to stop the advance of the Dark Kingdom. And, perhaps even more importantly, we must begin to think offensively.

If we are in a spiritual battle, we must have some weapons. What are these weapons and how do we use them? Do we know how to use each weapon expertly and efficiently? It wouldn’t do much good to have a tank or a sophisticated aircraft armed with electronic weaponry at my disposal if I did not know how to use them. I would be as helpless as Neanderthal man with an Apache attack helicopter.

I think the following vision the Lord gave me on Easter Sunday in 1997 while we were ministering in South Africa will help you understand the seriousness of the spiritual war in which we are engaged.

I was taken in the spirit above the earth and as I was looking down upon the top of the world a transparent, gigantic chessboard began to form upon the top of the world. I could see the world through the chessboard. Two players were seated. Satan was playing the black pieces and the Holy Spirit was playing the white pieces.

The appearance of the pieces upon the board were such that I could tell that the game had been on awhile—it was toward the end of the middle game (an average chess game lasts about 40-60 moves per person depending on the strength of the players).

Both players were moving their pieces with lightning speed—zoom, zoom...zoom, zoom. Their speed was such that you never see with human participants even when a Grandmaster plays a beginner. I observed that Satan's pieces, particularly his queen, were quickly becoming “overworked,” a chess term for a superior piece being overcome by many smaller pieces which the Spirit of God was moving with lightning speed! Obviously, the Holy Spirit was winning the game which was close to being over.

This scripture in 2 Corinthians states that our weapons are “mighty through God.” What are these weapons? In this section of the book, we will discuss these weapons and how they are used against the Dark Kingdom.

If you are to survive in these trying times in which we live, it is imperative that you learn about these weapons and use them effectively against the Dark Kingdom because we have entered the time period referred to in the Bible: “For the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.” (Rev. 12:12)

THE ARMOR OF GOD

“Finally, my brethren, be strong in the lord, and in The power of his might. Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles [sly tricks] of the devil.” ♥ Ephesians 6:10-11

Have you put on the whole armor of God or just a portion of it? The first time I ministered at a church in Arizona back in 1991 a woman received a vision during one of the services and she stood up and narrated it as follows: “I saw a group of Christians standing on the front lines in a great battle and I noticed that they were only wearing a helmet. They did not possess a sword or a shield. They kept trying to charge the enemy but they would be wounded by the archers and enemy combatants with a sword or spear. Other soldiers who were armed and had shields kept trying to pull them back to safety and to rescue those who were wounded.”

The Spirit of the Lord was moving mightily so I said nothing and another woman stood up and interpreted the vision. She said that those soldiers who came to the battle with only a helmet and no shield or sword represented the Baptists! Naturally, the vision also represented other groups of Christians who only believe in salvation because the *helmet* (Eph. 6:17) represents salvation. These Christians were saved but because they had not put on the rest of the armor of God they were in no position to be fighting against the enemy.

What is the armor of God? If we do not know, how can we put it on as this scripture admonishes us?

It is very instructive to notice first of all that these verses begin with the admonition not to rely on our own strength. This is a spiritual concept we see over and over again in the Bible. Why does God repeat it so many times in the Bible? You will find God repeats things in scripture when they are important. He wants us to understand. And the message here is that He is our strength. His strength is made perfect in our weakness. This is an extremely difficult concept for us. It goes against human nature which does not want to admit any weakness. We want to be self-sufficient. In reality, if we will take this scripture literally, we can realize that it is indeed stupid and egotistical for us not to “be strong in the Lord,” instead of trusting in our own abilities and talents.

God is so much more superior to us in wisdom and knowledge, especially concerning the Dark Kingdom. Why should we try to do it ourselves? We will only get into trouble as examples from the Bible clearly illustrate. Take the example of the Gibeonites from the book of Joshua and study this situation. This was the first time the Lord was not consulted—Joshua and the elders made the decision themselves and they made a mistake. They were deceived by their physical senses. We must learn to trust in the Lord as the following scripture of wisdom tells us:

“Trust in the Lord with all thine heart; and lean not
Unto thine own understanding. In all thy ways
Acknowledge him, and he shall direct thy paths.”

♥ Proverbs 3:5-6

Why does the Bible give so much credence to our trusting in the Lord and not our own understanding? Because in Spiritual Warfare, we are no match in wisdom or cunning for the devil. But the Holy Spirit is. Only when we rely on the power of the Lord can we hope to do battle with the Dark Kingdom and be victorious.

The first prerequisite for the armor of God is to trust in Him—be strong in Him. Then we are told that only if we put on the whole armor of God will we be able to combat the schemes or wiles of the devil against us and the Church. The Greek word translated wiles is *methodeia*. It is from this word we get our words method and methodology. The Greek word denotes craftiness and deceit.

Therefore, if we are going to encounter deceit, the best defensive ploy is to have knowledge. When a person knows the Truth, that person cannot be deceived. Consequently, when it comes to the armor of God, the first step in fighting against the wiles and deceitful methods of the devil is to know the Truth.

“Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth,”

♥ Ephesians 6:14

There are many today, even ministers, who do not want to know the truth. They resist the truth and would rather continue on comfortably in their ordered ignorance than to learn the truth and change. As any student of behavioral science can tell you, change in humans is most difficult. *Frozen* behavior should be constantly challenged and examined in each of us, but few of us do because we are comfortable. We seek a level of comfort and wish to stay there. Any behavior which makes you feel uncomfortable should be examined. It could be an area where the devil has a stronghold in your life. I am not talking about sin here. Just human behavior such as procrastination, firing an employee, returning an item to a store or discussing unpleasant things with your spouse.

When we apply this concept to the gospel, we learn that our need to change is mandatory if we are to attain salvation. God will not accept us as we are. We must accept His sacrifice for our salvation. This Truth has made us free from spiritual death. But we must learn other Truth from the Bible. Otherwise, God would only have given us John 3:16 and Romans 3:23; 6:23; 10:9-10. He could have cut the whole Bible down to less than one page of Scripture.

No, there is much more to the gospel than salvation. We must strive each day to learn the whole Truth of what God is saying to us through His Word. It is only then that we can remain free. Let me emphasize this truth with a statement which you should never forget—*the degree of freedom and Truth you possess is directly proportional to the amount of the Bible which you both understand and practice.* This is from the Holy Spirit to you today. Think about that statement and then act upon it by studying and meditating in the Word each day. (*cf. John 8:31-32*)

Satan is a master of camouflage and trickery. He is the master politician. He is perfectly content to deceive mankind into thinking that he does not exist—that he is just the product of superstition; the invention of a self-serving Church needing the crutch of religion. After all, as Brother Dave Gardner the comedian used to say, “What will the preachers do when the devil is saved?” Very humorous but theologically inaccurate.

However, if the devil is able to foster the deception that he is a figment of our imaginations, he can continue to operate and do great damage. How can you fight an enemy if you deny his existence? So, Satan likes us to entertain the notion that we are more advanced scientifically now and that his existence was the invention of a less learned generation. This is one of the main reasons that we see the Dark Kingdom continually trying to set at odds science and Christianity, e.g., the theory of evolution, when is a fetus a human being?, and other rhetorical questions. By so doing, he seeks to discredit the Church. And what happens if anything or anyone loses their credibility?

Make no mistake, the Dark Kingdom is behind these attacks on credibility. Satan also utilizes the media, especially television, to attack and ridicule the Church as being ignorant and dishonest.

Whenever you see a minister portrayed in a movie or on television today, he is always made to appear stupid or mentally unbalanced. They also suggest that the Bible does not agree with science which is simply not true—the Bible agrees completely with science.

One of the main scientific areas where Satan has done this is in the area of anthropology. Darwin's theory of evolution of the species of primates has been accepted by most scientists as being factual. In fact, I am continually amazed by the number of scientific and medical journals I read where the evolution of man from microbes in the sea is stated as a fact.

I am a scientist by education, and it is not a fact. This is a theory, and a theory is nothing more until it is proven. This theory has not been proven and, in fact, based strictly upon the preponderance of scientific evidence, the theory would appear to be false.

If man had evolved from the sea and come up the evolution chain through the primates, there would be a clear, traceable evolutionary chain. In short, there would be bones to support the theory. But there are no bones for the "missing link" between man and the other primates. Despite the uncovering of dinosaur

bones and many other bones which predate man, we have never found a species between man and the other primates. And there is no “branching” in the evolutionary chain. This should bring an obvious conclusion—the creation story given in Genesis is the real Truth—the theory of evolution must be false.

But, like many areas of life, there are those who must build their theory to fit their preconceived ideas. In other words, they are biased in their thinking. Consequently, they cannot simply accept the Biblical account of the creation of man even though science has never disproved the Bible, a clear indication of Who its Author is. But because they have no alternative theory other than that of Darwin to discount God, they would rather defend an indefensible position than to admit that the Biblical account is the only logical conclusion.

I find it quite ironic that they accuse the Church of being close-minded and ignorant when, in fact, those who continue to adhere to this preposterous theory in the face of no evidence are the ones who appear ignorant and close-minded. There is not just Biblical, but also much other scientific evidence which discounts the Theory of Evolution. There are several, but one we will mention is the Laws of Thermodynamics. These laws of matter and energy show that, contrary to the Theory of Evolution which says that all life in the universe is evolving or advancing, the universe is in fact running down. The universe is becoming more disorderly, the opposite of the Evolution Theory. The concept of entropy is well-developed in thermodynamics. The universe is running down like an old grandfather clock.

But again, the real enemy is the Dark Kingdom and their ability to appeal to human nature. We are comfortable with the Theory of Evolution in scientific circles so we stay with it. Mentally, we are like Newton’s laws of motion. A body at rest remains at rest and a body in motion remains in motion unless acted on by an external force. This is my paraphrase of these laws. This is often called “inertia” and it applies to our mental process and our reluctance as humans to change as surely as it applies to physical substances. Truly the Bible has spoken well of these scientists:

“For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness And unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness; Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them. For the invisible things of him from The creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the Things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that They glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became Vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, and changed the Glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible Man . . .”

♥ Romans 1:18-23

THE BREASTPLATE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS

This is the second item mentioned in Ephesians 6:14 when the armor of God is mentioned. Webster's defines righteousness as "meeting the standards of what is right and just; morally right; guiltless." Ecclesiastically speaking, we would define righteousness as being right or just before God. That is, right action, thought, or lifestyle.

We know from Scripture, however, that this state of *righteousness* cannot be attained by following any set of laws such as the Ten Commandments. This state of righteousness or right standing before God can only be achieved through one's acceptance of the Blood sacrifice of Jesus Christ. We are saved and become righteous through the entrance of the Holy Spirit after our profession of faith in the Lord Jesus Christ as the sacrifice for our sins.

Hence, we can see that the breastplate of righteousness is upon us if we have made Jesus Christ the Lord of our life. That is the only way righteousness comes. We can do nothing of ourselves.

FEET SHOD

We are ambassadors for Christ. We are to be prepared to share the gospel of peace. The word gospel means good news. It is indeed good news that God has already forgiven our sins and trespasses. All we have to do is to receive Jesus Christ into our hearts by faith. We believe what God said in His Word and we are forgiven of our sins. We are justified and made righteousness through our faith in the Blood sacrifice of Jesus, the Lamb of God.

“Blessed are they whose transgressions are forgiven whose sins are Covered. Blessed is the man whose sin the Lord will never count Against him.”

♥ Romans 4:7-8; Psalm 32:1-2

We are to be prepared to share this “good news.” We are to be like a person who holds a signed pardon for someone in prison and we take the pardon to them. If we do not deliver the pardon, then that person will stand condemned. If we carry the pardon to them, they will be set free. But do we take this charge from the Lord seriously? We are not obeying the Great Commission because we prefer to let someone else do it. No, it is not just the preachers; each Christian is responsible for carrying out this command from the Lord.

The Five-fold ministerial offices of apostle, prophet, pastor, teacher and evangelist were given by the Lord Jesus *to* the Church to train and mature Christians for ministry (Eph. 4). Each of us has been given spiritual gifts, a ministry and duties in the Army of the Lord. We should be about those duties so that the Church is strong and advancing daily against the Dark Kingdom; however, it is very important to put on the *whole* armor of God each day before we enter into battle against the enemy.

The rest of the armor of God is covered in subsequent chapters but just remember, the armor comes from God and not your church or denomination.

21

THE SHIELD OF FAITH

**“Behold the proud, his soul is not upright in him;
But the just shall live by his faith.”**

♥ Habakkuk 2:4 NKJV

**“Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith
Ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts
Of the wicked.”**

♥ Ephesians 6:16

Above all! The shield of faith is extremely important. You will find, if you have not already as you embark on the Christian path, that you will never be able to accomplish much or find the will of God for your life if you do not learn to appropriate faith. You must learn what faith is, where your particular level of faith is, and how to develop and increase your faith. If you are unable to do this, you will never be able to develop spiritually. You will remain a spiritual infant throughout your life. And your life will probably be a short one in today's world because the devil is going to devour spiritual infants.

In order to discuss faith, we must first define what faith is. It is more than the synonym we use for faith—our faith of Christianity. It is more than just the acceptance of Christ as one’s savior. When you receive Christ into your heart by faith, then you have demonstrated “saving faith.” But there are other aspects of faith. So what do we mean by faith? Is there a definition which encompasses all the facets of faith?

WHAT IS FAITH?

The primary scripture defining faith is found in Hebrews.

“Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of Things not seen.”

♥ Hebrews 11:1

Weymouth translates the verse as follows:

“Now faith is a confident assurance of that for which we hope, a Conviction of the reality of things we do not see.”

Williams says that faith is:

“The proof of the reality of the things we cannot see.”

We can see that saving faith meets the Bible’s definition in that it is an “assurance of the reality” of that which we cannot see, namely, Jesus.

In essence, we might define faith as follows: *Faith* is believing the Word of God, both the *Logos* and the *Rhema*, despite all circumstantial evidence to the contrary.”

In the discussion of faith, it is important to distinguish between *head* faith and *heart* faith. For example, in the area of salvation, the Bible says:

“But what saith it? The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in Thy heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach; that if thou Shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in Thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be Saved. For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with The mouth confession is made unto salvation.”

♥ Romans 10:8-10

To obtain salvation and eternal life, you must believe with your heart. Many people believe with their heads that Jesus Christ is the Son of God and that God raised Him from the dead. But they are not saved because they have not appropriated saving faith by believing with their hearts and confessing with their mouths. The Bible teaches, and I know from dealing with them, that the demons know Jesus is the Son of God, but they are not going to be saved.

In like manner, many Christians believe that God heals, but they are unable to appropriate their own faith for healing by believing in their hearts and confessing with their mouths. Hence, they will not be healed.

Everything we receive from God must come by faith. Because everything manifests from the spiritual to the physical, we must first have faith to receive from God before what we receive can manifest itself in the physical world, i.e., before we receive it. Because everything must first be birthed and exist in the spiritual world, I like to visualize faith as being the *bridge* from the spirit world to the physical world. The Bible says:

“But without faith it is impossible to please him; for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that Diligently seek him.” ♥ Hebrews 11:6

Faith is *always* the “evidence of things not seen.” That is why it is so difficult for us as Christians to “fight the good fight of faith” mentioned in I Timothy 6:12.

HOW DO WE DEVELOP FAITH?

The whole essence of the Christian life is fighting the fight of faith. Therefore, many Christians never are victorious in spiritual warfare because they never do develop their own faith. They are trying to rely on their pastor’s or spouse’s faith. The Bible says that God has given every person “a measure of faith.” But it is up to us to cause this faith to grow and develop. We do this through diet and exercise just as we do our physical bodies. In the spiritual sense, the diet is the Word of God. The Bible points out,

“So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the Word of God.”

♥ Romans 10:17

The “water of the word” (Eph. 5:26) causes our faith to grow through the process of sanctification. The exercise we must use to develop our faith is the way we exercise it against the various trials and tribulations which the devil brings against our life. Yet sad to say, most Christians never develop their faith enough to handle just the minor attacks of the devil and his Dark Kingdom. They are completely overwhelmed when the devil mounts a major offensive against their lives or families. Every Christian needs to understand that they will face at least one and usually more major attacks by the Dark Kingdom during their lifetime.

The first attack may come in the form of a major disease such as cancer. If you successfully defeat the devil and do not die, he may bring financial ruin.

If this does not do you in, then next he may attack your children by getting them hooked on drugs. It is imperative that we both develop and continue to increase our level of faith in order to keep the devil at bay. Notice the following scripture:

“Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring Lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour: whom resist Steadfast in the faith . . .”

♥ I Peter 5:8-9

First of all, why does this scripture say that the devil is “seeking whom he may devour?” Because he can’t devour everybody! He won’t devour you if you will put on the whole armor of God. Now notice how we are to resist him—by being steadfast or firm in our faith. In other words, we must refuse to bend. We must learn how to fight the faith fight. We have to find out what God has for us and then hold on to these promises no matter what the devil sends our way. That is the faith we are to have and the kind God approves of for us. We must learn to believe and appropriate the Word of God over the circumstances sent into our lives by the devil to destroy our faith. He knows if he can get you to deny the Word concerning the circumstances he sends, then God cannot help you because your faith is not there—the *bridge* is out.

Many Christians wonder why they pray for something and it doesn’t come to pass. It is usually due to a lack of faith or patience and can be attributable to both. We must also be careful that we do not get into the area of hope and confuse it with faith. They *hope* God will heal them or bless them financially. They *hope* God will save their spouse. But this is not faith and will not work. The Bible does not say that hope pleases God or that when we pray we will receive that for which we have hoped.

The scripture found in 2 Corinthians 5:7 says that “we walk by faith and not by sight.” If we walk by sight, we are an easy target for the Dark Kingdom as

they will bring overwhelming circumstances, a virtual blitzkrieg, against our senses.

Often we are faced with problems in the natural, physical world which seem too difficult for us to cope with but, if we trust in Him and walk by faith, we come to learn that He is there all the time helping us overcome the problem.

“As for God, his way is perfect: the word of the Lord is tried: he is a Buckler [small shield] to all those that trust in him.”

♥ Psalms 18:30

If faith is so important, how do we build our faith? The Bible tells us that faith comes by hearing the Word. Therefore, we build our faith through the Word of God. Although this sounds easy, in reality it is more complicated. There are several facets to how we appropriate the Word. Hence, we must not only read, study and meditate in the Word, but also we must *hear* the Word. We can accomplish this in two ways—by listening to the Word preached and by our confession of the Word.

We can hear the Word preached at church or through recorded messages from various ministers. Our confession of the Word must be our regular affirmation of that which we believe. You cannot separate your confession from your faith. The book of James discusses this in some detail. Our true faith is reflected by our actions, which includes both our confession and what we do each day. Once we confess the Word, do we act as if it is true? If we do not, then that is not faith. We cannot believe and have faith for something and then confess differently (talk differently). Our confession will always dictate to our faith.

“... for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.”

♥ Matthew 12:34

And when we understand that faith is of the heart and not the head, we can see why the Lord made this statement. Whatever you honestly believe, will come out of your heart through your mouth.

It is important to note, however, that when you first start confessing the Word, your faith may be weak. You may not initially believe with your heart. This is why your confession of the Word is important. As you continue to confess the Word, your faith will grow and you will then believe with your heart. If you do not confess and act upon the Word, your faith will not grow concerning the particular situation Satan has sent your way. You will not have any faith to stand against the devil as 1Peter 5 says for us to do.

Remember, faith always comes as you continue to confess the Word. The Word of God is not subject to change. Only the storms Satan sends against you will change!

Confession by its very nature will either increase or decrease your faith. Most Christians remain weak because they have never confessed what God's Word says about them. As we learn to think the thoughts of God by renewing our minds with the Word of God, we find our faith beginning to grow and develop.

“For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my Ways, saith the Lord. For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so Are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your Thoughts.”

♥ Isaiah 55:8-9

THE QUALITY DECISION

There has been some teaching in the Faith Movement that there are two kinds of faith: sense-knowledge and Word faith. This is not the case. There is only *one* kind of faith—the God kind of faith—any other faith such as empirical or sense-knowledge faith, by definition, is not *true* faith.

This ties in with a subject dear to my ministry and preaching—the *Quality Decision*. A quality decision is like that made by the three Hebrew young men – friends of Daniel – who said that they would not serve the idols of the king even though it meant going into the fiery furnace. Whenever you make a quality decision for God, the Dark Kingdom will test your resolve. *Every* time they will test the decision no matter what it involves, from tithing to helping feed the poor to going on a mission trip.

We have experienced this in our own lives since we began to live by faith in 1984. We operate our ministry differently than most—we take no salary from the ministry at all. Although not condemning other ministries which accept salaries, we believe that to truly live by faith one must rely only on God and not a salary. After all, how much faith would I have to have if I was drawing \$150,000 to \$700,000 a year salary as many prominent ministers here in America are doing? That requires no faith or trust in God to meet my financial needs.

But consider your life of faith when it comes to finances. You are totally relying on God. Then, when you lose your job you are not concerned because you were not depending on it in the first place but upon God alone to meet your every need. Living totally by faith greatly increases our dependence upon God, but He honors that faith. God is “no respecter of persons” Scripture tells us—He will take care of you just like He took care of Elijah. Also, it

draws us closer to Him because we must of necessity spend more time in prayer and the Word in order to hear from Him.

Besides, where in the Bible do we see ministers living on a salary? Did Peter or Paul draw a salary? No, they did not. In fact, the opposite was true. Paul supported himself through tent making and he said we should follow his example in working to support ourselves; Peter and others were fishermen.

In 2 Thessalonians 3:7-9 I saw this principle with Paul who said that he and his co-workers Timothy and Silas were a *model* to be followed in working with their hands to support themselves among the churches. He says, “With labor and hardship we kept working night and day so that we might not be a burden to any of you; … as a model for you, that you might follow our example.”

That means they did not receive any type of salary and he says twice in these verses that they (we if we claim to be New Testament) should follow this example. Salary is something the Church got from the world. But it is more difficult to live by faith; we really do not want to be dependent upon God.

Even in the ministry, we are fearful of spiritual combat. We would prefer the battle to be like the pirate boat ride at Disney World where the cannon fire is not real and we can observe it from the safety of our boat. This attitude reveals something about our faith, or lack thereof, in God. As I have said many times before, our number one problem is that *we do not really believe the Bible* and, upon closer examination, do not really trust God.

Are you having trouble with your faith? Trouble believing that God cares for you? Do you feel as if God does not hear your prayers when you pray? Then, I have good news for you. You don't really have any problems. All you need to do is obey this one verse of Scripture:

“Have faith in God.” ♥ Mark 11:22

Make a *Quality Decision* today that you are going to trust the integrity of God’s Word and believe it with your heart. Then, search for scriptures that deal with the problem or situation wherein you need victory over the Powers of Darkness—the main area where they are attacking your life. Begin to confess what God’s Word says about the situation and not what these circumstances of life are dictating to you. If you will do this, then God will begin to move in your life. He honors His Word and He will begin to intervene on your behalf, but you must begin to exercise your faith and disregard what feelings and circumstances are telling your carnal mind. Learn to listen to your spirit—walk in the spirit and see things from a spiritual perspective.

Surely the first Apostles and disciples must have seen something in the life of Jesus which prompted them to remark:

“... Lord, increase our faith.” ♥ Luke 17:5

Spend much time meditating and learning the promises of God to you. Then begin to appropriate your faith.

Believe in the integrity of God’s Word and look for Him to honor and keep His Word to you. See the promises of God as personal promises to you. Continue to believe the Word although every circumstance in your life is screaming, “The Bible cannot be true because thus and so is happening.” Just remember, God is no liar. And He said,

“... in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.”

♥ Galatians 6:9

22

THE WORD OF GOD

**“And take ... the sword of the Spirit, which is
The word of God.” ♥ Ephesians 6:17**

The next item mentioned is the sword, an offensive weapon. The original language here for Word of God is *Rhema Theos*. Our lack of understanding and erroneous teaching in the Church of this fact has caused us to not understand this portion of the Scriptures. It has caused some problems for us in the area of spiritual warfare because this is a powerful concept.

It is not the *Logos*, the written Word of the Bible, which the devil fears. The Bible sitting on your coffee table at home does not threaten the devil. No, it is the *Rhema* that he fears. It is the spoken Word of God, the *Logos* coming out of your mouth as a *Rhema* Word that he fears. This fact ties in with your confession. We have not understood this truth. For years we have all held up our Bibles in church and said, “I have my sword with me.” No, that is not the sword being referred to here. This is the spoken Word when you speak the Bible (*Logos*) out of your mouth. This is why the devil fights you whenever you plan to spend time in the study and meditation of God’s *Logos* Word. It is only as we learn and assimilate the *Logos* into our spirits that we can speak the *Rhema* that he fears so much. He will attempt to stop the *Logos* from becoming a *Rhema* because it is then that you are in faith and are dangerous to him. Once you realize the power in the *Rhema* of God, you will never be the

same. God Himself often speaks to us by a *Rhema* Word as we are studying the *Logos*. He will make a passage of Scripture jump out at us as we are reading or seeking direction from Him for our lives. Or perhaps He will give us a *Rhema* by saying, “Read Matthew 6:33.” He is wishing to give us a specific Word for our situation and circumstances.

The *Rhema* holds creative power because God used a *Rhema* to speak the worlds into existence. So we can speak to our circumstances and command them to line up with our confession and the *Logos* of God.

“But the righteousness which is of faith speaketh ...”

♥ Romans 10:6

This scripture emphasizes the importance of the *Rhema* word as a word of faith spoken by you. If you are ever going to move into an area of faith where God can really use your life the way He planned, you must come to a realization that the Word of God has to become first in your life. Learn not to pay attention to the circumstances, but believe the Word only. It is a higher revelation of Truth. By believing as you read the Word, you begin to live on a higher realm—the realm where God lives.

Let me illustrate how this faith works from the personal testimonies of some men I know. The last time Kathryn Kuhlman was in Houston, two women in wheel chairs were healed. They pushed their wheelchairs to the front of the Astrodome after being healed of multiple sclerosis. Each of the women were married to men I knew who were presidents of two different chapters of the Full Gospel Business Men (FGBMFI). One of the women stayed healed by acting on her faith. The other, upon returning to her doctor, was told that there was no way she could be healed of her disease (even though she was walking!). Instead of continuing to stand upon her faith, she let the Dark Kingdom through the lips of one doctor, destroy her life. Within a few weeks

she was back in the wheelchair and she died a few months later. This in spite of the fact that she had gotten up out of a wheelchair and walked. Yet instead of standing steadfast in her faith and not wavering (James 1), she began to believe an “imagination” erected by the Dark Kingdom and it cost her her life.

Did God want her healed? Of course, He healed her didn’t He? Was it God’s will that she die? No! God would not have healed her at the Kathryn Kuhlman meeting if He didn’t want her well. But the Dark Kingdom came and stole her confession of faith away from her and she died. How about you? What is your confession? Are you standing against the “imaginings” of the Dark Kingdom?

“...for I am watching to see that my word is fulfilled.”

♥ Jeremiah 1:12 NIV

“For ever, O Lord, thy word is settled in heaven.”

♥ Psalm 119:89

The Word of the Lord is settled in Heaven as this scripture points out. And the Lord wants His Word to be settled in your heart so that He can establish your path and direct your thoughts. As long as it is not, He cannot help you much. Remember this important spiritual fact. You will only remain saved, healed, etc., as long as you *believe*. Faith is a continuous action; not a one-time thing.

GIVE GREAT RESPECT TO THE WORD

You must treat the Word of God with the honor and respect that it deserves. Too many Christians esteem lightly the Lord and do not honor Him even though He *is* the Word! That means you must spend time in the Word. You must not only study it, but you must meditate upon it as Joshua and David did.

It is only as you pay attention to the Word that God can help you *through* the Word because only then does the *Logos* Word become a *Rhema*.

“My son, attend to my words,” ♥ Proverbs 4:20

We find much written in the Bible about words and their power. Jesus Himself talked about the most important parable to understand being that of the Sower sowing the word. James the apostle and half-brother of Jesus had much to say about this subject. He talks about the tongue being like a rudder that steers a ship.

Your tongue, your confession, can be greatly used against you by the Dark Kingdom. It is imperative that you study and meditate in God’s Word so that your thinking becomes like His. Then, and only then, can you be transformed into the image of Christ which the Holy Spirit is fashioning you into. In addition, I learned from a lengthy prophetic dream or night vision the Lord gave me in Helena, Montana, in 1997, that the Word of God is a very necessary ingredient, in fact the most important one, in finding the will of God. The Lord showed me that unless a Christian spends a great deal of time meditating in the Word of God he only has a 25% chance of fulfilling the perfect will of God for his life. The Lord showed me that the Word of God is like a catalyst that helps unlock the plans He has placed within a person’s heart. So if you want God’s perfect will for your life I would encourage you to spend a minimum of several hours a day reading and meditating in the Word. Be disciplined in the Word and your prayer life and it will bear fruit.

If you feel as if Satan has viciously attacked you with the sword of sorrow in this life, take joy in the Word of God and be established in His thinking; learn how He sees you and change your thinking to be in line with His Word. Then your life will reflect the words written by the Prophet Joel:

“And I will restore to you the years that the locust hath eaten.”

♥ Joel 2:25

23

SANCTIFICATION

**“For both he that sanctifieth and they who are
Sanctified are of one: for which cause he is not
Ashamed to call them brethren.” ♥ Hebrews 2:11**

One of the weapons of our warfare which is much misunderstood is that of sanctification. There is such a doctrine of sanctification taught in the Bible. It is important to understand what it means.

The word sanctification is found only five times in the Scriptures, but the words *sanctified* and *sanctify* are found over one hundred times. They occur 110 times in the Old Testament and thirty-one times in the New Testament.

What does the doctrine of sanctification mean? First of all, it does not deal strictly with sin as we might suppose. There are a variety of things dealt with in the Bible other than human beings when it comes to sanctification. The Bible discusses the sanctification of such things as the tabernacle and its furnishings, Solomon's temple and its furnishings, the priestly garments, offerings and even the gates of Jerusalem.

Many different persons in both Testaments are spoken of as being sanctified. From this usage, we see that the term does not so much mean the removal of sin from a person, but the setting aside of that person or object as being a sacred object to accomplish the divine will of God. People, especially the priests and ministers of God, must be cleansed of sin; however, this merely means that the cleansing must take place before or in conjunction with the consecration of that person or object for the work of God.

Therefore, the term sanctification in its purest sense means the setting apart or the separation of a thing or person for sacred purposes in doing the will of God. Heathen kings, such as Cyrus and others, were never cleansed of sin as far as we know, yet they were set apart by God to achieve His purposes in the world. He often uses such heathen leaders as His instruments of chastening to bring His chosen people, nations, or the Church back to what He has called them to do. God is still at work in this manner within the Church today. He can still use an unrighteous judge or other person as a *sanctified* person to accomplish His purposes.

Therefore, we see that persons can be sanctified without the thought of sin being involved. The Scripture teaches, for example, that Jesus sanctified Himself (John 17:19) and we know that the Lord never sinned.

Sanctification is also used of the Holy Spirit as He sanctifies sinners through the Blood of Christ (I Peter 1:2, 18-23; Hebrews 10:29). He also sanctifies sinners with or by the Word (John 3:5; 15:3; II Thess. 2:13).

With respect to man, we are told that man can sanctify himself by setting himself apart from sin to serve God (Lev. 11:44; II Cor. 7:1; James 4:8-10)

Both the Hebrew and Greek words imply that sanctification means to pronounce clean or holy and to purify a person or object from secular, worldly use for a sacred purpose.

In its complete sense, sanctification can be past, present or future. A person becomes sanctified as a definite act of their will when they consecrate their life to God. Then God makes that person holy through the Gospel as one obtains salvation and receives Christ, who is their sanctification. This concept was well understood by many great men of God such as John Wesley, the founder of Methodism. Another example from the Bible was Cornelius found in Acts 10. His sanctification led to his eventual salvation as God sent an angel to instruct him to send men to Joppa where Simon Peter was staying so that Cornelius and his whole household could receive salvation. Had he not been sanctified, he probably would never have obtained salvation.

Present or progressive sanctification, as we understand it from the Scriptures, refers to our being “conformed to the image of Christ.” We are not yet completely sanctified, but we are striving to be so as we are continually washed with the water of the Word each day (if we are spending time in the Word) and we begin to think the “thoughts” of God as mentioned in Isaiah 55. God gave the Bible to aid us in this process of progressive sanctification. As we study and meditate on the Word, we gain a new perspective on things and we begin to see things spiritually. The Word sanctifies us as it changes our thinking to be in line with God’s. Yet this is progressive. It does not happen overnight—it requires a lifetime.

The area of progressive sanctification is one where there is much confusion in the Church today. It is not taught much anymore, especially among Charismatic churches. Most of these churches teach that everything bad which happens to you is from the devil.

Even though we are discussing the Dark Kingdom here and all the evil they do, we should emphasize that often the *bad things* that happen to us are because of the sanctifying work of the Holy Spirit. We see them as bad, but in reality they are for our good. One of His duties in the earth today is to conform Christians into the image of Christ. Because we are His (Jesus’) Body, we must be conformed to His image. Yet our flesh with its sin nature does not want to be conformed to His image so our flesh wars against the Spirit and our own spirits. Paul wrote much about this in Romans and Corinthians. Our flesh is used to having its own way so we resist the

sanctifying work of the Holy Spirit. And because it is painful to our flesh, we attribute it to the devil as an attack.

When we find ourselves continuously resisting the sanctifying work of the Holy Spirit, we are not only fighting against our very Creator, but our spiritual maturation as well. We must do our part and spend time with the Lord to let Him have His way in our lives and allow ourselves to be “conformed to His image.”

Future sanctification, as implied, must occur in the future. This will happen when we are made holy forever in body, soul and spirit at the resurrection of the spiritual body. This ultimately must occur in Heaven at the resurrection of the body promised in the Scriptures. References include I Thess. 3:13; 5:23; I Pet. 1:3-9; Romans 2:7 and many other scriptures.

Sanctification is important in spiritual warfare because only as a Christian is allowing the sanctifying work of the Spirit of God to be accomplished in his life, is he able to wage a good spiritual warfare against the Dark Kingdom. It is therefore extremely important to spend much time with God in prayer and meditation in the Word to allow the Holy Spirit to show you the work He is trying to accomplish in your life. If you do not, you are not allowing Him to be your Helper because you are fighting against Him. Had Judas, Saul, Esau, Gehazi and countless others from the Bible done this, they would not have ended up the way they did.

In addition, as discussed in our book *The Gifts and Operations of the Holy Spirit*, it is very important to develop the Fruit of the Spirit (Gal. 5) in your life because the *degree* to which you develop each of these nine spiritual fruits will be “the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ” (Eph. 4:13) that the Holy Spirit sees in you. Remember, He wants to conform us to Jesus’ image but we have a part to play.

24

TRUST IN GOD

**“As for God, his way is perfect; the word of the Lord
Is tried: he is a buckler to all them that trust in him.”**

♥ II Samuel 22:31

**“In God have I put my trust: I will not be afraid of
What Man can do unto me.”**

♥ Psalm 56:11

Perhaps the greatest lesson of the Christian life is learning to trust in God our Father. When unpleasant circumstances come our way in this life, we begin to question God and play a non-spiritual game called “Why Me.”

We must settle the issue once and for all that God loves us and that He is on our side to help us and not do us harm. Psalm 56:9 says, “This I know, that God is for me.” Realize in the midst of the spiritual storm you are in that God is for you! This particular weapon—that of trust—ties in closely with faith. We must trust Him and obey Mark 11:22 which says, “Have faith in God.”

This is especially true if you’re called to Five-fold ministry because if you have not settled the issue about *trust* where God is concerned the devil will wear you out with doubt all the days of your ministry until you quit.

In the midst of your spiritual warfare, God is there to strengthen you and help you. Crises always reveal character. The old saying that it takes a lot of pressure to make a diamond holds true in the spiritual realm as well. Trust God no matter what the circumstances! Satan sends all those distressful circumstances into your life to shake your faith and trust in God. He wants to disturb your peace. If he can accomplish this goal, God will be unable to help you much because you will not be in faith. So, you must make up your mind once and for all now that no matter what happens, you will trust God and believe the Bible. Know that God is for you and that He cares affectionately for you.

I am the clay. He is the Potter. Shall the clay say to the potter, “You don’t know what you are doing?” Trust Him. God is allowing the circumstances to come into your life in order to build and strengthen your faith.

“But we had the sentence of death in ourselves, that we should not Trust in ourselves, but in God which raiseth the dead: Who delivered Us from so great a death, and doth deliver: in whom we trust that he Will yet deliver us;” ♥ II Corinthians 1:9-10

And another fact we must bear in mind when we are going through trials is that sometimes God is disciplining us. He is our Father and He loves us. Like an earthly father, there are many times when discipline is required. The teaching going around that if you are in God’s perfect will nothing bad will ever happen to you is simply not true! There is no scripture which substantiates this preposterous and damaging doctrine! Was Jesus in the perfect will of God? He was whipped, spat on and crucified. How about Joseph? He was in prison twelve years for being moral and honest. Daniel?

We can learn something about Satan from studying the book of Job. Job was a righteous man, yet Satan attacked him in his role as the accuser of the brethren. God allowed him to be buffeted by the devil just as He did Paul and others. The Scriptures even say that Jesus learned from His suffering:

“But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the Suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour: that he by the Grace of God should taste death for every man. For it became him, For whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing Many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect Through sufferings.”

♥ Hebrews 2:9-10

“So also Christ glorified not himself to be made an high priest; but he That said unto him, Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee. As He saith also in another place, Thou art a priest for ever after the Order of Melchisedec. Who in the days of his flesh, when he had Offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears Unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that He feared; though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the Things which he suffered; And being made perfect, he became the Author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him.”

♥ Hebrews 5:5-9

These are indeed startling scriptures. From them and many others we learn that we will endure sufferings just as Jesus, Paul, Joseph, Jeremiah and others. Jesus said we would have tribulation as long as we were in this world. Why does God discipline us with tribulation?

“Moreover, we have all had human fathers who disciplined us and we Respected them for it. How much more should we submit to the Father of our spirits and live! Our fathers disciplined us for a little While as they thought best; but God disciplines us for our good, that We may share in his holiness. No discipline seems pleasant at the Time, but painful. Later on, however, it produces a harvest of Righteousness and peace for those who have been trained by it.”

♥ Hebrews 12:9-11 NIV

This scripture tells us that discipline is for training so that we might share in God’s holiness. So we see His purposes for discipline and why it is necessary.

He does it not for punishment but because He loves us and wants to conform us to the image of Jesus. It is only through suffering and tribulation that we can be so conformed. God loves us no matter what—God is love. His love—unlike human love which says, “I’ll love you if you will do thus and so and meet all of my needs”—is unconditional. No, God loves us no matter what and He loves those outside the Kingdom of God as well. His love does not depend on our behavior. But He cannot tolerate sin in Heaven so even though He loves all, without repentance and acceptance of Christ, a person cannot go to Heaven.

If your life has struck an iceberg or is taking on water from a torpedo fired by the devil causing you not to trust God, spend some time in the Psalms meditating on the attributes of God. It is in the Psalms that we obtain the clearest picture of what God is like. Learn to trust Him. Know that His love for you is both unconditional and eternal. He is on your side. If you do not learn to trust God regardless of circumstances, then the Dark Kingdom will use this as a weapon against you.

One of the greatest weapons Satan uses against Christians is condemnation. He often cranks up his satellite system and starts blasting your mind with forceful thoughts of condemnation when you commit a sin.

“God doesn’t love you anymore. You can’t be a Christian or you wouldn’t have done that. You’ve committed the unpardonable sin. Blah, blah, blah!” Just tell him to shut his mouth while you continue believing the Bible’s promises to you as a son of God and joint heir with Jesus.

“He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how Shall he not with him also freely give us all things?”

♥ Romans 8:32

God is for you and He wants to meet your needs. Learn to trust Him and come to Him when you are under attack. By resisting the devil’s suggestions that God no longer loves you, you will be able to use your trust in God as a potent weapon in your warfare.

25

PRAYER

**“Praying always with all prayer and supplication
In the Spirit ...” ♥ Ephesians 6:18**

Other translations of this important passage of scripture include: (1) Edgar Goodspeed— “Use every kind of prayer and entreaty, and at every opportunity pray in the Spirit,” and (2) Weymouth—“and be always on the alert to seize opportunities for doing so, with unwearied persistence and entreaty on behalf of all the saints.”

The subject, of course, is prayer. It is an important part of not only the armor of God, but also the most effective offensive weapon at our disposal. Yes, *the greatest weapon of our spiritual warfare is prayer.* We have learned this in our ministry and it has been emphasized by both current and former servants of the Dark Kingdom. Prayer is one of the most powerful spiritual forces which they cannot withstand. When a person or a group of Christians begins to pray, it causes confusion in the evil government. They find it difficult if not impossible, depending on the amount and intensity of prayer, to carry out their wicked assignments. According to former Agents of the devil, they were dispersed from their activities by warring angels as a result of Christians praying. This must be the reason Satan fights prayer so much. He knows he cannot be successful as long as Christians are praying.

Evangelist Omoobajesu almost lost his life while in the Dark Kingdom because of prayer. His spirit was not able to return to his body one night because a woman in the compound where he was staying had been praying all night.

Omoobajesu told me something quite amazing, “Because of her prayers, all the doors were closed in the spirit realm even though they were open in the physical realm. When someone prays in Jesus’ Name, walls are fortified and no spirit can penetrate until the person stops praying.”

Although the most significant weapon we possess is the ability and privilege to pray, few Christians exercise this privilege at all, and those who do often express an inadequacy and a dissatisfaction with their prayer life.

When you pray, you are able to tap the resources of the infinite power of God. Therefore, prayer is the greatest weapon which we possess. In addition to being a defensive weapon, it is also one of our two greatest offensive weapons along with the Word of God. There are many testimonies by former Rulers of Darkness regarding the offensive power of prayer against them causing loss of human life in the Dark Kingdom.

But when we consider our own prayer lives as Christians, we often feel inadequate. We know we should pray more, but we find prayer boring or else we fail to see the value and relevance of praying. Let’s face it. Prayer is hard work and it is difficult. And because of its mighty power against the Dark Kingdom, Satan fights us every step of the way.

Often we adopt the baby Christian attitude that prayer is a last resort when everything we have tried on our own has failed. God does not want us to have this attitude. So before going into specific types of prayers and how to use each as a spiritual weapon, let’s briefly discuss prayer in general and examine some problem areas we all have.

PROBLEMS WITH PRAYER

We know that prayer is first and foremost a communication with God. Without prayer, we are unable to have two way communication with God. So, *effective prayer requires both speaking and listening.*

When discussing some of the problems and attitudes which interfere with our ability to pray effectively, there are several areas which hinder us.

First, and perhaps foremost is priority. Even if we recognize that prayer is important, often we do not assign it the proper priority. When you get right down to it, priority is spelled T-I-M-E. How we order and live our lives reveals our priorities. And if we do not spend much time in prayer, then it is obvious to God and to us, if we are honest, that it is not a priority in our lives. This, we might add, is also a primary reason for unanswered prayer. Let me illustrate with something learned from the Spirit.

Let us suppose you are praying and believing God to save your husband. How much time are you spending in prayer, spiritual warfare, to bring this to pass? God is on the Throne watching and He is looking for your faith which, as we have seen, must be in line with your actions. How can God see any faith present in this prayer request if you spend two minutes praying for Him to save your husband and five hours watching television every day? If you are serious about wanting to see your husband saved, then enter into combat prayer with *intensity* and you will spend several hours a day praying effectively. Once you learn this truth, it will not be long before the answer comes.

But let's face it—our life *is* our priority. When we spend two minutes praying for a person versus five hours watching television, thirty minutes reading the newspaper, and three hours a week shopping, then is it not obvious to God that we are not serious about prayer? We are not really serious about whatever request we are making to Him; we are not demonstrating faith. He wants to

help us, but He cannot because our faith is not there and without faith it is impossible for God to help us.

Second, we have a problem in the area of knowing *how* to pray. There have been volumes written about prayer, but most of the books deal with general praying. What about specific praying? Does the Bible teach us anything specifically about praying? Can we study every prayer in the Bible and discover that there are different types of prayer mentioned? If so, do we know how to use each one effectively? This understanding of the types of prayer should be part of our spiritual maturation.

And *third*, a major problem we have is we do not know how to listen. What good does it do us to correct the first two deficiencies if we are not able to clearly hear what God is saying in reply to our prayers? We have to learn how to listen. This is particularly difficult for us here in America because we are so activity-oriented. We find it difficult to even listen to our spouse for any length of time without tuning them out. Usually, this tuning out is unintentional, but it occurs nonetheless and is a major cause of divorce.

It is instructive to study the research that has been done in the area of listening skills. I recommend that you do so as it will help you in all interpersonal relationships. There are many mistakes made in the business world simply because someone did not possess good listening skills. Is not the same true because of our inability to listen to the Holy Spirit?

The Holy Spirit is searching for men and women who will make prayer a priority in their lives. It is only through the power of prevailing prayer that we will be able to have any meaningful effect or change upon this world. God knows this and, unfortunately, so does the devil. Consequently, he wars against the prayer life of every Christian.

Once we have established the power and priority prayer must have in our lives, we need only realize the necessity of a quality decision to make prayer a priority by spending time in prayer each day at a regular time. If we wait till

we have time to pray, we never will. We have a plaque about prayer in our entry way at home. It is a poem titled “The Difference” by Alan Grant.

“I got up early one morning
And rushed right into the day;
I had so much to accomplish
That I didn’t have time to pray.
Problems just tumbled around me,
And heavier came each task.
“Why doesn’t God help me?” I wondered.
He answered, “You didn’t ask.”
I wanted to see joy and beauty,
But the day toiled on, gray and bleak;
I wondered why God didn’t show me.
He said, “But you didn’t seek.”
I tried to come into God’s presence;
I used all my keys at the lock.
God gently and lovingly chided,
“My child you didn’t knock.”
I woke up early this morning,
And paused before entering the day;
I had so much to accomplish that
I had to take time to pray.”

This poem shows not only the necessity of prayer, but also places the proper priority upon prayer. Prayer should be the very foundation of our day. It should be the first thing on our daily agenda and the last thing before we retire. We must become disciplined prayer warriors to be used effectively by the Lord in spiritual warfare. Curiously enough, as we make prayer a serious business, we find that we still have problems, but are calm and not anxious about the outcome. We should expect this Peace of God to flood us and it does. Consider the following:

“Be anxious for nothing, but in everything by prayer
And supplication with thanksgiving, let your requests
Be made known to God; and the peace of God, which
Surpasses all understanding, will guard your hearts and
Minds through Christ Jesus.” ♥ Philippians 4:6-7 NKJV

Once we have made our supplication or requests to God, we should realize by faith that it is settled. The answer is on its way. When we bring the Word of God to Him in our prayers, we are confident that He will answer speedily. One of my favorite verses emphasizes this Truth.

“For ever, O Lord, thy word is settled in heaven.”

♥ Psalm 119:89

Because the Word is settled in Heaven, it should also be settled in our hearts. Then, after it is settled in our hearts, we experience the peace of God.

Concerning the importance and priority of prayer, consider the early Church. In the early days of the Church there was a regular hour of prayer established. They made it a priority just as the Jews did.

Study the great men and women of God and look at their prayer life. They were always great men and women of prayer. This includes the Lord Himself. If He had the need to pray all night on a number of occasions then how much more do we need to do likewise?

The necessity of prayer is even more important to those in the Five-fold ministry. If a minister does not make prayer an important part of his life, he will never achieve the goals and ultimate ministry God has for him. And in the days in which we are living, with the greater intensity of spiritual combat, it will be difficult for such a person to even stay in the ministry.

Most prominent ministers begin to lose their anointing when they fail to continue in prayer after they become “famous.” They become too busy for God, proving that their ministry is too much for them. Whenever you become too busy to pray, you have become too busy.

But prayer must be equally as important to each Christian involved in spiritual warfare. Without effective prayer, you are up against Goliath with no weapon. You should spend regular time in prayer each day, but when you encounter a very serious problem, go to the Lord in prayer and *stay there* until you have the answer. Don't expect God to answer or be able to hear His answer if you are not serious about prayer. But if you will seriously seek God, I can assure you that He will answer you.

“And ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye shall search for
Me with all your heart.” ♥ Jeremiah 29:13

Whenever we are serious with God, He is serious with us. But too often in America we expect God to be like a fast-food chain. We want instant answers. God does not operate this way. He has infinite patience because He is Eternal. He wants not only to answer our prayers, but also to teach us some things about prayer.

Whenever our ministry teaches on prayer, we always begin by suggesting that individuals begin a study of prayer. Go through the entire Bible and find examples of all the different kinds of prayer, how each was used, who prayed them and what were the results? Can you determine if the prayer was answered? If so, how long did it take? This type study in itself will answer many of the questions you may still have on prayer. You will find that there is no evidence in the Scriptures of what is called “unanswered prayer.”

What we find when we take the time to make this study is primarily two things: (1) God answers prayer, and (2) there are indeed different types of prayers in the Bible. We cannot simply use the word prayer and be accurate. We must differentiate between the different types of prayer much as we do colors of the rainbow—they are all part of the visible light spectrum as a whole in the rainbow but each is different. So is prayer. And because God is a God who must work according to the Word He gave us, we have to learn to bring chapter and verse to God concerning prayer.

“Thus saith the Lord, the Holy One of Israel, and his Maker, ‘Ask me Of things to come concerning my sons and concerning the work of My hands command ye me.’” ♥ Isaiah 45:11

PRAYER REQUIRES PATIENCE

But if we pray correctly, God always answers, though not right away in most cases. Herein lies our chief problem in unanswered prayer. When we do pray correctly and in faith expecting God to answer, we lack patience. Let me illustrate the importance of this spiritual truth with a *Rhema* word from the Lord from which I developed a sermon series titled “Faith and Patience: The Keys to Receiving from God.”

During a time of prolonged prayer in 1985, the Lord spoke the following to me which was quite a revelation concerning why most people do not receive from God.

“Most people do not receive from Me because they are not in My Family. If the little boy living next door to you came over, rang the doorbell and you noticed his clothes were tattered and torn and he looked as if he were starving, you might help him with food or money. But you are not *obligated* to do so because he is not in your family. It’s the same with Me.

“In My Family, *most* Christians do not receive from Me because they do not know *how* to receive from Me. And most Spirit-filled Christians who know how to receive from Me do not receive because their faith does not possess patience.”

Go over this statement from the Lord and think about it. The following day He confirmed what He had spoken while I was reading the Scriptures. When I was reading in Hebrews, the words jumped out at me to confirm this truth:

“For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could swear By no greater, he sware by himself, saying, ‘Surely blessing I will Bless thee, and multiplying I will multiply thee.’ And so, after he had Patiently endured, he obtained the promise.” ♥ Hebrews 6:13-15

Among other scriptures which confirm the need of patience are:

“Cast not away therefore your confidence, which hath great Recompence of reward. For ye have need of patience, that, after ye Have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise.”

♥ Hebrews 10:35-36

Yes, we must possess patience if we are to receive answers to our prayers. We can also learn this lesson from great men of prayer in the Bible such as Daniel who prayed three times a day.

“And he said unto me, O Daniel, a man greatly beloved, understand The words that I speak unto thee, and stand upright: for unto thee am I now sent. And when he had spoken this word unto me, I stood Trembling. Then said he unto me, ‘Fear not, Daniel: for from the first Day that thou didst set thine heart to understand, and to chasten Thyself before thy God, thy words were heard, and I am come for Thy words. But the prince of Persia withheld me one and twenty Days.’”

♥ Daniel 10:11-13

In addition to learning something about spiritual warfare from this passage, there is also something else quite important which most Christians do not realize. *God heard the prayer and sent the answer right away.* God answers, but the problem we have is on the receiving end. What would have happened if Daniel had not continued praying? What if his faith did not possess patience? What if after three days he said as we often do, “Well, I guess God

didn't hear me. I don't know why I even bother to pray. He never does answer my prayers!" Do you think he would have received an answer? I doubt it.

For the spiritual warfare to be so intense as to require twenty-one days for the angels of God to break through shows the power of the Dark Kingdom. You see, the angel bringing the message had to travel through these thirteen planes above the earth we call the heavens above the earth (there are three heavens in Scripture). In traveling through the demon-infested heavens above the earth, great spiritual warfare occurred. Without continual prayer, the angel would not have made it through to Daniel. This is why the Bible admonishes us to pray without ceasing!

PRAAYER AND THE EARLY CHURCH

We can also learn a good deal about prayer from the early Church, particularly from the book of Acts. The more we do this, the more we realize just how far from the prayer models they gave us has the Church today drifted. We see this overall and in particular in the area of corporate prayer because this type of prayer was much in evidence in the early Church. But it is an endangered species today. As already mentioned, were it not for this type praying, Peter would not have been freed from prison by an angel—he would have died there by the hand of Herod who was being controlled by the Dark Kingdom and had already killed the Apostle James, John's brother.

The early Church was born and filled with power through a prayer meeting. Before Jesus ascended to the Father, He told the disciples to wait in Jerusalem for the promise of the Father in sending the Holy Spirit. So they waited in the upper room there in Jerusalem until the day of Pentecost. But do you think they were waiting around and doing nothing those fifty days? In all probability they were praying and worshipping God. I believe they were. As we see in Acts, those in the early Church made prayer a priority. The early Church also knew the power and importance of praying for one another. They knew we are commanded to pray for one another. This truth was well known by great men of God even in the Old Testament. Consider this statement by Samuel:

“God forbid that I should sin against the Lord in ceasing to pray for you.” ♥ I Samuel 12:23

What an extraordinary statement! The prophet and leader Samuel says that *not* to pray for Saul and the people was a sin. Can we draw any conclusions from this relative to the Church praying for one another as well as their ministers/leaders today?

Jesus went even a step farther when He commanded us to pray for our enemies, a difficult task.

“Bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use You.” ♥ Luke 6:28

Many of us can quote Luke 6:38 because money is dear to our hearts. But how many can quote, much less obey Luke 6:28? Why does the Lord tell us to pray for our enemies? There are probably many reasons, but one thing we know—it is impossible to hate someone we have prayed for very much. And we know that hate is a very destructive emotion. Unforgiveness and hatred are perhaps the most devastating spiritual sins because they can send you to hell according to I John. They will also cut us off from receiving of God in our prayer life quicker than anything else. And if Jesus commanded us to pray for our enemies in such a manner, how much more should we pray for our friends, relatives, political leaders and ministers in the Church.

FASTING AND PRAYER

Before we turn to the various types of prayer given in the Bible, we should briefly discuss the role of fasting.

Not much is written today about fasting and to be honest, not many Christians practice fasting on a regular basis (if at all). But the Bible mentions fasting on

many occasions. For example, why did Moses fast forty days? Why did Jesus fast forty days? What about others such as Daniel who fasted? What was their purpose? Do we understand fasting and its importance today? Probably there are few who do and I do not claim to be one of them. But having learned a few things by personal fasting, the following comments are offered.

First of all, fasting must be accompanied by prayer. Other than the physical benefits of fasting, you won't accomplish much without prayer—they go together. If you are not able to sanctify yourself for much prayer, then you may be wasting your time in going on a fast if it's for spiritual reasons.

Fasting does not change God. How often have you heard this statement made by ministers? Often, but I do not believe it is accurate. While it is true the Bible teaches that God never changes, it is reasonable to assume that this applies only to His character, behavior, nature and attributes such as honesty, love and kindness.

It is clear from Scripture that He can and does change His mind as a result of intercession. There are many examples of this with Abraham, Moses, Hezekiah and others. And because fasting and prayer go together, perhaps it influences God favorably. We can see a clear example of this even with the wicked when King Ahab fasted and God postponed judgment (I Kings 21).

However, we do know that fasting has a big influence in the spirit realm as well. It also makes us more aware of spiritual things. It seems to increase our spiritual awareness.

Although I have fasted often and for up to twenty-one days, I cannot actually say I have noticed any supernatural manifestations because of the fasting. I have been on a long fast when many miracles were witnessed in Africa, but the same thing has occurred at other times when I was not fasting. We do fast a lot in Africa because of the extreme demon power and I believe we have more spiritual power as a result, but it is hard to quantify.

The only real examples I can give involve church ministry when I was attacked by demon-possessed men like the mad man of Gedara. They were not able to get close due, I believe, to greater spiritual power as a result of fasting and prayer. They were knocked down by the power of God as they sought to put their hands on me. However, I am not unequivocally able to determine just what effect the fasting had upon this outcome.

But one of the reasons I know that fasting is important is because Jesus included it in three steps He gave me for receiving a miracle when He appeared to me in a vision on October 19, 1998, in Elliston, Montana.

The Lord said these three steps can be used by anyone to receive a miracle from Him: (1) He said, “Find it”—find Scriptures to cover what you are believing the Lord for, (2) “Fast it,” He said, “like Daniel did,” and (3) He said, “Let your words and your actions be in line with the promise and act as if you already possess the promise you are believing Me for.”

TYPES OF PRAYER

Let us now turn to the different types of prayer mentioned in the Bible for a brief discussion of each. This discussion is by no means comprehensive, but the following will give you the basics from which to begin your own studies to improve your prayer life.

Clearly, there are different types of prayers in the Bible. There are at least twelve different types, although some are closely related. Studying them will allow us to understand our key scripture found in Ephesians 6:18 on prayer. We are told to pray with all [kinds of] prayer and supplication. In other words, we should use every type of prayer found in the Bible. Each has a different purpose or God would not have placed it there. A more literal translation of the Greek in 6:18 would be, “by means of all prayer and petition [earnestly].” Simply stated, we are to learn how to pray with every type of prayer and to *earnestly* and fervently pray.

The literal Greek we often translate as earnest prayer means “to pray with prayer.” This means our attitude in prayer is also important—we are to be fervent or earnest in prayer. This is the literal Greek in James 5:17 where the Bible tells us how Elijah prayed. When the Holy Spirit opened my understanding in 1981 to effective prayer from this scripture, my father, who I had prayed for over twenty years, accepted Christ within six months and he had never been inside a church building more than once a year in his life. This attitude of prayer, earnest prayer with great tears and intercession, is very important in spiritual warfare.

I believe this is one reason that the Apostles who walked with the Lord noticed a big difference in the prayer life of Jesus versus their own. They must have seen quite a contrast or they would not have said, “Lord, teach us how to pray.” They also must have noticed how much time the Lord devoted to prayer and the peaceful effect upon His human body. How many times did they wait as He prayed all night? If Jesus so emphasized the importance of prayer, how much more do we need to pray? And to be effective, we must pray according to the Word. The types of prayer mentioned include:

1. CORPORATE PRAYER

This type prayer is when the Church, as defined by more than two or three members, comes together to pray about a situation. Jesus said that where two or more are gathered together in my Name I am in the midst of them. However, this type of prayer we define as being more than two or three. For example, a local church might be called together to pray over starting a ministry, another branch church, or the building fund. This is Corporate Prayer. The Bible tells us that one person can put a thousand to flight and two, ten thousand. This shows us the exponential power of Corporate Prayer. Imagine the power when a whole church comes together in Corporate Prayer. We find examples of this type prayer in Acts 1:12-14 and in Acts 12, among other locations in the Bible.

There is great benefit in this type of praying. Church congregations or prayer groups should practice this type prayer with great regularity. Churches don’t

do enough of this kind of praying today. If they would begin, many of the problems they are faced with from the Dark Kingdom would just evaporate in a matter of months.

2. CONTINUAL OR PREVAILING PRAYER

We can find this type prayer discussed in Acts 12:1-16; II Timothy 1:1-3; I Thessalonians 5:17; and I Timothy 5:5.

This type prayer is where you just pray until the answer comes. This prayer is not confined to the church building, but carries over to your home and while in your car. It is best, of course, if you can combine it with fasting and separate yourself away in your prayer closet. But if not, you can still pray continually while going about your daily duties.

Most Christians would get probably a 75% improvement in their prayer lives if they would just do this type praying over certain situations. For example, let's say you have an unsaved loved one. If you tell God that you are going to be in continual prayer until that person accepts Christ and you do so, it will not be long before these prayers are answered. But you must make a quality decision to do this and stick with it as the Dark Kingdom will test your resolve. Consider what happened when this prayer was used for Peter:

“Now about that time Herod the king stretched forth his hands to vex Certain of the church. And he killed James the brother of John with The sword. And because he saw it pleased the Jews, he proceeded Further to take Peter also. (Then were the days of unleavened bread.) And when he had apprehended him, he put him in prison, ... but Prayer was made without ceasing of the church unto God for him.”

♥ Acts 12:1-5

Just remember, if they had not been praying with this type prayer, Peter would not have come out of prison—he never would have written First and Second Peter; he would have been killed by a ploy of the Dark Kingdom.

But I have found in my own life, particularly when I am interceding for someone, that this type prayer is also effective. A friend of mine developed terminal stomach cancer in 1982. I told him I would not let him die. I interceded for him each day with this type prayer and also went to his house to pray over him. He did not die and is still alive today. I attribute it to this type prayer. I believe the Church could do wonders with this type prayer today if we truly loved one another, understood our spiritual authority and weren't so lazy. But instead, we do not use it. We value our own time more than the lives of those who need us to pray this type prayer on their behalf. But it is a very powerful prayer which you can also use in your own individual life as well.

3. PRAYER OF THANKSGIVING

We find this type prayer in Psalm 116:2; Philippians 4:6; and in Colossians 1:12-13.

This prayer, of course, is one where you simply give thanks to God for all He has done for you. It is good to give thanks to the Lord! Our giving thanks is also a demonstration of our faith that God is answering our prayers. Consequently, this type prayer is very effective when used with other types of prayer such as the prayer of faith and the prayer of petition. And God is no different from earthly parents, He enjoys us coming to Him with thanks instead of always only coming to Him with a laundry list of things we want or else presenting our problems to Him.

Imagine how you would feel if your child never said, “I love you.” They never crawl up in your lap and say, “Mom, Dad, I just want to say thank you for providing for me. I love you.” Should our Heavenly Father not deserve the same attention on a regular basis?

4. PRAYER OF COMMITMENT

This type prayer is also called the prayer of consecration or sanctification. You'll remember that sanctification is also a weapon of spiritual warfare. We find this prayer in Acts 13:1-3; Matthew 26:36-44; and in Luke 22. This prayer, in its simplest form, is basically one of the dedication of our lives to God and His work here on the earth. We pray to Him and tell Him of our genuine commitment to the Kingdom of God and our desire to be of service to Him in bringing the Kingdom of God to pass upon the earth today. Every child of God needs to pray the prayer of commitment.

This prayer can also be prayed for others such as during an ordination service for those called to the Five-fold ministry offices or as deacons and elders. We see this in Acts 13 when Paul and Barnabas were commissioned by the Holy Spirit to their apostolic ministries.

Jesus Himself prayed this type of prayer as well. This prayer is basically one where we say, "Lord, you have bought me with the price of your Blood. I am yours. I dedicate, consecrate and commit my life to you today. Whatever you wish for me to do with my life I will do." We are stating to the Lord that we are His servants and that He can use us as He sees fit in the Kingdom of God. We are pledging our obedience to Him. He knows the place He has for us in the Body (see I Cor. 12) where there will be no schism or division if we do our job.

For example, God has called me at this time in my life to Asia and Africa. As I jokingly share in churches both here and abroad, I would rather be called to minister in Hawaii. But I have to be obedient to my Commander-in-Chief. He knows what He is doing. Whenever we pray the prayer of consecration, we are saying that we are subservient to His wishes and plans.

5. PRAYER OF CONFESSION

There are many scriptural references to this type of prayer. Some which come to mind from the Scriptures are Psalm 66:18 and I John 1:9.

The prayer of confession is important because without it we will not receive answers to our prayers. King David said in Psalm 66 that the number one reason why we do not get our prayers answered is because of sin in our lives. It may be sins of commission or omission as well—sins such as ungodliness or pride rather than the physical sins we normally think about when the word sin is used.

Therefore, this prayer should be prayed before any other type of prayer where you are making a request. Not only should we ask forgiveness, but we should ask the Holy Spirit to search our hearts and show us if there is anything we need to change.

6. PRAYER OF BINDING AND LOOSING

We find this prayer mentioned in Matthew 16:19 and 18:18. Technically, this prayer is really two separate prayers, but since it is covered in the Scriptures together, we treat it as one.

It has always bothered me whenever someone is praying to God and then, in the middle of the prayer, abruptly begins to pray or say, “Satan, we bind you in the Name of Jesus.” We should not mix these two together. Use common courtesy and finish talking to God before you address the devil or one of his demons.

We must also emphasize here that this prayer will be especially powerful when you bind the demons by name. As indicated earlier, just binding Satan as we are used to doing in the Church will not be effective. The Principalities, Powers, Rulers of Darkness and Wicked Spirits should all be bound by name

if possible. From the information given, you should be able to ascertain which of the Principalities and Powers are involved in the particular situation you are praying against. Bind them by name. Ask the Holy Spirit to *show* you who the Rulers of Darkness or Wicked Spirits are that are involved so you can bind them as well. Until and unless you get their names, just bind them as a group in your prayer by saying, “I bind every Ruler of Darkness and Wicked Spirit involved in this situation.” If you feel you need some help with a particular prayer, just write our ministry and we will help you compose the proper prayer to achieve the results. We are serious about spiritual warfare and wanting to help the Body of Christ in this area.

We find that many Christians who are engaged in spiritual warfare, and especially those who are involved in deliverance ministry, know how to pray the prayer of binding. But they neglect greatly the prayer of loosing. Remember it is here as well.

An evangelist friend from Benin City, John Ukpebor, used to be a professor in the mystic schools in the spirit world before coming to the Lord in 1985. He knew Satan personally through learning to travel to the spirit world at age six. He was taught by his father. He had a magic cloth and would travel there in his physical body instead of his spiritual body. He made an interesting observation which should be commented on here. He said that he would often see warring angels of God just sitting around in the spirit world. They were doing nothing. Sometimes when he was there he noticed that a group of them would rush toward him and he thought they were going to attack him, but instead they were going elsewhere. His comment about often seeing them just sitting around is one I find fascinating. Could it not be that the reason they are sitting around is because they have not been loosed through the prayer of loosing? I believe this is the case. This scripture says whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven. It is only in response to our prayers when we loose the ministering and warring angels that they spring into action. This should be so clear to us. It’s time we understood spiritual things of which this is one.

These angels are some of the ministering spirits mentioned in Hebrews. They are awaiting our prayer of loosing to be activated against the Dark Kingdom.

“Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them
Who shall be heirs of salvation?”

♥ Hebrews 1:14

There is great power on our behalf in the prayer of binding and loosing if prayed properly. This prayer is one of our chief weapons in the arena of spiritual warfare. It is always to be prayed in the “Name of Jesus.” Think of the Name of Jesus as being the key to unlocking the power just as a key is required to unlock the power residing in a car or airplane. We use the Name because that is where the power and authority Jesus gave to the Church has been vested. It is a fact verified by former members of the Dark Kingdom; all demon spirits as well as the devil himself *must* obey the Name of Jesus.

In conclusion, let us summarize these two prayers because they are normally used in conjunction with one another. Whenever we pray them together, we obtain a synergistic effect making them together more powerful than if they were prayed individually.

When you are involved in spiritual warfare (which is practically all the time these days), you need to pray the prayer of binding and bind the evil spirits by name. Then pray the prayer of loosing to loose the angels of God to minister for you in the area of need about which you are praying.

7. PRAYER OF AGREEMENT

We find this prayer in Matthew 18:19-20. This prayer is self-explanatory. There is power in two or more people agreeing together in prayer about an outcome. Because the Bible teaches that two people praying provide a ten-fold increase in prayer power, we might infer that for each additional Christian praying over a situation there is another ten-fold increase. The Bible does not tell us for sure, but we do know that the more people who are praying over a situation the better will be the results (assuming they are all praying in faith and not doubt). Otherwise, why would God ask whole nations

to pray? If He could always get the job done with just a few faithful souls, what need would there be for Corporate Prayer?

The key point to be emphasized here, however, is not the amount of people, but rather the fact that *they must be in agreement*. Herein lies the difficulty. The two or more people *must* be in agreement. It is difficult, as any board of directors over ten people will verify, to get a large group of people in agreement. That is why in the business world we say that the optimum size of a board of directors is 0.7 people. Congress has aptly demonstrated this truth with their inability to come to grips with a meaningful budget deficit reduction or any kind of energy policy.

The Church, too, has this same problem. This is one reason the Christian Church is so weak in America. We cannot stop abortion, pornography, homosexual teachers, and the teaching of humanism in our public schools because we cannot agree. Why can we not agree? Simple, we don't understand the Bible or the mind of God. Any human being who claims to be a Christian and believes abortion should be legal does not know God.

Because I have had some very deep, personal experiences with God over this issue beginning in 1980, I am convinced that God hates abortion and that He believes it is murder. It is sent from the Dark Kingdom to destroy the human race. He is waiting for us to do something about it. But we cannot agree.

Therefore, when you decide to use this prayer, be certain you discuss what you are asking the other parties to agree about. This agreement must be spiritual and not just mental because you're a nice person and you don't want to hurt their feelings. We have a tendency to do this in some instances as you know. Our religious behavior comes across to someone and they may think we are in agreement when spiritually we are not. This has occurred in the Church mainly because we do not really love each other as we are commanded. The early Church did, but we do not. If you think we do, let me ask you a question. When was the last time your pastor got up and asked every one to come down to the front and give their houses, furniture, or a car to the church so some widows and orphans could be cared for? They did it in the early Church. But today a spirit of the world has pervaded the Church. It is

the spirit of selfishness which is rampant in the world. This is a sign of the last days.

“This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For Men shall be lovers of their own selves covetous, boasters, proud, Blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, without Natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, . . .”

♥ II Timothy 3:1-3

8. PRAYER OF PETITION

This is the prayer most common to Christians and the one that normally comes to mind when we hear the word *prayer*. There are scriptural references in James 4:2; Hebrews 4:15-16; Jonah 2:1-9; Philippians 4:6.

A prayer of petition is simply when we ask God for something. We are petitioning Him to grant us what we are praying for. When we look at how the dictionary defines petition, we can see what the Bible is talking about. A petition is: (1) a solemn supplication or request to a superior authority; an entreaty; (2) A formal written document requesting a right or benefit from a person or group in authority.

As God’s children and members of His family, we have certain rights for which we petition Him. This is the general idea.

9. THE PRAYER OF FAITH

This prayer is found in Matthew 21:21-22; Mark 11:20-24 and in James 5:15. We have discussed faith and our faith must be the power that gets this type prayer answered. Hope and trust will not do it. It takes the spiritual substance known as faith to receive an answer. And the greater your faith, the sooner will the answer come. We must believe we have received what we pray for *when we pray*. That is the prayer of faith.

It is a scriptural principle and is always good to pray for others. But one can always get an answer or receive something from God for themselves through the prayer of faith. Of course, it must be something in line with the Word. It would not do for me to pray the prayer of faith for God to give me another man's wife.

The prayer of faith is very powerful, but it is also the most difficult and trying prayer because as previously mentioned, it requires patience as well as faith for fulfillment. Both of these qualities are difficult to develop and mature in the Christian. There are certain other attributes we must work toward, for example, to develop our patience.

Regarding the prayer of faith, there is one other *caveat* we should discuss for its fulfillment. Whenever you pray this prayer, you must examine yourself mentally, spiritually and physically each day to be sure you are “in faith” until the answer is manifested into the physical realm where you need it. As I have said, I like to visualize faith as the bridge between the spirit realm and the physical realm. When our faith is strong, the bridge is intact and the answer will manifest into the physical realm. But if we do not strengthen and guard our faith; if it becomes weak through neglect of our positive confession and our actions, then we will not receive an answer to our prayer because there is no bridge of faith between the spiritual and the physical.

10. PRAYER OF INTERCESSION

I often call this type prayer Combat Prayer. It is this type of prayer that is the most effective in spiritual combat against the Dark Kingdom. This is a wonderful prayer. It is strictly an unselfish prayer. It is a prayer for others. We can find examples in Genesis 18:16-33; Exodus 32:7-14; Ezekiel 22:29-31; I Timothy 2:1-4; Matthew 9:38; Hebrews 13:3; and James 5:16.

Were it not for intercessors in the Bible, such as Abraham and Moses, many people would have lost their lives. An intercessor is one who stands in the gap for another person as mentioned in Ezekiel 22:30. Most of what I have

learned about intercession I have learned from the Holy Spirit. He is the one who moves upon people to intercede.

My younger brother's life was saved about thirty years ago as a result of this kind of prayer. At the time, I was living in Nassau Bay, a suburb of Houston where NASA is located. My brother, Steve, was living in Austin. I was reading the Bible at midnight when all of a sudden I had a tremendous burden to pray. Because I did not know what to pray for (sometimes God shows you and sometimes He doesn't), I prayed in the spirit as fast as I could. I did this for thirty minutes until 12:30 when the burden to pray lifted. The next day I received a phone call from my secretary saying that my brother had called from Austin. He had been in an auto accident. I phoned him and learned that at 12:20 that night during the time I had been praying, he had been riding as the passenger with some businessmen when another car ran a red light at a high rate of speed and hit his car just in front of where Steve was sitting. I knew this is what I had been praying about.

Sometimes when you are praying this type prayer, God will show you in a vision who you are praying for. This is not required, however, because when you pray in the Spirit (spirit) or with other tongues, you are praying the perfect will of God over that situation. That is why this type prayer is so powerful.

Whenever you pray for the salvation, healing, or something else for another person, you are standing in the gap for them against the Dark Kingdom. Intercession can be a ministry in itself. If you'll tell God that you are available to be an intercessor, you will find Him waking you up during the early morning hours and using you for intercession. However, this ministry is the most difficult and most contested by Satan next to deliverance ministry so although many are called, few are chosen.

Sometimes God will call forth intercessors from among the congregation in a church. As an example, in 1989 while preaching at a church-wide meeting in Sapele, Nigeria, the Holy Spirit said to me as I was finishing the message, "I want to call forth intercessors at this church." So I walked down from the

pulpit and called them forth. A group of about 20-25 people came forward as volunteer intercessors. As soon as they got down front, I began to pray. And the moment I began to pray, the power of God hit all of them at once and they fell flat on the concrete floor. You could hear the visible sound of loud *cracks* as their heads hit the concrete, yet none of them were hurt. The LORD wants to call forth intercessors in every church because without them that church will never succeed.

Often in intercession, you take on the characteristics of the person for whom you are interceding. For example, if you are praying for the lost, you will take on the characteristics of a lost person. I will never forget the first time this happened to me because it was somewhat alarming. I was not preaching, but was in the congregation at my home church, Lakewood Church in 1979. When the invitation was given for those to accept Christ, I began to feel I needed to go forward. I was lost! Both my mind and my body began to tell me I needed to go forward and receive Christ as my personal savior. At first I was confused, “What is going on here,” I mused? “I know I have been saved for twenty-five years.” Then I realized what was occurring.

Quite often in intercession, when praying in other tongues, one will begin to groan—and all you can do is groan, you cannot speak any words (cf. Ro. 8). This happens often with me. In fact it occurs almost every time I either intercede or the Spirit calls me to intercede for someone in particular. Often I will lie on the floor groaning with tears and cries coming from me and sometimes the power of God will be present so strongly that I cannot move my body. I cannot get up off the floor even if I wanted to do so. You may wonder why God does this. I don’t know and I have never asked Him.

Sometimes in intercession you may take on the condition of a heart attack, an attack of asthma of some other malady. It is not occurring to you, but you think it is so you are concerned. I point these facts out in case you decide to be used of God as an intercessor. You should not be alarmed when these things happen to you during the prayers.

It should be emphasized that to be a true intercessor, you do not wait for God to move upon you. You set aside time each day where you come before God and say, “Here I am, use me in intercession for the next two hours.” And He will if you will. Often we miss God simply because we are waiting on Him, but all along He has been waiting on us. We have freedom of choice. God is a magnificent Being and He never forces us. He is gentle, loving and He wants us to help Him in intercession. Will you do so? Will you stand in the gap for someone today?

The prayer of intercession can be prayed in two ways: with the mind and with the spirit. The differences are very important. We can pray with our understanding only to a certain degree. For example, I could pray for you if I knew something about you (that you needed a job, or healing). But to pray for you in the spirit, or with my spirit, I don’t need to know anything about you. I pray in the “spirit,” or other tongues as the Holy Spirit gives me the words. You can pick out anyone in your town, say the owner of a porn shop, and begin to intercede for him in the spirit. You continue praying this way for three years and then all of a sudden he is saved.

There is a lot of confusion in the Church world today about tongues. This is generally because those who criticize tongues or say that it has passed away do not understand what they are talking about. We tend to fear what we do not understand, even if it is scriptural. I emphasize this because the real power of intercession is when one is praying in the spirit or praying in other tongues. This is the next prayer which we will discuss and it is most powerful when used in intercession. Why? Because when I pray with my understanding, I do not know how to pray as Paul said (Romans 8:26), but when I pray in the spirit or with my spirit, the Holy Spirit gives the words and I can pray the perfect will of God for that person. Too much has been made of tongues as the gift mentioned in I Corinthians 12:10. This gift of tongues is different because it is used for public ministry in the Church. But the real power of tongues or prayer in the spirit is in intercession because with the Holy Spirit praying *through* me, I can pray His perfect will for that person’s life. I can pray for things my mind does not know about as we shall now see.

11. PRAYER IN THE SPIRIT

Unlike the other prayers, references to this prayer are found only in the New Testament. That is because this type of prayer did not occur until after the Holy Spirit was poured out on the day of Pentecost. We find references in Jude 20; Ephesians 6:18; Romans 8:26-27; I Corinthians 14:14-15, 18.

From a study of the New Testament, it should be obvious to anyone that praying in the spirit (or Spirit) is prayer in other tongues. Or, as some people call it, their prayer language. Whenever a person receives the Baptism of the Holy Spirit or the Baptism of Power as I prefer to call it, they receive the ability to speak, sing, and eventually even think in other tongues.

Some denominational seminary students have argued with me that the scripture actually means “foreign languages” in the Greek text. This is true. It could be translated foreign languages and that is just what the *tongues* are. There should be no controversy. God knows every language. There are human tongues and angelic tongues (I Corinthians 13), and the members of the Dark Kingdom can converse in them all as well as their own specific Occult language.

The prayer in the spirit differs from all other prayers in two important ways: (1) the prayer comes from our spirit instead of our minds or intellect, and (2) through this type of prayer, we are able to pray the “perfect will of God” over the situation. Consider the following scripture:

“Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not What we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself [Himself] Maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. And he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the saints according to the Will of God.” ♥Romans 8:26-27

Because we are able to pray the perfect will of God over a person or a situation, this is perhaps the most powerful of all the prayers. People may say, “What good does it do to speak in tongues?” or they may quote I Cor. 14:19 where Paul says he would rather speak five words with his understanding than 10,000 words in an unknown tongue. But Paul is talking about teaching here and not prayer. And, if you are always able to pray the perfect will of God over a situation, then that is enough reason by itself to speak in tongues. *Why* are you able to pray the perfect will of God? Because the Holy Spirit is praying through you—He is using your body and vocal cords as a vessel for prayer—He is actually doing the praying because He gives the words that you pray.

This mode of praying also allows one to “walk in the spirit” as the Bible admonishes us to do. It also increases our spiritual acumen and edifies or builds us up spiritually as we become more spiritually minded by praying in the spirit. Our spiritual I.Q. and discernment increase the more time we spend praying in the spirit; we are also able to better hear the voice of God.

Prayer in the Spirit also can be in the form of groanings as the Bible tells us in Romans 8. This happens often in intercession. You just begin to groan in the spirit, often for hours. It is the Holy Spirit groaning through you in intercession for someone who is lost or in trouble.

12. PRAYER OF PRAISE

We find references to this type prayer in Psalm 34:1-3 and in Hebrews 13:15. This type prayer is a state of prayer whereby you just remain in the presence of God, praising Him. It can be done at church, but is more effective if you will do it at your home during one of your daily times of prayer. You do pray three times a day like Daniel did, do you not?

The Bible says that God inhabits the praises of His people. Therefore, you may also be surprised to learn that while you are praying in this manner, He

will move in your life and provide things that you need. There are people who have even been healed of terminal illnesses while praying in this manner.

Another beautiful benefit of this type prayer is that it is the most cleansing. If you will spend at least two hours a night in this type praise prayer, you will find, after only a few days, that you will feel very cleansed and refreshed. God's presence is refreshing.

GENERAL GUIDELINES FOR PRAYER

If you are serious about your spiritual walk with God and spiritual warfare, then I suggest you set some guidelines for your own prayer life and spiritual development. You need to develop a spiritual plan for your own life. There is a saying which the world has that is apropos—if you don't know where you're going, then any road will take you there. The message is *planning*. Make a commitment to do some spiritual planning as surely as you would for your physical life. Set and maintain a regular time of prayer and communion with the Holy Spirit.

Without planning and discipline, you will never achieve what God has for you. I know from experience that only 20-25% of the people who read this will make the determination to do so, but that is better than zero per cent. In both spiritual and physical life, discipline is required.

In closing this chapter on prayer, I want to challenge you to develop some definite goals and objectives for your spiritual life. It has always been amazing to me that something so important as eternal life can be treated so casually by most Christians. Remember, you and every other human will spend eternity in either the Lake of Fire or with God. It would logically seem, that with such high stakes, you would want to check it out for yourself. Don't take anybody's word for spiritual things. Find out for yourself by reading the Bible. Meditate on it. Talk to God and ask Him to enlighten you concerning eternal life and your own personal destiny—what He has called you to do. He will do it if you are sincere. Find out the answers to the questions of life for

yourself through your own prayer life and study of the Word. But most people never study the Bible and don't pray. How can God talk to them? This applies to Christians as well because most Christians spend little time with the Lord—they're too busy. It is clear that He cannot speak to them; they never exercise their priestly anointing and come into His Presence.

God wants to talk to you and fellowship with you. He loves you supremely and has great things in store for you if you will allow Him to show you. If you are puzzled or confused, talk to Him and He will guide you. Let me illustrate with a true story from our ministry in Africa.

I was preaching at a large church in central Nigeria. As the Lord had instructed me when I first went to Africa, I was to announce a healing and miracle service each Thursday night and have a deliverance service on Friday nights in the churches.

After the service one particular Friday night, a man came forward to speak with the pastor. He gave the following testimony:

For twelve years, he had been a member of a White Garment church, a false prophetic church where they prophesy over people, relieve them of their money, and lead them into the Dark Kingdom.

He had been told by his “pastor” to bring 1,500 Naira (Nigerian dollars) to the church in order to redeem his soul and be healed of a chronic back ailment. Someone in the town told him of our meeting and he came. He was both saved and healed that Thursday night. But he was confused because of his old “church.” So, he asked God in prayer to show him which was the true church.

That night the Lord gave him a dream where he was in Heaven. He saw the man who had founded these White Garment churches that he attended. This man, named Shoffa, had recently died. He was hailed as a prophet in his churches. In the dream he appeared before the gates of Heaven and asked for admittance because they were closed. A large angel looked down from the top of the wall and said, “You cannot enter here—that is reserved for those who

are washed in the Blood of the Lamb.” He could not enter and he walked away sadly. Thus, through this type prayer God answered the confusion of this dear African man regarding the True Church in the world. This testimony shows how God will always speak to us if we are sincere and come to Him for spiritual help. We need to do so every day in prayer.

Prayer is the greatest spiritual weapon we have at our disposal. Let’s be sure we are using it. God is not to blame if the devil is victorious over us when He has given us powerful weapons but we refuse to use them.

Being raised and saved in the Methodist Church, I have always had the greatest respect for John Wesley. I have read his personal journals and all of the books about his life and have been to his home and church in London. Overlooked in Wesley’s greatness is the revelation God restored through him of itinerant preaching to spread the gospel. One of his most important protégés, Francis Asbury, was sent to the United States. He rode over 6,000 miles a year on horseback to preach the Gospel and became the first bishop of the Methodist Church in America. And most Methodists do not know that although John Wesley received a large salary every year, he gave most of it away to the poor. Praise God! We can learn a lot from studying the lives of God’s generals. I have studied them all and learned a great deal from Luther, Moody, Wesley, Finney, Spurgeon, Branham and others. John Wesley said that it seems God can do nothing unless somebody prays. He was correct. This is a Bible principle. Charles G. Finney, an American lawyer who was called to preach, had tremendous evangelical success because he was a man of great prayer. Finney once remarked, “I have had some experiences in prayer that truly alarmed me.”

Centuries ago, these men learned something we should not forget today—the *power and necessity of prayer*. The reason we must pray in order for God to intervene is because He has given us, the Church, the authority in the earth. God needs human beings in the same way the devil does—to accomplish tasks in the physical world. He needs us to pray and unleash the warring angels to minister upon the earth. Can He depend on you? Will you now become a prayer warrior and resist the Dark Kingdom?

26

THE POWER OF THE BLOOD

**“...by the blood of thy covenant I have sent forth thy
Prisoners out of the pit wherein is no water.”**

♥ Zechariah 9:11

**“For this is my blood of the new testament, which is
Shed for many for the remission of sins.”**

♥ Matthew 26:28

There is tremendous power in the *Blood* of the Lord Jesus Christ. The Church used to know and teach about the “power in the blood.” We not only sang the hymn, “There’s Power in the Blood,” but we also understood the reality of what we were singing, although perhaps our knowledge was quite limited. I would categorize our knowledge in this area similarly to that of “praying through.” We knew it worked but perhaps did not know why.

Today, even that minute knowledge seems to have been lost. Very few churches talk about the Power of the Blood of Jesus anymore. Perhaps this is

because we have had two generations of preachers since the Church used to talk about the Blood.

In many respects mankind is the same as in Bible times. We have some of the same problems due to our nature as human beings. This, I might add, is another argument against the Theory of Evolution. We have certainly not evolved much in wisdom or in the ability to handle relationships.

Yet our ignorance concerning the Power of the Blood does not change God. He gave it to us a spiritual weapon and it is up to us to learn how to use it. This is a lesson we must learn about the Nature of God. He has given us everything we need to “fight the good fight of faith.” But it is up to us to dig it out of the Bible and appropriate it in our lives. Again, this is why study and meditation in the Word is so important. If you really wish to learn anything about a topic in the Bible, then you must learn to meditate. Take the Blood for example; look up every scripture you can find and study it. Read it over and over. Then meditate on what you have read and ask the Holy Spirit to enlighten you. This, as you know, is part of His present day ministry. He is a weapon of our warfare we will discuss later.

Every Christian in the world has a veritable arsenal of weapons at his disposal, but the door to his arsenal is locked. God has given him the key—the Word of God—but he has never used the key to unlock the door to his arsenal of spiritual weapons. This horrendous situation must change.

THE BLOOD IS IN HEAVEN

Relative to the Blood of Jesus, it should be noted that His Blood is in Heaven. It is my belief that this is another reason Satan has blood banks in the heavens above the earth where he resides because he tries to counterfeit everything God does. You were probably not aware that the Blood of Jesus is in Heaven. Consider the following scriptures:

“And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme His name, and his tabernacle [in Heaven], and them that dwell in Heaven.”

♥ Revelation 13:6

“Now of the things which we have spoken this is the sum: We have Such an high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens; a minister of the sanctuary, and of the true Tabernacle, which the Lord pitched, and not man. For every high Priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices; wherefore it is of Necessity that this man have somewhat to offer. For if he were on Earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that there are priests that offer Gifts according to the law: who serve unto the example and shadow Of heavenly things as Moses was admonished of God when he was About to make the tabernacle: for, ‘See,’ saith he, ‘that thou make all Things to the pattern shewed thee in the mount.’”

♥ Hebrews 8:1-5

The Lord had me write a commentary on the book of Hebrews in 1997; I call Hebrews the “Book of Better Things.” It offers a marvelous contrast between the law and grace; the earthly priests and the Heavenly Priest; the Aaronic order of the priesthood and the Melchisedec order; the earthly tabernacle and the Heavenly veil, which is the Body of Christ. We could go on and on discussing Hebrews. It is a very rich book and one you should study often. Here, however, we are mainly concerned with the Blood and with this in mind we will limit further discussion to the Blood, but from the preceding scriptures, we learn that there is a Heavenly Tabernacle.

There are many scriptures in Hebrews that deal with the Blood. For a clear picture, I recommend you study extensively the entire book and meditate upon it. Hebrews is a book for the mature Christian and it will mature you as you learn from it. Concerning the Blood in particular, study the following scriptures in Hebrews: 9:11 – 10:22; 10:29; 12:24; 13:10 – 12, 20.

Jesus presented His Blood to the Father in the true Tabernacle located in Heaven after He had stripped Satan and the Dark Kingdom of their authority during the time between His death and resurrection. His Blood is called the “Blood of the eternal covenant.” Covenant alone is a very interesting subject for study. God always works by covenant with the human race. So does the devil. There are eight major covenants in the Bible and Jesus is involved in all of them. We will mention those pertaining to our discussion of the Blood.

Aside from the New Covenant, which is the last of the eight major covenants and the one with which we are most familiar, Jesus was involved in the first covenant—the Edenic or Adamic covenant. Jesus is called the Second Adam. When this age ends, He will have accomplished what the first Adam could not do—the restoration of all things. He is also the “last Adam” in this regard. He is the “Seed of the woman” promised under the Adamic Covenant in Genesis 3:15. He is the heir and King under the Davidic Covenant. And under the Abrahamic Covenant, He is the Second Melchisedec and, as with Adam, He is the last Melchisedec.

It is with the Melchisedec priesthood that the book of Hebrews deals in length. The Melchisedec priesthood arose 400 years before the Aaronic priesthood was established under the Mosaic Covenant of the Law. Thus we see that the Melchisedec priesthood is the eternal priesthood and is superior to the Aaronic priesthood because it does not have to offer blood every year for the sins of the people under the covenant and because the Priest is Eternal. The New Covenant is superior to all others because it is an eternal or everlasting covenant (Heb. 13:20). Hebrews tells us that God the Father prepared a body for Him made of flesh and blood. But after the resurrection, we see that Jesus had a flesh and bone body which could pass through walls. It is a spiritual body, but it is the same one prepared for Him by the Father as it still has the nail scars. It is just composed of different material, namely spiritual matter.

Where is the Blood? It is in the true Tabernacle in Heaven on the altar. Jesus, as the last Melchisedec priest, presented His own Blood on the altar of the true Tabernacle to the Father as the final, ultimate and eternal sacrifice for the sins of the human race. This is the reason He is seated. Jesus is the only high

priest who was able to sit down because the work of the Aaronic high priest was never finished. But Jesus has accomplished and finished the work that the Father gave Him to do. So, He is now seated at the Father's right hand until "His enemies are made His footstool." Jesus is seated. He is not pacing back and forth in Heaven wringing His hands in worry about His kingdom being established on the earth.

THE BLOOD DOES MORE THAN CLEANSE

The Blood of Jesus cleanses us from all sin. This is a wonderful truth. But it does much more. It is a powerful spiritual weapon that most of the Church has forgotten about. The Bible tells us that the life of every single creature is in the blood:

"For the life of the flesh is in the blood." ♥ Leviticus 17:11

When God created man, we are told that He created him from the dust of the earth. Man was formed from the dust, but there was still no life in the man. It was not until God breathed His breath or Spirit into the body of man that Adam became a living being or soul (Hebrew, *nephesh*). From this we know that God breathed Life into the blood of man. That Life, called *Zoe* in the Greek text of the New Testament, means the Life (eternal life) of God the creator.

In order to see the power resident in the Blood of Christ, we must first learn how it is unique from other human blood. In other words, if there is some unique power present in the Blood of Jesus (and we know there is), then how does this Blood differ from the ordinary blood of a human being?

THE BLOOD OF JESUS IS UNIQUE

The Blood of Jesus is unique as we know from our knowledge of the Bible and medical science. The genetic code for blood is not carried in the female ovum. The Father prepared the body for Jesus with its Blood. Since the blood of infants is protected from the flow of the mother's blood by the placenta, the child never received any blood from Mary, but from the Holy Spirit only.

You see, the Bible never teaches, as we have assumed, that the mother Mary furnished the egg which was then impregnated by the Holy Spirit. The bible says that God prepared a Body for the Lord Jesus Christ.

“Wherefore when He cometh into the world, He saith,
‘Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not but a body hast
Thou prepared me.’” ♥ Hebrews 10:5

This passage indicated that Jesus knew, as the preincarnate Son of God, that His Father would prepare a body for Him. He would simply journey to earth in His spiritual Body and enter the newly prepared physical body in the womb of Mary.

This body in the womb of Mary already had the blood type created and prepared by the Father. There was no intermixing with the Adamic, sin-nature blood of the human race. The Blood that flowed through His veins was perfect and did not contain the corrupt, sinful nature carried in the Adamic blood of the human race. Thus we see that the Blood of Jesus was (is) different.

“Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible Things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by Tradition from your fathers; But with the precious blood of Christ, as Of a lamb without blemish and without spot.” ♥ I Peter 1:18-19

This Scripture verifies that the Blood of Jesus was unique because it was not corrupted as is human blood.

In I John we read that there are three which bear witness in earth: the Spirit, the Water and the Blood. It says that these three are in agreement. We know that water is both a symbol for baptism and for the Word. Both of these symbols are important in our discussion.

As water symbolizes baptism, it is also symbolizing the Blood because when we undergo water baptism, we are symbolizing the repentance of sin—the cleansing of sin by the Blood and the death, burial and resurrection of the body. But the water is a physical symbol of our cleansing and purification before God, which is what the Blood actually does spiritually. We are symbolically cleansed physically here on earth through baptism, but spiritually in Heaven through the Blood of Jesus resident there in the True Tabernacle.

IS THERE POWER IN THE BLOOD?

The Water is a symbol of the Word of God, the *Logos*, who is Jesus Christ. He is even called the Word of God in Revelation. But the Water without the Blood is of little help. The Bible of itself does no good to those who try to come to God without the Blood.

There are many scriptures which deal with the cleansing property of the Blood, notably Isaiah. In fact, it is only because of the Blood that there is any Power in the Name of Jesus.

An illustration from the perspective of the Dark Kingdom regarding the Power in the Blood will prove the point. The following testimony is from *My Conversion* and it describes what the Dark Kingdom sees when they come up against this spiritual weapon.

“Then, I called the fourth of the superior spirits in the government of Satan, whose name is Belial. (Anywhere you see some people gathered or holding a meeting or dance party and later they start fighting, the chairs or benches as whips or perhaps they cut each others body with knives or broken bottles, it is Belial, the demonic spirit who has visited them. That is his own function in the Satanic order, to cause quarrels, be it in the family, among friends or even in a community.) I commanded him, ‘Go forward. Work on them and let them start fighting.’ I said to myself, after all they call themselves Revivalists.

When they start beating each other with benches, the newspaper will carry it in the headlines the next day that , ‘Revival turns to a free-for-all fight.’

‘Carry on,’ I commanded the demon. He took a few quick steps and then stopped. ‘What’s wrong again?’ I enquired. He asked me to come and see and I moved in to look again. This time, it was no longer fire I saw, but BLOOD. The whole place looked as if it were an abattoir where millions of animals have been freshly slaughtered. It was as if all the people were totally immersed in the flowing river of the blood. He told me pointedly, ‘That is the BLOOD of the Lamb of God.’ But since I didn’t understand him, I asked him again mocking. ‘You mean that God has a sheep and that He killed it and the blood of it is now frightening you? I, too, have sheep at home. I will kill it for you later, so that you can drink the blood.’ He said, ‘It is not like that.’ He said firmly, ‘That is the BLOOD of the Lamb of God who taketh away the sins of the world.’ He added, ‘Nothing in this world or in any department can face that BLOOD in combat.’ So he bluntly refused to go and I chased him off also.”⁵

This true testimony about members of the Dark Kingdom, including the Principality Belial, attacking a revival meeting indicates the tremendous Power of the Blood. Belial told Omoobajesu, “Nothing in this world or any other can face that BLOOD in combat.” Does this excite you? It does me! It also makes me want to further study the Blood. Once we have an understanding of this truth, we will be able to see that the Blood of the Lamb is indeed a powerful weapon in the believer’s repertoire of spiritual weapons, but one we have rarely made use of.

⁵ Ibid, p.69

The Pentecostal ministers who preached in the early 1900s knew something about this truth. They may not have understood *why* the Blood was a weapon, but they knew that when they pled “the Blood” they got results.

When should you plead the Blood and how is it done? You should plead the Blood whenever you are under a specific attack of Satan. You should plead the Blood whenever you minister to people in the area of deliverance.

The Blood speaks! The Blood speaks! Who does the Blood speak to? The Blood speaks to the Father in Heaven!

“You have come to God, the judge of all men, to the spirits of Righteous men made perfect, to Jesus the mediator of a new Covenant, And to the sprinkled blood that speaks a better word than The blood of Abel.”

♥ Hebrews 12:23-24 NIV

“Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the Blood of Jesus, by a new and living way, which he hath consecrated For us, through the veil, that is to say, his flesh …”

♥ Hebrews 10:19-22

We have found from experience in the deliverance ministry that there is great power in the Blood. Demons do not like to hear or see the *BLOOD OF JESUS*. I am confident that the circumstances in the testimony given earlier from Omoobajesu’s life occurred because someone had prayed and pled the Blood of Christ. Therefore, those members at the crusade in Ibadan, Nigeria, were literally covered with the Blood of Jesus in the spirit realm. The demons, including the Principality Belial could not come near them to do any harm.

We often find while ministering deliverance, that the demons will curse the Blood of Jesus whenever a minister pleads the Blood during the deliverance service. This is because they know not only its Power, but also the eternal damage inflicted by the Blood on the Dark Kingdom. They are well aware

that they are no match for this Blood and will curse it every chance they get. Remember, while the Blood sacrifice meant eternal life for us who accept it, for the members of the Dark Kingdom it meant eternal death!

We must be careful in discussing this concept lest we leave the impression that we are not “under the Blood” when we become a born again child of God in His family. But there is supernatural spiritual power available by pleading the Blood of Jesus. And I believe earlier generations of Christians understood this concept and its power much better than we do today.

PLEAD THE BLOOD

In addition to ministry such as deliverance, you should also plead the Blood before retiring at night. I have learned this from my experience on the continent of Africa. Members of the Dark Kingdom nearly always attack at night. I have suffered many, many spiritual attacks there at night. In fact, in certain areas of Nigeria such as Benin City, it is a nightly occurrence.

Countless times the Holy Spirit has awakened me between 2 and 4 A.M. when I woke up immediately from a sound sleep. For the natural physical body, this is impossible. It takes us a few seconds or minutes to be fully awake. However when the Holy Spirit awakens you, it is instantaneous! Instantly, I would awake and sit straight up in the bed and sense the presence of a spirit(s) in the room. I would rebuke them and command them to leave in the Name of Jesus.

The members of the Dark Kingdom attack while we are sleeping to put sickness, poverty, and death upon us. A close friend of mine in Lagos lost his younger brother to such an attack last year. Therefore, it is important that you learn to plead the Blood over yourself and your family before retiring each night. I was taught this by the Holy Spirit during my first trip to Nigeria. Although I knew about pleading the Blood from my elders in ministry, it took the Holy Spirit to show me why it was important before retiring to sleep each night.

While first in Benin City, Nigeria, I was spiritually attacked during the night by a group of Rulers of Darkness, including some witches. They put some “medicine” in my arm through a transfusion, but they seemed confused when it did not harm me. This all occurred during my sleep in the “dream world.” When I awoke the next day, there were large, red splotches all over my body. I just confessed the Word and went on about the ministry. The splotches disappeared after seven days and I never suffered any ill effects.

But after this occurrence, I never experienced an attack as long as I pled the Blood. I learned from the Holy Spirit not only to plead the Blood, but also to pray offensively against the members of the Dark Kingdom before I go to sleep. Whenever I forget, I am invariably attacked in the spirit realm during the night. These type attacks have recently begun happening in America as well.

How do you plead the Blood? First, you repent of any sins and ask forgiveness. Then pray the prayer of consecration to God. Then you plead the Blood of Jesus. You ask God to cover and protect you during the night with the precious Blood of Jesus. This will prevent the enemy from being able to harm you spiritually or physically. Just remember, this Blood covering and protection is in the realm of the spirit. You will not be aware of any changes in the physical realm. Perhaps this is why we have previously failed to understand the Power of the Blood—we were limited by our ignorance of spiritual matters.

It is important that we use every spiritual weapon which the Lord has given to us. The Blood of Jesus is one such weapon. As we plead the Blood, demons will have to depart. Let us resolve to once again restore to the arsenal of the Church this mighty spiritual weapon—a weapon that no evil spirit, nor even Satan himself, can stand up against—the precious Blood of Jesus.

27

THE NAME OF JESUS

**“Some trust in chariots, and some in horses, but we
Will remember the name of the Lord our God.”**

♥ Psalm 20:7

Most Christians today who have done any amount of study realize that there is great power in the Name of Jesus. The Lord Himself tells us in Mark 16:17-18:

“And these signs shall follow them that believe; in my name shall They cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; they shall Take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.”

♥ Mark 16:17-18

The early Church knew the power that was in the Name. Consider the following scripture:

“Then Peter said, ‘Silver and gold have I none; but such as I have Give I unto thee: In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth rise up and Walk. And he took him by the right hand, and lifted him up: and Immediately his feet and ankle bones received strength. And he Leaping up stood, and walked, and entered with them into the temple, Walking, and leaping, and praising God.” ♥ Acts 3:6-8

Peter obeyed Mark 16 because he knew the power in the Name of Jesus. As we continue on in Acts reading this story, it is even *more* evident that Peter understood this truth because this is Peter talking in Acts 3:16:

“And his name through faith in his name hath made this man strong
Whom ye see and know.”

The Apostles knew because Jesus told them, as He left us witness in Mark 16, that all power in both Heaven and earth had been given to Him. He stripped Satan and the Dark Kingdom of the authority given to them over the earth by Adam. This second Adam, Jesus, took back that authority, but then He turned around and gave it to His Body, the Church. *We, the Church*, have all power and authority. We just have not awakened to this fact because it is too difficult for us to comprehend—this truth from the Bible has not sunk into our thick, spiritual skulls yet. As His Body and His ambassadors upon the earth, we have that authority and the key to this authority is found in the Name of Jesus.

Jesus, during the three and one-half years of His ministry, knew this would take place. That is why He said to John,

“Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in My Name, he will give it you. Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my Name; ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.”

♥ John 16:23-24

This scripture proves Jesus knew that all power in Heaven and earth would be vested in His Name. The Bible tells us in Hebrews that Jesus inherited His excellent Name (Hebrews 1:1-4).

As the Son of God sent by the Father, He is the heir of all things. And thanks to His sacrifice, we are joint heirs with Him in the whole universe and Kingdom of God. As joint heirs with Christ, we share in His authority. As the Body of Christ, we share and implement the authority given to the Head of the

Body, Jesus. Everything being done upon the earth today, the Lord is doing through His Body, the Church. As His ambassadors to the world, we the Church have His full authority. This authority is vested in His Name, *Jesus*.

His Name was bestowed upon Him by the Father as we see when the angel was first sent to Mary. She is told by Gabriel to name the child, Jesus. The book of Philippians also points to this same truth.

“And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and Became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is Above every name: that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, Of things in heaven, and things in earth; and things under the earth: And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the Glory of God the Father.” ♥ Philippians 2:8-11

There is power in the Name to free one from spiritual bondage as well as physical bondage. When we confess the Lord, we receive salvation through His Name and our faith in that Name. In addition to healing, the Name of Jesus is also the authority we possess to cast out demons. This is the deliverance ministry.

“In my name shall they cast out devils.” ♥ Mark 16:17

DEMONS MUST OBEY

Demons have to obey any command given to them in the Name of Jesus. We must be sure we know and understand what commands we are to give them before we command in the Name of Jesus. They will often talk through that person using the person’s voice and say they do not want to leave. Sometimes they will resort to just begging you not to tell them to leave.

Another favorite trick they have is to cause the person they possess to faint or run off before they get to the deliverance minister for prayer. But if you're persistent, in the end they will depart. But it is often not instantaneous. This is especially true if the person has been involved in a covenant relationship with the Dark Kingdom. Our experience is that such a person often takes six months or more for complete deliverance.

What are you doing with the Name? Are you using this great weapon of authority given to the Church for spiritual combat? If not, then perhaps you should get busy. Remember, if the devil is attacking you you'd better do something about it—you'd better launch a counterattack to stop him. That precious Name can be used to drive the devil from your family, your property, your business, your finances, and any area of your life in which the devil has attacked you or your loved ones. We have learned through ministry that this is an area where Christians have little understanding and a main reason why they don't achieve the desired results from the Lord—they never engage the enemy in warfare. They just sit idly around hoping God is going to help them.

When we study the New Testament, we see that the early Church did understand this concept. The Bible is also explicit that whatever we do in this world, we are to do in the Name of Jesus. Why? Because we are His ambassadors.

“And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do all in the Name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him.”

♥ Colossians 3:17

If the Church today could just understand that we have all the power and authority to drive Satan from this planet, we would be a force to be reckoned with in a spiritual war. And most of our foolishness and sin would be done away with because we would feel ashamed to do it “in the name of Jesus.”

We are also to give thanks for all things unto God and the Father in the Name of Jesus as the Bible shows us:

“Giving thanks always for all things unto God and the Father in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ;”

♥ Ephesians 5:20

We find other prominent examples of scripture where the Name was used in healing as well.

“Is any sick among you? Let him call for the elders of the church; and Let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord.”

♥ James 5:14

And among the examples of using the Name to cast out devils we find the following:

“And it came to pass, as we went to prayer, a certain damsel Possessed with a spirit of divination met us, who brought her masters Much gain by soothsaying: the same followed Paul and us, and cried, Saying, ‘These men are the servants of the most high God, which Show unto us the way of salvation.’ And this she did many days. But Paul, being grieved, turned and said to the spirit, ‘I command thee in The name of Jesus Christ to come out of her.’ And he came out the Same hour.”

♥ Acts 16:16-18

Although there is much we could discuss from this passage, note two facts: Paul used the Name of Jesus to cast the spirit out and he spoke to the spirit, not to the girl. The spirits speak all the languages and you have to speak to them and command them to leave as Paul did. Also, notice that the spirit did not leave immediately. It took about an hour before he came out.

THE NAME HAS AUTHORITY IN THE SPIRIT

Have you ever wondered what happens in the spirit realm when you use the Name of Jesus? Consider the following testimony from Evangelist Omoobajesu.

“I recall a meeting of the cults held at the Lagos Bar Beach. All the high-ranking occultists in Nigeria were present and among our number were some of the traditional rulers from all over the country. Thus from every part of the country we came and assembled at the beach, dressed in demonic regalia while our evil powers made us invisible. We were just sitting down on the beach to start the meeting when a man came to pray on the beach. Though we were invisible to him, we could all see him clearly. Unknowingly, he started to march on the members seated on the sand. We were all infuriated, and a person in our assembly was ordered to deal with him. Instantly, he gave the intruder a very heavy slap. The man started to feel dizzy. On realizing this, the man cried out aloud. He shouted, ‘J-E-S-U-S.’ The echo of his voice rent the silence of the night. What happened? Immediately [after] the Name Jesus was called a ray of light came out of his mouth and disappeared into the heavens. We all sat down looking at what would happen next. After a few moments, the light reappeared out of the sky coming back to the earth. The light again exploded in mid-sky and subdivided into various parts still coming directly toward us. The light encircled our gathering on the beach and made the whole surrounding very brightly lit. Looking more closely, we saw accompanying these rays, all forms [kinds] of weapons of war, chariots of fire and winged-beings, all were running furiously, heading for us. We had to disperse, everyone ran away, the chariots chasing each of us home. All these [things] happened within the twinkling of an eye.”⁶

There is great power in the Name of Jesus. Begin using this powerful weapon in your own prayer life and in the other ways we have discussed in this chapter.

⁶ Ibid, p. 25-26

28

UNITY OF THE FAITH

“And if a kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom Cannot stand. And if a house be divided against itself, that House cannot stand.”

♥ **Mark 3:24-25**

There is great power in unity. Whether it be in physical things such as a baseball or football team or whether it applies to spiritual things of which we are now speaking, there is great power in unity. The devil knows this well. This is the main reason he has developed the strategy of keeping the Church divided. He knows that a divided army, a divisive army, is as weak as a wet paper sack and no match for the Dark Kingdom in combat.

In this regard, the fourth chapter of Ephesians is incredibly rich. Paul starts off by telling us how we should walk in our Christian life in meekness with long suffering and with great love for one another. This attitude, also discussed in great detail elsewhere in the Pauline writings (*cf.* Phil. 2), of love and meekness will naturally lead to unity of the faith.

Paul knew, as should we today, that there is great power available through the unity of the faith and spirit. The Spirit of God is in Unity. He is not divided in His activities or in His thought processes. He is singular in purpose when it comes to the Gospel and His dealings with mankind.

The members of the Dark Kingdom know this truth as well. This is why Satan wars against the unity of the faith and tries to keep the Church of the Lord divided and at odds all the time. He knows the Holy Spirit and the Lord cannot accomplish much with a Church of self-centered, un-unified believers. We had better learn that the Holy Spirit can only work to any great degree where there is unity. All the great churches of the world—those that are doing great things for the Kingdom of God—are in unity. The ministry is in unity and so is the congregation as well. They have a unified version of what God has called them to do and a unified vision.

On the other hand, most churches have no such unity or vision. The Bible says, “Without a vision the people perish.” And they are perishing by the thousands in spiritual warfare. The quickest way to find out if your church is in this category is to ask what the “mission statement” of your church is. What is its purpose?

God calls a church into being with a specific purpose. And His purposes will be carried out. If one church fails to do this, then He will call another until the work is done. But most churches have no mission statement. If they were a business, they would be broke. They have only some vague idea—such as saving souls—of what God has called them to do.

In reality, the church is a business. God’s business is man’s total salvation—spirit, soul and body—and we had better start taking His business seriously. A typical example of what we are discussing can be illustrated from questions I asked of church leadership at a church of about 1500 members here in America. This church has an annual budget of \$1.1 million. According to church records, only 105 people were baptized in the church in 1989. And, as was pointed out to me by a deacon, 40% of these were children of church

members. When I casually asked what the mission statement of the church was, the reply was, “To win the lost.”

Do you think God is getting His money’s worth from that church? That is a cost of about \$17,460 per person saved. Not a very good return on investment for God.

I am constantly amazed to find people who will stay in a church like this. The members are content. The only reason must be spiritual blindness—they have not paused to consider and see that church spiritually as God sees it.

UNITY REQUIRES SPIRITUAL MATURITY

One aspect we see from scripture about unity is that it requires some maturity. If you want to show that you are a mature Christian, then you can show it by your unity. And notice what happens when this occurs, notice verse 14 of Ephesians 4: “That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine ...” This is the result of our coming into a unity of the faith, both individually and corporately. We will be no more “tossed about” and fooled by the devil and his Dark Kingdom. At this point, we will be a formidable weapon in the hands of God for spiritual warfare and combat.

Begin today to spend some time meditating in Ephesians 4,5 and 6. Your life will be revolutionized. If we understood this concept and spiritual truth, we would see a stop to the tremendous amount of church splits in the world today. This is especially true of the various Pentecostal churches and groups who often pride themselves on being “more spiritual” than their other ecclesiastical brethren. Because I have preached in many different denominations as well as nondenominational and charismatic churches, I would say that the charismatic churches have more of a problem in this area. And while they may be more spiritual, it appears that many are less mature. Why else would people let themselves be used by the devil to cause a church split? That is why in most shopping centers you find a pizza parlor, dry

cleaners, drug store and a charismatic church. Often you will have four or five within a one-half mile square. A similar thing is happening in West Africa, churches are springing up everywhere. The Dark Kingdom is trying to kill off the true churches with church splits while at the same time raising up many false churches such as the white garment churches and false churches in America.

After sharing this truth with a senior pastor in Nigeria who has helped me build seven churches, he remarked, "That is a wonderful revelation. I thought God was raising up all these churches." No, God is not the author of confusion. He does not split churches. That is the devil, not God. Just make a note. Anything that promotes true unity in the faith and the Spirit of God is of God and that which promotes disunity and fragmentation is of the devil. The Dark Kingdom wants to keep the true churches fragmented and small so they will never have the resources, both monetary and human, to accomplish much for the Kingdom of God.

If I were a true minister, I simply would not split a church. If there are problems there; the pastor's stealing or in adultery, pray for him and talk to him, but don't take half the congregation and start a new church because if you do, you are out of the will of God. Follow the example of David who could have killed Saul many times, but always remarked, "I will not raise my hand against the Lord's anointed." Let the Lord worry about the problem. If you feel He wants you to start a church, ask permission to go to another town or if in a large city to the other side of the city rather than fragment the congregation. God will bless you for this.

But the truth is that most of these church splits are not over sins of the flesh. They are caused from spiritual sins—pride, jealousy, and arrogance—sent from the Dark Kingdom to destroy each true church established by God. But if you know God has called you to the pastoral ministry and you are in good relationship at your church with the leadership when you sense the call of God, go to the church leadership. Believe me, you need mature and wise counsel to develop your own ministry. Whenever God calls a man or woman to the ministry, He will let you know about it. You don't have to wonder if you are being called. And since the gifts and callings of God are irrevocable

(Romans 11:29), God will lead you into your gifts and callings if you are being faithful where He has you now (cf. Lk.16:12). Just begin to do what you know how to do like Cornelius did. Begin to pass out tracts. Find some poor people in your town and take them groceries every week and buy clothes for their children. Then God will see that He can trust you and you will be promoted.

But if you split the church, you are in trouble with God. Unless you repent, your ministry will never grow and will probably be split again. That is what usually happens since we reap what we sow. The Absalom spirit sown will be reaped by the person who split the original church.

When God has a call upon a life for ministry, there is a right way and a wrong way for this ministry to be brought forth. There are several problems in this area today. Training is necessary. Paul trained Timothy and others. Elijah trained Elisha. You have to be trained. This is perhaps the reason the Church has so far been a failure. God wants to change this by calling the Five-fold offices He ordained back to their original calling—to train the saints for the work of the ministry. We need to examine the whole mission of the Church from the viewpoint of the Book of Acts. If so, we will realize that the modern church idea—you organize a church in order to bring sinners there for salvation—is erroneous.

The church exists for training the saints to minister salvation, healing, marriage counseling and other ministries out where the people are located. Most of them are not in church on Sunday. I believe we should have altar calls and pray for sinners to accept Christ as the Holy Spirit leads, but the modern evangelical idea that the sole purpose of the church—that of being a place for sinners to come for salvation—is false. It should be a place to worship God, of refuge for the Church and a place of training. That is why we have emphasized the training center concept in the churches for the thirty African nations where God has called us to work. In the early Church, there was a unity of the faith and the Spirit, but this unity extended to love and concern for one another, unlike our churches today.

Most churches today try to emulate the success of the mega churches when God may have called them to do something else. We must learn to measure success like Dean Witter used to say, “One church at a time.” Find out what God wants you to do and do it. But we can definitely see that it must involve training for ministry. In the past, this has not occurred largely due to the pastor wanting to maintain absolute control and not delegating. Many pastors who would work at discipling or training others in ministry were betrayed and rewarded through church splits. But because they are no longer discipling others, many saints no longer attend church because they feel their gifts are not being developed or even allowed to operate.

Ministers must learn that God will only promote them, raise them higher in spiritual development, and increase their anointing as they train others. This is a spiritual principle. We cannot allow the Dark Kingdom to hold us in bondage through fear that if we develop others, they may display better gifts or charisma and take the church away. The situation is a lot like love. If you are afraid of being hurt, you will never love because you are afraid to take the risk.

Years ago, while I was speaking at a large church in the Houston area, the pastor got up before the service and announced that they would be going back to meeting in homes because they could no longer pay for the building where they were meeting. As I went home that night, I wept and prayed for over four hours. My spirit was very troubled that a church was in effect closing its doors (it is now no longer operating). During this time of prayer, the Lord gave me a vision. I saw a piece of pipe about four inches in diameter and four feet long. A hand holding a crystal pitcher full of water moved toward the top of the pipe and began to pour water into the pipe. The hand poured all of the water from the pitcher into the pipe and then my view shifted to the bottom of the pipe. Only a few little drops of water were coming out the bottom of the pipe. My brothers and sisters, God holds you responsible to teach others and minister to others what you have learned. If you do not or if you will not, then He cannot give you any more “water” until you give out what you have already received. This is a spiritual principle that cannot be violated.

That church was closing because the members were too lazy to do anything for God. They were not giving to others the Water of the Word they had received. God does not like laziness and indeed He will not bless it. Many churches have never learned to knock on doors or even witness about Christ to their neighbors. Such churches will never make an impact for the Kingdom of God. How far would the early Church have gone if they had just stayed in the Upper Room and said, "We'll pray the people in here."

It takes both prayer and work to build the Kingdom of God. Most Christians do neither. Perhaps you do not feel comfortable knocking on doors. If so, then at least dedicate yourself as an intercessor for your church.

But do something lest you do nothing. God will not bless laziness, spiritual or physical. It takes work to build anything. Because in the Church we tend to spiritualize everything, this truth can best be illustrated by the story of a farmer who was visited for the first time by his pastor.

The pastor remarked about how beautiful the man's farm was and kept going on and on about how God had blessed him with such a beautiful farm. Finally the old farmer replied, "Yes, God has indeed blessed me with a beautiful farm. But you should have seen it when He had it all to Himself."

DISCIPLING OTHERS

God holds each of us responsible to disciple others. Paul always had someone such as Timothy that he was discipling. Jesus told us not only to preach the Gospel, but also to "make disciples of all nations."

Do you want success in ministry? The only way to be successful in ministry is to follow God. Why be in the ministry if you're not going to be successful? Would you purchase a Cadillac dealership if you knew before hand that it would not be successful? Of course not! Yet people do it in ministry all the time. You cannot be successful in ministry if you are not called because you

must be called to be anointed. And without the anointing, your ministry cannot be successful. Whenever God calls you to another office, He will anoint you. The five offices each have a different anointing. You must be anointed to pastor a church. If you split a church and start one without the calling and anointing, you cannot be successful. So, let's be as wise in spiritual matters of this nature as we would be in the business world where we would never go into business knowing we could not succeed. You cannot promote yourself. Rather it is your duty to promote and develop disciples. I believe every church of any size should have those God calls and anoints, without which these ministries and offices will never be brought forth.

THE ANOINTING FOR YOUR CALLING

You must first be called by God and then anointed. Then, no matter the adversities that come against you, you will succeed because God is with you. He has anointed you just like He did Jesus, our model for ministry. Jesus had to be anointed by the Spirit because He laid aside all His glory when He came to earth (see Philippians 2). This is called the great *Kenosis* which means “emptying.” Although the Son of God, Jesus still had to be anointed. He said He was anointed (Luke 4) and the Holy Spirit said it of Him.

“How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and
With power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were
Oppressed of the devil; for God was with Him.” ♥ Acts 10:38

He is our model and yet He had to be anointed for ministry. How much more then do we need the anointing of the Holy Spirit! Jesus did say to go into the whole world and preach the Gospel. But it must be in accordance with the will and anointing of God. For example, we see that Paul was forbidden to preach the Gospel in Asia.

“Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the Holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia.” ♥ Acts 16:6

So we must come to understand that God calls and anoints each of us with gifts and callings that differ. He will also add more gifts as we are faithful or when He changes our calling or Five-fold office.

Your success and how you will be judged as a Christian by the Lord depends upon what you do with the gifts and callings God has placed upon your life. Success is not building a large church or ministry as we have mistakenly assumed. *Success* can be summed up simply as “how closely we follow the Holy Spirit.” Please endeavor to do so and get started right away, like yesterday.

UNITY OF THE BODY

In 2004 the Lord gave me a message for our church in Montana about unity titled *Unity at What Price?* The Dark Kingdom seeks unity for the Church but it’s a false unity—a unity of compromise that is not true unity at all but rather a weakening of the *true* Gospel and of the Body of Christ. True unity can only be brought about by and through Five-fold ministry.

The other facet of unity is that of the *unity of the Body*. We must endeavor to obtain unity in the Body. We can see from the Bible what occurs when there is not unity of the Body and every member is not doing their part. This situation is discussed in I Corinthians 12. We are told that there are “diversities of gifts” and in verse 7 that the manifestation of these spiritual gifts is given to “every man” (and woman), meaning of course those in the Body of Christ and not every single person in the world.

He then goes on to state and discuss these “spirituals” or spiritual gifts. There are nine of them and they are discussed separately in this book. Now notice what happens if there is a lack of unity in the Body.

“If the foot shall say, ‘Because I am not the hand, I am not of the Body’; is it therefore not of the body? And if the ear shall say,

‘Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body’; is it therefore not of The body? If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If The whole were hearing, where were the smelling? But now God hath Set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased Him. And if they were all one member, where were the body?’”

♥ I Corinthians 12:15-19

No part of the Body is more valuable than any other part. We cannot all be eyes, ears or feet. We have to do what He has called us to do or there will be a schism or break in the Body. A chain is only as strong as its weakest link. The Church is only as strong as her weakest member. We are all called of God for a ministry. And to the extent we carry out that ministry, the Body is strong. To the extent that we are all endeavoring to disciple others and one another, the body is strong. The Church has been weak because we have not understood this truth. We have been content to let a few well-known ministries do all the work.

But God does not work that way and He is calling for us to wake up to this fact today. He is calling forth ministry in the local churches and these saints—called to ministry—must be trained. If we do not train them, the Body will remain weak.

One of the main reasons why this has not occurred, i.e., the training of the saints for the work of the ministry, is because the *ministry model* that is normally exhibited by pastors and evangelists is wrong—it’s not biblical! If you’re a true Five-fold minister, then you are not a one-man show. The Bible says in Ephesians 4:8-16 that your major responsibility is to “mature and train the saints for the work of the ministry.” That means you are actively praying and seeking the Spirit of God regarding the saints you are working with in order to fulfill this scripture so that they become mature and are operating in the spiritual gifts God has given them so that the Body is strengthened and edified.

The Holy Spirit today is calling for unity within the Body of Christ so He can accomplish the mission the Lord has given Him to do during the Church Age.

Can we assist Him by striving to be in unity within the Body of Christ? The primary tool for unity in the Body is the Bible. As long as churches stay on the Word as the final authority on how they conduct their affairs there will be unity. If you study the Church in China you will learn a fascinating fact. As long as the churches only used the Bible they were in unity. But when they allowed denominational and doctrinal viewpoints to come in from various missionaries the churches became fragmented and no longer in unity.

But once we have this unity, how do we keep it? The answer is given in Ephesians 4:3—through *peace*. As you study this chapter, notice the emphasis upon unity and words that imply unity such as oneness.

It is when we *all* come in the unity of the faith that this weapon of our warfare will be staggering to the Dark Kingdom. For then we will be a mighty army in unity instead of just a series of fragmented groups of soldiers.

And as the scripture says, we will no longer let them appeal to our individual pride and ego to promote disunity. We will then have matured—we will no longer be children tossed to and fro by the Dark Kingdom. What a glorious day that will be. Praise the Lord!

29

PRAISE and WORSHIP

“Let every thing that hath breath praise the Lord. Praise ye the Lord.” ♥ Psalm 150:6

There is great power in praise and worship. The Church is just now beginning to realize this, but only in a few isolated churches. By praise and worship, we are referring to true praise and worship. This is different from what many churches call praise and worship. It is *not* singing hymns from a hymnal, although there is a place for this. It is not a special number by the choir. That is music, but not necessarily praise. What is the difference? True praise is always from the heart and *spirit*. Even among the churches today that have gained some understanding of what praise is, the praise portion of the service is often not really praise because it is not from the spirit. It can become merely “religious behavior,” coming from our minds like songs from a hymnal. To prove this point consider the following words of Jesus:

“But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall Worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such To worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must Worship him in spirit and in truth.”

♥ John 4:23-24

HIGH PRAISES

Then there are also what we call High Praise. This type of praise rarely happens in a church service—it should, but rarely does. It is easier to enter into High Praises when praising God in the privacy of your home. Every Christian should regularly praise and worship God at home and not wait for church on Sunday or Wednesday night. There is great power in praise and especially High Praise when you actually enter into the very presence of God.

Praise, especially High Praise, is a tremendous weapon of our warfare. The Dark Kingdom cannot stand your praise and worship of God. The devil himself used to usher in the praise unto God. Now, every time he hears a Christian praise and worship God, it reminds him of what he lost thousands of years ago. It is also a reminder that the worship he sought to steal from God will never be his. He will never ascend to the throne of God. No, his place will be with the spiritually dead in the Lake of Fire that burns forever and ever. He will enjoy the Second Death, which is eternal death. Every time you praise God, you remind him of his previous high position in the Kingdom of God, his failure and of his eternal destiny in the Lake of Fire.

The Bible says that God inhabits the praises of His people. I have seen this occur in some church services. The people become caught up in a spirit of praise that turns into High Praise. Then the Lord comes into the midst of the congregation. You can sense His Presence.

Sometimes you can actually hear the wind of the Spirit blowing or see what appears to be smoke like that mentioned in the Old Testament when God occupied the Temple and the priests could not stand to minister. This smoke just seems to roll in like fog across the San Francisco Bay. And then, like the priests in the Old Testament, people will begin to fall under the Power of God as His Presence and Glory fills the room. Sometimes it will only occur at the front of the church. His presence will make your eyes tear uncontrollably. They will run like a faucet.

Anyone who comes to the front will instantly fall under the Power of God and receive healing or whatever miracle they need from God. Many who have never spoken in tongues will begin to do so instantly. They will lie there, often as long as several hours, under the Presence of the Holy Spirit. And after He leaves, one feels so refreshed. It is indeed a glorious experience that should occur more often than it does in our churches. And the main reason it does not occur more often is simple. The people have not been taught how to praise God and many ministers, especially music ministers, are not close enough to the Holy Spirit to find out what He wants to do. Consequently, the church will not get into the High Praises of God. This is too bad. God will often speak to us through prophecy with the Song of the Lord when we have entered into High Praises. This Song of the Lord can be in song or on a musical instrument. It is beautiful. Even on a musical instrument such as a saxophone, you can sense the anointing and you will know that it is inspired music.

IMPORTANCE OF THE PRAISE MINISTRY

Listen closely. Next to the senior minister, the most important ministry in the church, any church, is the praise and worship ministry. This is a new revelation to us. In most churches, they pick the choir, piano player, etc., according to talent. This is wrong. It should be according to the anointing. There are many called to be a Psalmist who have a special anointing to lead praise and worship. Next to deliverance ministry, this is perhaps one of the most difficult ministries in the church. Why? Because to be effective (translated following the Holy Spirit), this minister must spend as much time as the pastor in prayer, meditation in the Word, and private praise. And, in addition, this person must then be able to follow the pastor during the service and change the order if the Holy Spirit so leads the senior minister.

In addition to the tremendous refreshing which comes from praising God, what other benefits are there for the spiritual warrior? You can receive

answers to your needs through the power of praise. It seems that whenever we learn not to be selfish and pray only for ourselves, God can and will meet our own needs. This often happens in intercessory prayer and also in praise. As we praise God for the answer to our needs, He meets and often exceeds those needs.

We need to learn to stay in an attitude of praise toward God. This is an area of extreme ignorance by most of the Church world. How to praise God and to stay in an attitude of praise is not taught to us. The Bible tells us to “pray without ceasing.” How do we do this? Did the Holy Spirit put those words in the Bible because He was at a loss for words? No! We pray without ceasing only as we change our prayer. Remember the kinds or types of prayer we have covered? We pray without ceasing as we stay in an attitude of prayer and use the different types of prayer all day long.

For example, perhaps your regular time of prayer is early in the morning before work. You begin your day with the Bible and prayer. Then as you drive to work, pray in the Spirit or praise God in the Spirit during this drive and continue to do so during the day. This is how we pray without ceasing.

Normally, I personally spend my late evenings in praise and worship to God. I have anointed praise music especially for this purpose and play it as I lay on the floor praising God in my living room. The music assists me in praising God. Get in the habit of playing that soft, worshipful, anointed praise music in the evening as you lower the lights and enter into an attitude of praise and worship to the Father, Son and Holy Spirit. This music is also beneficial in your automobile, as it will have a relaxing effect upon you as you drive.

In its truest sense, praise is a form of prayer because it is communication with God. And I personally find that it is during praise that God often speaks to me the most clearly. While attending a ministers’ conference at a large church several years ago, I went to the prayer room to pray between services instead of going to eat. I was praising the Lord in English when a group of pastors

from Central America came in and began to pray in Spanish. Since I speak Spanish, I began to worship and praise God in Spanish as well. Then I paused to listen to the beautiful prayers and worship going up to God from these men. All of a sudden God said, “If my people could just spend five minutes in my Throne Room listening to the cries and prayers coming up before Me from the whole world, they would never ask me to give them a heart for missions.”

GOD COMMUNICATES WHEN WE PRAISE HIM

Praise almost always results in two way communication with God. This is true for several reasons: (1) We are closer to God spiritually during this time thus our spirits are more easily able to pick up what He is wanting to communicate to us, and (2) our minds are quiet thus making it easy for us to hear.

One reason many Christians never hear from God is because they never shut up long enough for Him to answer them. God is a perfect gentleman and He will rarely, rarely ever interrupt you while you are talking. Like David, we must learn to practice listening skills and learn to sit before the Lord.

“Then went king David in, and sat before the Lord.”

♥ II Samuel 7:18

Based on a study of David’s life, it is my belief that the reason he enjoyed such favor with God and the closeness and trust he had with God as reflected in the Psalms, is due to this one fact. David knew how to sit before the Lord—he learned this as a young boy. He knew how to come into the presence of the Lord with praise. He knew how to thank and even make requests of God. But, above all, he knew how to listen. We all need times where we just sit before God and let Him speak to us. When ministering at ministerial conferences, I always share something taught me by the Spirit—the fact that ministers, and in fact every Christian, needs to have a spiritual checkup every 6-12 months just as they do a physical checkup. This is where you go away (it cannot be

done at home, too many distractions) with a notebook, CD player with some anointed praise music, and your Bible. You spend seven days alone with God and let Him speak to you. During this time, you will learn how to “sit before the Lord.” If you have never done this, you will find it will be difficult at first. We are so activity-minded that we have a problem shutting off our brains. But after a day or two, you will feel more comfortable and by the time you leave after seven days, your notebook will probably be full.

PRAISE IS AN OFFENSIVE WEAPON

Praise is indeed one of the secrets to not only receiving from God, but also in fighting a successful spiritual battle against the enemy. Praise is an offensive weapon that you can use against the members of the Dark Kingdom. They hate to hear a Christian praise the Lord, especially when the praise is in support of your faith. For example, suppose you are believing God in the area of finances. As soon as you release your faith, like an armored division, the Dark Kingdom swings into action.

They begin to attack your finances, especially when you plan to use the money for the glory of God. They attack your finances vehemently. First the automobile breaks down. Then the washing machine is next, followed by the air conditioner. When you get that repaired, something else goes haywire.

This is not just Murphy’s Law or a coincidence. The enemy has begun his attack to change your mind through coercion. In Africa, they have ways of preventing a brand new car from ever starting again no matter how many mechanics look at it. They are involved in stopping you and they have power if you do not use your spiritual weapons.

But if you will begin to praise God anyway and thank Him for meeting the need you have believed Him for in the area of finances, the answer will come. In this instance, you are using praise to protect your faith. After you have

finished praising God, your faith will be stronger, not weaker. Therefore, you have not only honored God with your worship, but you have also increased your faith. And in so doing, the answer will manifest sooner into the physical realm where you need it.

As you can see, in one sense praise can not only be considered a form of prayer, but also a form of confession. When you are praising God, you are thanking Him for all His blessings and it is only natural to thank Him for the finances you are believing and have released your faith for.

This same scenario could hold true for any area in which you are believing God. If you are diagnosed with terminal cancer, don't give up and die. Begin to confess healing scriptures while praising God. The demons which are operating the cancerous cells in your body will leave before you die because your praise is adding *action* to your faith. And, like the book of James says, "faith without action (corresponding action) is dead." That means your actions must be in line with your confession and your faith.

If you cannot praise God and you allow the devil to keep you depressed all the time, then I can guarantee you won't get healed. Why? Because your *attitude* reflects a lack of faith. If you had *faith*, then your actions would be to praise God and thank Him because according to your faith, He *has* already healed you. We have many marvelous testimonies of such healings. When you understand how these principles of faith, confession, prayer, and praise all work together, then your days of being fooled by the Dark Kingdom are over.

Again, never forget this as long as you live and it will help guard your faith—*everything* originates in the spirit realm first. Your healing is no exception. And think of some of these weapons of warfare we have discussed—faith, praise, confession—as being the spiritual substance which makes the bridge for the healing (or whatever) to cross over and manifest in the physical world.

Remember, if Daniel had quit praying, believing and praising God after only a few days, he would not have received an answer. This is one of the main reasons why many Christians do not receive an answer in the physical realm. God sends the answer from the spiritual world right away, but our lack of faith, patience, thanksgiving or actions *prevents formation of the bridge for our answer to cross into the physical world.*

Praise is a very important weapon of our warfare. Let me emphasize two points again:

1. Begin to practice a regular, family time of praise at home.
2. If in ministry, be careful and in much prayer about those you choose to serve in the music ministry. We minister deliverance all the time to people in music ministry who are Agents of the Dark Kingdom. While we may not have as many of these Agents in the churches in America, the truth still holds that the persons we choose for music ministry must bear the fruit of the spirit. If they are sinful, they *will corrupt* the praise and worship of the entire church and make it unacceptable to God. Even if they're not sinful, if the music is not anointed then it's of little value. Remember, the anointing is God's *stamp of approval* on worship as well as the preaching/teaching.

Former Agents of the Dark Kingdom told me that this is the number two ministry in any church targeted by the Dark Kingdom. Satan knows the power of praise. He wants to pollute the worship of each church so it will not be acceptable to God. Therefore, he often uses his Agents to infiltrate the praise and music ministry of our churches.

Learn the power of praise as a spiritual weapon and use this weapon every day of your life.

30

YOUR INHERITANCE IN HIM

**“But as surely as God is faithful, our message to you
Is not “Yes” and “No.” For the Son of God, Jesus
Christ, who was preached among you by me and
Silas, was not “Yes” and “No,” but in Him it has
Always been “Yes.”**

♥ II Corinthians 1:18-19 NIV

When discussing the weapons of our warfare, it is important to include our inheritance by virtue of our relationship with Jesus. Some of these weapons deal with this, of course, but we should study and know all of our rights and privileges as a result of being in the Family of God.

The Bible indicates that we, the Church, are *joint heirs* with Christ Jesus. Yet how many of us have really taken the time to study the Bible, especially the New Testament, just to find out what our inheritance really is? Even a better question is how many of us live like we have an inheritance?

If you received a phone call from an attorney tomorrow stating that you had received an inheritance and would you please come to his office to read the

will, you would probably break the speed limit getting there. Yet we in the Church tend to just drone along every day not really knowing what our inheritance is in Jesus.

It is my observation that this is one of the main reasons most Christians live such defeated lives. The devil ruthlessly attacks and, not knowing your inheritance and weapons, you melt before him like butter on a hot stove. God is displeased with this. He has given us an inheritance. Let's find out what it is and use it against the Dark Kingdom.

This is one of the primary reasons many Christians never mature. They never find out what belongs to them; therefore, their prayer life is ineffective because they do not know what their rights and privileges are as a child of the King. I believe that the only tears we will weep in Heaven, other than tears of joy, will be over what we learn we could have done or could have had if only we had known our inheritance. Remember, that inheritance is not future. It is future also because we have not received all of our inheritance yet and will not until after the resurrection of our bodies. But by virtue of Jesus and His position, we have a large part of our inheritance now if we will just appropriate it.

According to a recent Gallup Poll, only 10-15% of professed Christians in the United States and Canada read their Bible with any regularity. Most do not even spend an hour a month in the Word. Because I have ministered in over thirty foreign nations such as England, Spain, Mexico, the Philippines, Japan and many nations in Africa, I can say that the statistics there appear no different. Yet of those Christians who do read their Bibles with some regularity, many still live defeated lives simply because they have never found out what belongs to them. They have never researched the promises of God contained in the New Covenant of the Bible.

DISCOVER YOUR INHERITANCE

There are about 150 separate scriptures in the New Testament with a promise to you by virtue of your being in the family and in Him, Christ Jesus. The exact wording may include pronouns such as in Whom or in Him, but it is still a promise to you who are in the Family of God. Start at the first of the New

Testament and go through it looking for these promises. Underline each one and begin to categorize them. Then begin to meditate upon these promises after you have compiled a complete list. Let them roll over and over in your mind until they get down into your spirit. Study closely the book of Ephesians, which alone has about thirty-five such promises.

If you will do this, then you will have another great weapon of warfare at your disposal; you will know what is rightfully yours and the devil will not be able to fool you and get away with it. You will be like the junior high boy who walked up to the school bully as the bully was writing in his notebook. He asked the bully what he was doing. He replied, "I'm making a list of everyone in the whole school that I can whip." The other boy looked over his shoulder at the list and remarked, "Hey, my name's on your list! You can't whip me!" The bully responded, "Oh, I guess I'll have to take your name off my list then!"

Yes, praise God, when you learn your inheritance in Jesus, the members of the Dark Kingdom will have to remove your name from their list.

Always remember that one of the main weapons the Dark Kingdom uses against the Church is *depression and discouragement*. Yet if you will meditate upon these promises of your inheritance, you will find it impossible to stay depressed. You cannot do it. And don't ever forget—depression is always, every time, an attack from the Dark Kingdom.

The servient spirits are used in this manner to come against you; this is one of their chief functions. They know if they can keep you depressed, you won't feel like praying, praising the Lord, reading the Word or helping the poor. You will be too immersed in your own problems.

But if you take this list of God's promises as a joint heir and make it very personal—apply them directly to your life—then you will find it impossible to stay melancholy. God's promises are too wonderful. He has given us all things that pertain unto life and godliness through great promises.

"According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that Pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that Hath called us to glory and virtue. Whereby are given unto us

Exceeding great and precious promises, that by these ye might be Partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is In the world through lust.” ♥ II Peter 1:3-4

Just think, we are partakers of Divine Nature! How incredible! So, be encouraged this day to find out what God has promised you as a joint heir. Explore and meditate upon these “exceeding great and precious promises” and you will find a very wonderful weapon to use against the enemy. This weapon, when used with confession, will make you victorious and keep the Holy Spirit and the angels working on your behalf. So research these promises and appropriate them to your life. You will find the task is like prospecting for gold or diamonds. Then use these promises in your confession, faith and your prayers as a powerful weapon against the Dark Kingdom.

31

THE POWER OF CONFESSTION

“Seeing then that we have a great High Priest who has Passed through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, Let us hold fast our confession.”

♥ Hebrews 4:14 NKJV

One of the great weapons of our warfare is our confession of faith. This has been briefly covered in discussing other weapons and will be developed more fully in this chapter. It is a powerful weapon that is almost totally neglected by most of the Church.

There has been quite a bit of teaching on the confession principle in the last 30 years, especially by those in the Faith Movement. However, the rest of the Church world has neglected most of this teaching. Perhaps this is because many went overboard with the confession principle by scolding anyone who ever said a negative word. The idea was put forth by some teachers that the only reason anything bad ever happens to you is because of a negative confession. This is absurd.

While a negative confession is not good, the idea of anything negative in your speech or actions completely negating your faith is not true as evidenced by Abraham, the Father of Faith, as well as others such as David in the Bible. None of us is perfect. We have an enemy out there and bad things are going to

happen to us irrespective of the type confession we make or whether we are in God's will.

Many have taught that if you are in God's perfect will, bad things will not happen to you—the devil cannot get through to attack you. Apparently, however, the Dark Kingdom does not believe this as evidenced by what they did to Job. Although some teach that the reason Satan was able to attack Job is because of his fear, I do not believe this is the case. God, in essence, said to Satan that, "There is no one righteous like my servant Job." Let's face it. If Satan could attack Job, he can attack anyone. He attacked Jesus did he not?

The devil's job is to steal, kill and destroy. And he is very good at his job. He is a ruthless adversary who will attack relentlessly as long as he has an opening or opportunity.

But confession is an important element of the Christian faith. It is like anything else in the Faith, however, it must be kept in balance. The same thing has occurred with other restored Truth to the Body of Christ; it is taken to an extreme. Extremes in the area of confession include prosperity. While it is the nature of God to prosper us because He is a loving Father, God's idea of prosperity is not the same as man's like many other ideas (*cf. Isaiah 55:8*). The Lord told me in 1981 that "money was the lowest form of prosperity." Then in 1998 the Holy Spirit shared with me the *highest* form of prosperity. He said, "The highest form of prosperity is to be in the presence of God."

Teachers who say you should spend every waking moment confessing a Cadillac or Mercedes or a new house should read Matthew 6:33. Please understand. I believe the Bible teaches prosperity, but when taken to the extreme—that if you are not prospering financially it is because of your confession of faith is simply not always true. We are told that whatever we confess, whether good or bad, will come to pass. Without minimizing the importance of confession, this is not always true. There are a number of factors involved in what we receive in life.

CONFESSiON OF FAITH

Whenever we hear the term confession in an ecclesiastical connotation, we immediately think of our confession of faith in Jesus as Lord. While this is a

confession, it is not the confession which we use as a weapon of our warfare. The Dark Kingdom does not usually war against this confession of salvation unless they believe they can reclaim you immediately by making you backslide. During the many decades I have been a Christian, the devil has never once told me I was not saved and in the family of God. He has, however, personally threatened me and spoken profanely against the Kingdom of God and the People of God.

But as we mature and progress along the Christian walk and our knowledge of the Word and our authority increases, then the Dark Kingdom will try to stop this maturation process in order to minimize the threat to their kingdom and control of the earth. A military soldier is not afraid of a tiny baby. Neither is the devil afraid of a baby Christian. But if that baby is allowed to grow and mature—if he is allowed to learn about spiritual warfare, his weapons, and how to work in tandem with the Holy Spirit—then there is a real threat to the Dark Kingdom. This is why so much energy is devoted to stunting your Christian growth and preventing your ability to utilize spiritual weapons.

Because I have learned much about the devil and have personally confronted him on six occasions, I feel I know him intimately. The Lord has shown me many things about the Dark Kingdom. And let me tell you, the devil does not mind if a few people go to Heaven. He would rather nobody did, but he is a realist. He knows many will. But he also knows that he can keep his Dark Kingdom intact and take most human beings to hell if he can prevent the majority of present Christians from maturing.

For example, he will allow you to pass out tracts even though he knows a few people may get saved. But if you start casting out demons or giving yourself to intercessory prayer, he will fight your ministry vehemently because you are then disrupting his kingdom. He has fought hard to win these people he is controlling through possession, and he will not give them up easily—they represent a big capital investment to him. At this point, you have become a big threat to the Dark Kingdom and Satan will add your name to his military operations hit list—you have joined with me in being marked for death.

There is a confession of Jesus as Lord and there is the confession of our sins (I John 1:9) after we become Christians. However, the confession we are dealing with in this chapter is not these, although the confession of sin is

important as a weapon. This is because the devil uses condemnation against us so effectively. If we do not know that we can confess our sin and receive instant forgiveness—that God then forgets our sin—the devil can hold us in bondage, telling us how worthless and what sinners we are.

CONFESSİON OF THE WORD

But the confession of faith we are dealing with here primarily applies to the confession of God's Word over our lives and circumstances. This type confession is an extremely powerful and effective weapon over the situations the Dark Kingdom brings against us. It is only when we begin to make a positive confession of faith regarding the needs, wants and desires in our lives that God will begin to make those confessions a reality. But just because you happen to express some doubt every once in a while during a period of satanic attack, does not mean God will abort your faith or that your prayers won't be answered. We see this from Abraham. If Abraham had trusted God completely with perfect faith, then he would not have needed to introduce Sarah as his sister due to his fear of death. I can see the work of the Dark Kingdom behind the scenes orchestrating this fear in Abraham's life. Yet Abraham ultimately did receive fulfillment of the promise. I'm sure this is because he repented of his behavior and lack of faith.

This can happen to us all because it happened to the greatest men and women of God in the Bible. Consider Elijah after one of the greatest days of his life against the prophets of Baal—he fled from Jezebel because she threatened to kill him. Why didn't he go up against her like he did the prophets of Baal? There were many more of them and he knew that the downfall of Jezebel and Ahab was imminent because he had prophesied this to them. The Bible shows us the weaknesses of these great men and women of God for a reason.

“Elijah was a man just like us. He prayed earnestly that it would Not rain, and it did not rain on the land for three and a half years. The prayer of a righteous man is powerful and effective.”

♥ James 5:17, 16

The Holy Spirit allows us to see the weaknesses of these great men and women of God so we will realize they were like us—great in faith, but sometimes discouraged and tired of the daily spiritual attacks.

Another excellent example of this principle is King David. He had been anointed King, yet it never seemed to come to pass. He waited and waited upon God, refusing to take the life of Saul. Then one day David became discouraged and said, “It’s all over. One day I will just perish at the hands of Saul” (I Sam. 27:1).

You see, this is our nature and Satan knows it. He is counting on you to give up your confession, your dreams, your vision of ministry that is planted by God’s Spirit deep within your spirit. Don’t feel badly just because the devil comes by and you experience a flood of doubt or regret. Just don’t quit! Keep running your race and keep confessing God’s Word. Indeed, these attacks by the Dark Kingdom are a sign that the devil is worried about you. Perhaps he already knows something about your ministry that has been birthed in the spirit realm. Hear the Word of the Lord,

“And let us not be weary in well doing: for in due
Season we shall reap, if we faint not.” ♥ Galatians 6:9

As I write the final draft of this chapter, I sense the Spirit saying there are many of you who are close to giving up. No! Don’t give up! I recall a story about a painting which portrayed a man playing chess with the devil. It was titled something like “Checkmated by the Devil.” But a master chess player observed the painting one day and discovered that the man still had one move left. He was not hopelessly checkmated as the painting had sought to depict. Perhaps that painting is representative of your life. You feel there is no hope. Yes there is! You still have one move left. Turn to God in repentance and tears. Begin to confess the Word of God over your circumstances; then change will come and you shall receive life again.

THE SPIRIT AND THE WORD AGREE

We can never rise above our confession of faith in the things of the spirit. Why is that? Because the Holy Spirit is sent to be our Helper and He is in

unity with the Son and the Father. He wants to be in unity with you, but *your confession* can stop this from occurring if it is not in line with the Word. You see, He wants to help you, but He is not able to do so because He just flat does not *agree* with your confession. This is one of the most powerful revelations I have received from the Lord and His Spirit. But if you will repent and begin to confess what God's Word says about the situation, both the *Logos* and the *Rhema*, then He will start to work for you again.

Listen closely and remember this very important spiritual fact—***in any area of your life where you do not have faith in agreement with the Word of God—where you do not have a positive confession that agrees with the Bible—that is an area where the Dark Kingdom is defeating you in spiritual warfare.***

And until you throw these demons out, it will remain a weakness in your armor of God. Until you are victorious in that area, anytime you begin to do something for God, the devil will attack that weak area. He will not attack at your point of greatest strength. He is a good military strategist. By attacking your weaknesses, he will divert your attention away from your strengths. You must strengthen yourself spiritually for these last day spiritual battles. They are intense. You must learn to confess the Truth and the Truth is the Word of God, not these circumstances the Dark Kingdom has brought against you. Adverse circumstances are subject to change through the Word and prayer.

Therefore, if you want to grow up and mature spiritually, take a look at your life and the attacks by the Dark Kingdom. Is there a repeated pattern? Look at your life and ask the Holy Spirit to help you do some introspective thinking. Find the areas of weakness and begin to shore them up with the Word. Find promises in the Bible that cover this weak area and begin to confess them over your own personal life. Write your own name in the Bible where the scripture is given. As you continue this process of confession, victory will come. You will reap if you faint not.

As we discussed in the chapter on faith, this is perhaps one of the most difficult areas for us to grasp. When the doctor tells you there is no hope, it is difficult to confess, "I am healed because the Bible says so." Likewise, it is not easy to confess abundance and prosperity when we have just been fired from a job and our wallet looks as if an elephant just stomped on it. But we

have to decide that the Bible is true no matter how the circumstances appear to our five senses. And the Bible says we are blessed. We have inherited all things through Christ Jesus.

We simply must find all these “exceeding great and precious promises” and continue to confess them as true. Then the Holy Spirit will begin to move on our behalf to bring the manifestation of the Word of God to pass in the spirit realm. But take heed. As the Bible warns us about the Israelites who perished in the desert, we are to take heed that we do not fall through the same example of unbelief. Remember, the promise of entering the Promised Land was given to all of them. But only two of the original group actually made it into the Promised Land and inherited that promise from God. All the others, including Moses, because of one reason or another, did not reap the promise even though they all saw the miracles of God.

Is not the same true of us today? Has He not given us a “more sure word of prophecy?” Can we not discern and learn from the mistakes of our spiritual ancestors? God gave us the Bible to meet our needs, but He is not going to spoon feed and wet nurse us. The Bible is like a gold mine with each nugget being a precious promise. We have to dig it out and appropriate each gold nugget promise to our lives. We must dig them out, confess them and then act upon them. Because of a vision the Lord gave me in 1998 we call this process “pulling out the Scroll.”

HOW TO MAKE YOUR CONFESSION

How do we make a positive confession? Let’s give some examples by considering two different needs you will have in your life at some time or another. First, let’s consider the need of money. The devil is strongly attacking Christians in this area today. He wants to hold us in financial bondage through the work of Mammon and the servient spirits. This is not only to make your life miserable, but also to keep you from doing anything for the Kingdom of God. Let’s face it. No matter how spiritual we are, it’s difficult to operate without money in this world.

In 1980, the Holy Spirit took me through the entire New Testament and pointed out confession scriptures. I still have the leather New Testament in

which I highlighted each of these confession promises with a yellow highlighter. Several of these scriptures pertain to finances. Before we discuss these, however, we should say something about giving to God.

You must be in covenant with God to receive and to be in covenant with Him means you are bringing tithes, alms and offerings to God. If you are unwilling to do this, no confession in this area will work because you have not planted any seed. I can go out in the field behind my house every day and confess that wheat is going to grow, but if I have not planted any seed, it will not grow. You must plant seed for a crop to grow. The “seed” for finances is your alms, tithes and offerings—both are Old and New Testament commands from the Lord.

A tithe by definition is 10%, but we are to give offerings above this for the work of God in the earth. We give alms to honor God among the poor. When you tithe, you are only returning to God what is already His. You have not given Him anything yet. I recommend you start out giving a minimum of 15% of your gross income. Of this amount, the tithe should go to support the local church you attend. If you don’t support the local church, how can it continue as a viable, spiritual force in the community? You might say, “My church is not a viable spiritual force in the community.” Then you need to do something about it by starting an intercessory ministry at the church. If you don’t feel you can support this church, then go to one you can support. Be faithful. God is looking for faithfulness and Apollyon is contesting you in this area.

What you give to the Lord as offerings above this 10% tithe should be done as a result of prayer and not emotional appeal. Don’t ever give as a result of some emotional appeal. Jesus didn’t come on the television back in His day and spend 80% of the time begging for money so His ministry wouldn’t go under. Whenever I see someone do this on television, I always scream real loud, “Good! I hope you do go under. Perhaps then someone with some faith and a real ministry will be on here!” Many churches today are using professional fund-raisers and many ministries are encouraging people to put their offering on Visa or MasterCard. God is not pleased with this. But He does want you to give and He will bless you for it.

What we recommend is what the Lord led us to do many years ago. Open a separate account for these offerings you wish to give to the Lord. If your

family agrees on 5%, then you take 5% and place it in this account every payday. Then you pray as a family. You say, “Lord, there’s \$300 in your account. What do you want me to do with it?” Make a list of worthy ministries like the Salvation Army and others in your hometown and begin to pray over them as a family. You should also include the poor as well—this is giving *alms* as defined by the Scriptures. Take some poor families groceries and clothing. You would be amazed at the impact this will have on your children as well. For perhaps the first time, they are seeing a personal demonstration of the gospel. We always put together several sacks of groceries and then include some gospel tracts in each one. We also encourage our children to give away their old toys to the poor and we take many to Africa where the children have no toys.

But assuming you are in covenant with God in the area of tithing, begin to search the Bible for scriptures that promise you finances. These include:

“Give and it shall be given unto you . . .” ♥ Luke 6:38

Notice, you have to *first* give before you receive! Change the pronouns in these scriptures and make them *personal confessions* like the following:

“For I know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ. That though He was Rich, yet for my sake He became poor so that I through His poverty Might become rich. I sow generously so I shall also reap generously. God loves a cheerful giver and I am a cheerful giver. Now He Who Supplies seed to the sower and bread for food will also supply and Increase my store of seed and will enlarge the harvest of my Righteousness. I will be made rich in every way so that I can be Generous on every occasion, and through my generosity will result Thanksgiving to God.” ♥ II Corinthians 8:9; 9:6-7, 10-11

Notice in this scriptural confession that Jesus became poor so that you could become rich. Study these passages carefully and prayerfully—let the Holy Spirit guide you to truth. Jesus did die for our prosperity in this life as well as that to come. He said in John 10:10 that He came so that we might have a *more*, not less, abundant life.

But let me emphasize again. If you are not obedient to God in the area of giving you are opening the door for Satan to attack your finances. The Lord showed me this very powerfully in December of 1989, while I was preaching in Akure, Nigeria. Another minister was supposed to preach on tithing that night. He did not show up so they asked me to minister and even though I had no prepared notes I began to minister as I was led by the Holy Spirit. While preaching from Malachi on the tithe a vision broke right before me and I saw Satan go before the Throne of God and say, "This person is not a tither so I have a right to attack their finances." Apparently, when we are not in obedience to God in the area of finances we give Satan the legal right to attack us in this area. This knowledge should also make us search for other areas of our lives where we are in disobedience to God such as in relationships.

If you have a different need such as healing, then you find and confess healing scriptures such as I Peter 2:24. Again, make the confession personal with your name. The secret to using this weapon of our warfare is to *make our confession according to the Bible*. God is bound to honor His Word and not the traditions of men or what we think about the Bible. It does no good to cry to God and tell him you don't want to die of cancer because you have three little children. You must bring the Word to Him and the Dark Kingdom in your confession of faith. Jesus gave us an excellent example to follow. For everything Satan said to Him He responded with, "It is written." As you continue to confess what the Bible says about the situation, the Holy Spirit will bring your confession of faith to reality in the physical world. *Because the Spirit and the Word agree, he is able to work on your behalf.*

To further amplify and clarify this confession principle, let me give one final personal testimony concerning healing. You may have heard certain ministers say that once they got the revelation of Divine Healing, they had not been sick in thirty years. But they never told us they were attacked. We listen to their message and we marvel at their great faith in the area of Divine Healing, but we did not realize that it did not come automatically—they were not somehow immune from attacks simply because they were great men of faith. Just like you and me, they were still subject to attacks by the Dark Kingdom. The difference is, they learned what to do about it through confession of the Word.

But I had to learn this for myself. It has been an unfortunate situation that many in the Five-fold ministry have consciously fostered the idea that they were somehow special—they had such great faith that they were immune from the devil or that they were the great healing evangelist and if you could just get them to pray for you, your troubles would be over. This attitude, which is contrary to God and the Bible, has resulted in the destruction of many great ministers of God. God will not share His Glory—the Bible is emphatic about this.

No, there are still going to be attacks. The real question is, when the attack comes, what do you do about it? This testimony will show you what to do.

After first learning the truth about Divine Healing, I had not been sick in twelve years. I had experienced some minor skirmishes with the enemy, but not any severe attacks. Then my family came down with the flu in 1990 while I was in Africa. Several nights after I had returned home, I awoke at 2 A.M. with *every* symptom of the flu—aching body, sick to my stomach, nauseous and sweating. I could have said, “Well, I have finally become sick after all these years. Twelve years of perfect health is not bad but now I have the flu. Maybe twelve years of good health was just a coincidence.”

The urge to go to the toilet and vomit was overwhelming! But guess what—instead I walked the floor from our bedroom to my study down the hall over and over again and confessed the Word of God concerning healing. I confessed I Peter 2:24 and other Bible verses. I prayed and I also talked to the devil. I did this for over *two hours* and every symptom was still there. But then as I continued on in my confession of the Word, in an instant, every symptom of the flu just left like a bird lifting off my shoulder.

You see, it wasn’t automatic. I had to battle those demons for two solid hours before I gained the victory; it didn’t happen in just 10 minutes. Just remember, the servient spirits are like FedEx or UPS coming to your door to deliver a package—if you don’t (won’t!) sign for it, they won’t give it to you. Remember, God the Holy Spirit does what you do and He will confirm the Word you are confessing with “accompanying signs” even in your bedroom. As a result of learning this, I have been able to walk in Divine health for 34 years without any sickness or disease. Bless His Holy Name forever!

32

THE BAPTISM OF POWER

But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you:" ♥ Acts 1:8

Although hard to believe, there is still much controversy about this spiritual phenomenon today despite a century having passed since the beginning of its widespread restoration to the Church at Topeka, Kansas, in 1900 A.D. This is because one of the major problems in the Church is people don't believe the Bible even though they say they do. We find many scriptures discussing this baptism both during the ministry of Jesus and after His resurrection. The most notable and often quoted is found in Acts 1:1-9.

Jesus said they (His disciples) were to go to Jerusalem and wait for the promise from the Father of the Holy Spirit. He said that when the Spirit came upon them they would receive power.

The Pentecostal or Neo-Pentecostal camps today will argue that there is an experience subsequent to salvation called the Baptism of the Holy Spirit. It is about this experience, they say, that these scriptures expound. While traditional Pentecostals will admit that a person receives the Holy Spirit at conversion or the New Birth, they also point to this scripture and others to

show proof that there is indeed an experience subsequent to salvation. Sometimes it is called the “Infilling of the Holy Spirit.” When discussing this experience, the analogy is often given of a glass of water. When a person is saved, they receive some water (the Spirit) in the glass (their body). But when they receive the Baptism of the Holy Spirit, it is like having a full glass of water. It is the difference in the amount of the Holy Spirit a person has. I have heard this analogy from the pulpit many times, but I do not see how anyone could believe it.

Most denominational, traditional churches reject this view, and rightly so, saying a person receives the Holy Spirit at the moment they accept Christ and are born again. Generally speaking, the main area of controversy centers on the issue of speaking in other tongues. Traditional evangelicals would probably accept Acts 1:8 and admit there is a baptism of power if it were not for the tongues controversy. This, of course, is because they have never spoken in tongues. If they admitted its truth, then it would be an admission that they do not have the full presence of the Holy Spirit or the baptism of power. Were it not for this experience of which they cannot boast, most would have no difficulty with the Power Baptism. Of course, they would probably not know what was meant by “Power” here, but that is another point. They would probably spiritualize it and say this baptism was to give one the power to live the Christian life. The Power we are speaking of here is, of course, the Power of God operating through a human being by virtue of the indwelling presence of the Holy Spirit—the same Power that operated through Jesus, Peter and the Apostle Paul.

There are basically three camps or positions: (1) those who believe it is scriptural to speak in tongues today, but say it is not for every Christian, (2) those who believe tongues are a sign of the Baptism of the Holy Spirit and that every Christian should speak in tongues, and (3) those who believe tongues is Satanic in origin because true *tongues* ceased with the early Church.

This third group circulates tracts titled “The Delusion of Tongues”; they try to dissuade Christians from attending Pentecostal or Charismatic churches, pointing to scriptures such as I Corinthians 13:8 as evidence that, to quote them, says “tongues have ceased.” But in reality, this scripture does not say that at all. It merely says tongues *shall cease* some day and that knowledge

will vanish away. According to their interpretation of this scripture, to be consistent, they would have to say that all knowledge ceased at the same time tongues did.

Because they categorically deny the existence of Biblical tongues in the world today, they believe that any manifestation of tongues today is Satanic in origin. There is, of course, a manifestation of *other* tongues from the Dark Kingdom—I dealt with this in Chapter 13. I stated, in essence, that I have never seen the operation of Satanic tongues except by members of the occult—never ordinary sinners or true Christians.

So the real century-long controversy has been over the issue of “other tongues.” Pentecostals insist that for a person to be baptized in the Holy Spirit, they must speak in tongues. Evangelicals would say they do not. Most would say tongues passed away with the early Church. What is the truth? There is not only much debate over this issue, but also much has been written. Consequently, we do not intend to make this chapter a treatise on this spiritual experience. However, we must discuss it because without a true Baptism of Power, you will have great difficulty in your spiritual warfare against the Dark Kingdom. And it is my opinion that some of the problems which have led to this controversy have arisen due to the Greek text.

PNEUMA HAGION

First of all, in the original Greek the words translated Holy Spirit are *pneuma hagion*. But as pointed out earlier, there are no capital letters in the Greek so when the word *pneuma* is used, the context must be determined from the text. Now, when we add *hagion* it is clearer since *pneuma hagion* would be translated literally, spirit holy. However this is not always the translation of these words. Often it is easy to tell in the Greek if the Holy Spirit is meant because we can look for a definite article, *the*. But often the article is not present, yet the words are still translated Holy Spirit.

Like many other passages of scripture, there seems to be several passages where modern translators follow the traditional King James when the Holy Spirit is definitely not meant. We should also realize that in the early 1600s when the King James was completed, the use of capital letters was much more pronounced than we find in our usage of the English language today. Words

such as Court, Altar, Priest and many others were always capitalized in everyday usage. Of course the King James Bible today is not the same as that originally published in 1611, and while we have made some great strides in our modern translations, it should be understood by the reader that often the translators, even if they know better, might not go against tradition. A good example of this is found in Psalm 8:5 where the Hebrew for God, *Elohim*, is translated angels. Although there are arguments and ancient sources (Septuagint, Vulgate and Targum) for translating *Elohim* as “angels,” in this passage the preferred translation is definitely God.

Tradition can be a powerful force and, as Jesus pointed out in Matthew 16, we should be on guard against it. This tradition of the King James, the Authorized Version, has carried over into the New Testament as well. There are many examples covering *Pneuma*, but one we will discuss is Galatians 5:16-18 where most translations add the definite article “the” not present in the Greek text and they capitalize spirit. As in Romans 8:4, the Bible is really talking about the “new nature” of the born-again, Spirit-filled new creature. We are to live and walk “in the spirit” or according to our new, Spirit-created nature.

The Apostle Paul, writing under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, was contrasting the works of the flesh, or old nature, with that of the new nature or new spirit man. He is showing us that the works of the flesh, our old nature, are going to be contrary to the new, born-again nature of the spirit (not Spirit) man. Naturally, only those who partake of *pneuma theou* (Divine Nature or Spirit of God) are the possessors of this “new nature” so, in a sense, the argument may be pointless concerning the contrast between the flesh and the spirit.

However, when it comes to our discussion of the Baptism of Power, the distinction of *pneuma* takes on more importance. There are 385 passages of scripture and approximately fifteen different usages of the Greek word *pneuma* in the New Testament. It is necessary to differentiate these in order to gain more insight into this “Baptism of Power” or “Baptism of the Holy Ghost.”

When we compare Luke 24:49 with Acts 1:4 we can see that *pneuma hagion* means, “Power from on high.” Thus we can see that the words *pneuma hagion* mean the Divine Power of God the Holy Spirit *as manifested in His*

operations. So we normally see the Giver, the Spirit, and the spiritual gifts or gifts of power which He bestows upon us as being separate in the Greek. When we closely examine all fifty passages where *pneuma hagion* occurs without the definite article, “the,” we can see that they are never used of the person of the Holy Spirit, but always of His work, gifts, and operations. Consider the words of Jesus in this passage from Luke 24:49:

“And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you:
But tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with
Power from on high.”

Once we realize this fact—that the *promise* Jesus is talking about is one of *power*, spiritual power—we can see that evangelicals are correct in their assertion that one does not *get* more of the Holy Spirit after the New Birth. One does, however, receive by faith this Divine Power or Gifts of the Holy Spirit from Heaven. This experience should more accurately be called the mighty *Baptism of Power*. So, in a sense, the Pentecostals are correct in that there is an experience subsequent to salvation; however, it should not be called the Baptism of the Holy Ghost as they refer to it, but rather the Baptism of Divine Power.

We can see this if we note certain other scriptures in addition to those already given, two of which will be mentioned here. In Acts 2:4 the word *pneuma* is used twice indicating that the Giver (the Holy Spirit) and the gifts (*pneuma hagion*) are both mentioned. We see this also in a key text, Acts 1:8, as well. Here the Lord identifies *pneuma hagion* with the gift—power from Heaven (cp. Luke 24:49; Acts 1:4-5). A careful study of these and, indeed, all fifty passages containing *pneuma hagion*, prove the gifts and the Giver are not the same.

Why is this important? Not to prove a doctrine—we have enough religious doctrine to float three battleships. Rather, it is to convince you, especially if you are an evangelical and not familiar with this Power Baptism or been taught to fear it, that this Baptism is a tremendous weapon that you need for spiritual warfare. Because, quite frankly, without this Gift of Power from the Spirit, you will probably not survive with what the Dark Kingdom is going to bring on the earth in the closing hours of human history. Don’t get me wrong. You’ll still go to Heaven because you have trusted in the Blood and Name of

Jesus, but you will not have any Power to stand against Satan here in this world.

CHRISTIANS NEED THE BAPTISM OF POWER

Christians today need the Baptism of Power. If you have no power in your life today, believe me you will be no match for the devil. Is it God's will for everyone? The answer, to be succinct, is a resounding, "Yes!" (*cf. Acts 2:39*)

All three members of the Godhead gave gifts to men. The Father gave His dearly beloved Son. And, as the Bible says, we are complete in Him. God the Son, Jesus, gave gifts to us in the Family of the Church as well. These include: His life, the Holy Spirit and the Five-fold offices of the Church—apostle, prophet, pastor, teacher and evangelist.

Jesus was the only man to stand in all five of these offices at one time. When He was taken up into Heaven, it is as if His mantle, like Elijah's of old, was torn into five pieces that drifted back down to the earth. His offices and the anointing for each have been given to the Church for our perfecting or maturing into unity. The Holy Spirit has given us these nine gifts mentioned in I Corinthians 12. These gifts are designed for spiritual warfare and will be discussed next.

It has been my experience that every Christian who receives the Baptism of Power will have at least two of these nine gifts operating through them. They may all operate through you from time to time, but normally two or three will preferentially operate. But like other spiritual things, if the gifts are not developed, they will lie dormant and never materialize. This is what the Dark Kingdom hopes will happen to you.

Look at Acts 1:8 again. Now you know why the average church in the world doesn't have any power—because the average member doesn't have any power. And God is tired of it. Even His infinite patience is wearing thin. The Body will never come into maturity until the saints are taught and developed as the Lord intended. We began to see more emphasis on this training in the late 1990s because that is what God is saying to the apostles and other Five-fold ministry offices at this time, but always remember this: you can't learn something from somebody who doesn't know anything.

A man came forward with a large group at a meeting I was holding in Africa. The man spoke no English but Yoruba only. When the pastor and I asked the people to repeat the sinners' prayer (there were about 120 that night who came forward), this man came forward to the front of the crowd and asked in Yoruba if he needed to pray this prayer since he had never sinned. This was the closest I have ever come to laughing out loud in someone's face in church because it so startled me. He told the pastor, who interpreted to me, that he was seventy years old and had never sinned! He was a member of a Catholic church. He had some further questions and we invited him to come over to the pastor's house after the service. One question he asked me was whether he should go back to his old church now. I told the pastor to ask him, "Why would you want to go back?" Here was a man who would have gone to hell despite being in a certain church all his life had he not heard the truth. Yet he went back there to his old church. Amazing. This is tradition and a powerful weapon Satan uses against all humans.

Please understand. I am not indicting the Catholic Church per se, the same situation occurs in many other type churches as well. The question you must ask yourself—whether you are Catholic, Baptist, Methodist, Lutheran, Pentecostal, Presbyterian or another denomination—is, "How much of what my church teaches is actually supported by the Bible and how much of what they teach is just the doctrine of my denomination?" Our ministry, Christ Church International, is non-denominational and we are striving to keep the doctrines and traditions of men out of our churches. My experience, however, is that most, if not all, churches have some false doctrine based on tradition rather than the Bible. But if your church is teaching heretical doctrine or it is dead, then find one that is not. You need to be trained in this day. The main purpose of the Five-fold ministry is to train the saints for the work of the ministry. But perhaps the professional clergy are too busy for this.

We have allowed the Dark Kingdom to sidetrack us into doing nothing but preaching tired, old sermons that no one is interested in hearing. We still tend to answer questions nobody is asking. That is why so many have left the churches today. They see no relevance to their lives. The questions of life they have are not being answered so they are turning to the occult. Yes, the Dark Kingdom is there ready to accommodate them. Ministers, we need to do our job of training and equipping the saints for the work of the ministry and then

our churches will become vibrant with the Life and Power of God again. It is only then that the world will want what we have to offer them.

But instead, we tend to follow some new program of the world, instead of the Bible, to attract people. Preaching psychology and success. What a shame because once people know the real power of God, they will never leave. We already have the greatest thing going—the Word of God. Why use tricks of the world: bingo games, sermons emphasizing success in life, entertainment, or Christian rock music concerts to attract the youth? The programs of men cause the Holy Spirit to leave; He doesn't need them or *their* version of the Bible. That is why there are no new births in such churches—there can be no spiritual births without the presence of the Holy Spirit!

This is one of the great deceptions of the Dark Kingdom—compromise. If they cannot get your pastor into false religion or doctrine, they will try compromise.

Listen to Apollyon, Ashtaroth and Baal, “Why not teach on psychology and success? You don’t need the Bible. After all, that’s what people are interested in today—how to be successful and have more money. You’ll have more people on Sundays if you do and then you’ll be successful, instead of a nobody. Besides, they aren’t interested in hearing the Bible anyway.”

If Satan, Apollyon, Abaddon, Belial and the others cannot get you into overt sin, they will try compromise. We see it throughout the Bible. But when they try that tactic on you, answer like Nehemiah did:

“And I sent messengers unto them, saying, I am doing a great work,
So that I cannot come down: why should the work cease, whilst I
Leave it, and come down to you?” ♥ Nehemiah 6:3

If you are already a Christian, you need the Baptism of Power in order to withstand the attacks of the Dark Kingdom. The Spirit said through the Apostle Peter (Acts 2:39) that it was for every Christian. Ask the Lord Jesus to give you this mighty Baptism of Divine Power today.

33

GIFTS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

“But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every Man to profit withal.” ♥ I Corinthians 12:7

One of the major spiritual weapons given to the Church is really a series of nine weapons given by the Holy Spirit—the Gifts of the Holy Spirit or Spiritual Gifts. It's more a shotgun than a rifle and can do great damage to the Dark Kingdom.

These Gifts of the Holy Spirit are paramount for Christians today engaged in spiritual warfare. Yet, sadly, they are not emphasized, even among the Charismatic churches that taught so much on these gifts back in the 1970s. It is a Bible fact that any need in your life can be met through one or more of these nine supernatural gifts. Armed with this knowledge, it is important for you to learn what these gifts are, how they operate, and be activated in them so that they will function through you. The knowledge of these gifts and how to receive them is a necessity if you are to engage the enemy in combat.

This chapter is not a treatise on the gifts; it is merely a primer. Nine is the number of the Holy Spirit. These gifts of the Holy Spirit can be divided into three groups of three. Three is God's perfect number—Father, Son and Holy Spirit. The three groups of three indicate perfect perfection. The mighty gifts

of the Holy Spirit are perfection. You need them. There are three power gifts that *do* something; three vocal gifts that *say* something; and three revelation gifts that *reveal* something.

We will briefly discuss the operation of each of these nine gifts. My experience in ministry is that all of these gifts can operate through a person who has received the Baptism of Power, but that normally two or three of them will operate through each person preferentially. In my own case it is the revelation gifts, the gifts of healings, working of miracles, faith and prophecy.

The extent to which the Holy Spirit can operate these gifts through you depends on a number of factors such as your sensitivity to Him, your ability to yield to Him, your faith, the degree of anointing present, and your ability to recognize the gifts He wants to manifest through you. If you do not recognize the gifts, then He would not be able to use you in their operation.

Also, the scripture says there are “diversities of operation.” That means they operate different ways through different people. For example, the Word of Knowledge operates at least ten different ways that I know of through people, and there are probably many other ways with which I am not familiar. If you were unaware of these different ways or diversity of operations, then it would be difficult for the Spirit to manifest the gift through you.

There are three basic steps for receiving and operating these powerful gifts.

1. Be born again and receive the Holy Spirit and His gifts with the evidence of speaking in other tongues. This means you have received the Baptism of Power we talked about which includes these gifts. When you speak in tongues, it may only be two or three words at first, but it will grow. Your spirit has to be trained through the exercise of the tongues. Some people call this their “prayer language” and this differs from the Gift of Tongues referred to here. As mentioned when we discussed prayer, the real power of the “tongues” or foreign languages is in intercession. You can pray the perfect will of God for someone in intercession through tongues. See Romans 8.
2. Learn about the Gifts of the Spirit: you can only have faith for what you have been taught from the Bible.

3. Be activated in these Gifts of the Holy Spirit and learn to operate them through your life and spirit.

In discussing these spiritual gifts, we will divide them into the three categories of their use for ease of understanding.

THE REVELATION GIFTS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

1. WORD OF KNOWLEDGE

The Word of Knowledge can be found in the following scriptures: (1) Old Testament – I Samuel 10:21-23; I Kings 19:4, 14, 18; II Kings 5:25-26; 6:9-12 and (2) New Testament – Acts 9:10-12; 10:9-20; John 1:47-50 and Acts 16:6-10.

The Word of Knowledge is the supernatural revelation by the Spirit of God of certain facts in the mind of God. This gift reveals, through a man or woman, certain facts, which their minds could never imagine, their ears have not heard and their eyes have not seen. This gift is when God gives a person a tiny sliver of His knowledge.

Among other ways, this gift often operates through tongues and interpretation, prophecy, an inward revelation (a knowing), an inward voice, an audible voice, a dream, a vision and being caught away in the spirit (see Revelation 1 and Ezekiel 37-40). Some also have this gift manifest through them for healing of others when they feel a pain in a certain part of their body. This signifies, as a Word of Knowledge, that God is healing someone in the congregation of that malady at that moment.

This gift allows one to *know* certain things, facts, and events, which only God knows. The Holy Spirit communicates this knowledge to your spirit for the edification of the Church and this can include you. Often He will show you what the devil is trying to do to you or your family. This gift is especially useful in spiritual warfare and it works closely with the Word

of Wisdom which shows the same type knowledge, but it is future, whereas the Word of Knowledge is always past or present only. These are the two main gifts you will see operate through the office of prophet in the Church, along with the vocal gift of prophecy.

2. WORD OF WISDOM

This gift often operates with the Word of Knowledge. The Word of Wisdom is concerned with everything within the realm of knowledge, which is future in nature. Whether events, facts, purpose, or motive; human, satanic or divine; natural or supernatural, these are all contained within the realm of this gift. This gift encompasses everything God knows about the future, which is everything. God is outside of time so He knows everything future and indeed sees the present from the future. Again, however, like the Word of Knowledge, this gift only gives the receiver a tiny, tiny fraction of God's knowledge of the future about a certain situation.

Because God is all-wise and because He is eternal, He is able to impart a small portion of this future knowledge to warn a Christian or to offer direction. To illustrate how this gift might operate in the life of a Christian in its simplest form for spiritual warfare, let me relate another testimony from my own life.

In 1985 I had a very vivid dream wherein I was called to the morgue. Upon arriving, I was taken to a room where the attendant pulled out a body with the sheet over it, obviously dead. When he pulled the sheet back from the face, I knew instantly it was my oldest daughter who was seventeen at the time. In the dream, I knew it was her in my spirit even though she was unrecognizable in the dream because her face was so badly distorted. In my spirit I knew she had been in a serious automobile accident and that the reason for her condition was she had been thrown through the window with tremendous force causing her extreme facial distortion and death. That was a Word of Wisdom. The mighty, loving Holy Spirit was showing me what the devil was planning for my daughter. He was laying plans to kill her in an automobile accident.

Had I not recognized this as a Word of Wisdom, she would be dead today. But what if I had possessed no spiritual discernment back in 1985 when the Lord gave me this dream. Instead, what if I had just said, “Oh, I guess I ate too much of that pepperoni pizza last night. I had a nightmare that Jennifer was killed.” Then I did nothing about it. There’s no question in my mind—she would be dead today. No, it wasn’t what I ate. It was the Holy Spirit giving me a Word of Wisdom so I could enter into spiritual combat and stop what the Dark Kingdom had planned for her death.

The Word of Wisdom will often come on the wings of prophecy along with the Word of Knowledge. This is especially true if it is a prophet doing the prophesying instead of simply the pure gift of prophecy, which is for edification.

3. DISCERNING OF SPIRITS

This last of the revelation gifts is a bit more limited than the first two in that it does not deal with all knowledge in the Mind of God, but only knowledge pertaining to spirits. This gift is limited to the spirit world and it is through this gift that one gains insight or knowledge into the spirit world. It does not deal strictly with demons and evil spirits, but with all spirit beings: demonic, human and Godly or angelic. This gift can also reveal the kind of spirit behind a supernatural manifestation, whether good or bad. The Holy Spirit will also operate this gift through us to warn us when a person we are dealing with has a *bad spirit*. Scriptural references for this gift include: (1) Old Testament – Isaiah 6:1-7; Ezekiel 1:4-3:15; II Chronicles 18:16-21; I Kings 19:11-18; II Kings 6:8-17, and (2) New Testament – Revelation 1:12-20; Acts 9:10-16; Acts 16:16-18. Notice especially in Acts 16 after Paul discerned the spirit, he cast it out. And notice that after the spirit had been cast out, the woman was no longer able to tell fortunes.

One of the most interesting operations of this gift I have witnessed occurred in 1986 when our ministry was located in San Marcos, a college town twenty-eight miles south of Austin. A hobo couple, John and Mary, came to my office one day because our ministry had a radio program and they had heard it. They were both college graduates, yet God had commissioned them to be hobos. They lived just like street people—they

often got food from the garbage cans—and believe me, they smelled like street people too. My office smelled for three weeks just from their backpacks being left there for a few days.

The day they arrived was a typical January day in central Texas—it was cold, windy and rainy. So, after they introduced themselves, I took them across the street for some breakfast and coffee. While I was talking to them about the Lord and we were fellowshipping, John kept saying, “I see pure, white light coming right out of your mouth.”

After he said this about five times during our conversation, I finally said, “What do you mean you see pure, white light coming from my mouth?” He replied, “Whenever someone is speaking to me, I can tell the spirit by which they speak by looking at their mouth. If they are speaking the truth, I will see white light. But if they are lying or if they have a bad spirit, I will see a black spirit coming from their mouth while they are speaking.”

This gift can operate many different ways, but often operates through a vision.

VOCAL GIFTS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

1. GIFT OF TONGUES

This gift is where a human being speaks in an “unknown” tongue or foreign language. It should be emphasized, however, to those of you not familiar with this gift that the language is unknown to the speaker, but may be known to others present. Normally it is unknown to all present, but the fact is these really are foreign languages and occasionally a person is present in the service who can speak the language. We see this happening in Acts 2:7-8. There were some present who understood the different “tongues.” This gift has nothing to do with linguistic ability or with the mind or intellect as far as the understanding is concerned. The Spirit employs the vocal organs to deliver a message in an “unknown tongue.”

This gift has caused confusion because it has been confused with the speaking of tongues in devotion or intercession. It is not the same. This gift is for use in

public assembly; for use in the Church. As such, those operating in this gift will carry a higher anointing than a person speaking in tongues in prayer or devotion. This Gift of Tongues is normally a message given to a local Body of believers for their edification. An interpreter must be present to interpret the tongues (not translate) since the congregation would not normally understand the tongues. Consequently, it would appear that tongues plus interpretation of those tongues is equal to the gift of prophecy.

This gift is a gift and ministry unique in that it is identified only with the Church. This gift, plus the interpretation of tongues, are the only two of the nine gifts distinctive of the New Testament; they are not found in the Old Testament. We are not told why this gift is unique with the Church Age, but it is my belief that its purpose is primarily for spiritual warfare. The Bible says in I Corinthians 14:22 that this gift is a sign to sinners. Rules for the use of this gift are given in I Corinthians 14 and we are told that this gift will not cease until the Holy Spirit is taken out of this world. We will not need this gift in Heaven because the language of the Spirit will be spoken.

2. INTERPRETATION OF TONGUES

This gift is the interpretation of a message or utterance given in another tongue or foreign language. Hence, it must necessarily be spoken in a language understood by the listeners.

It can function as words spoken inspirationally or sometimes it is given in the form of a vision which the interpreter will narrate to the congregation, but normally it is spoken words.

How can you tell if God wants to use you to give an interpretation? You will sense an unction in your spirit after a message is given in an unknown tongue. The words will flow from your spirit, not your mind, as you yield to the Holy Spirit and let Him give you the words. The words are not a literal translation, but an interpretation—what we might term a paraphrase—of what was said in another language.

3. PROPHECY

Prophecy means to flow forth or to forthtell and foretell. It is a miracle of divine utterance in a known language by both the speaker and the hearers. It has nothing to do with human thought and natural reasoning. Prophecy is the highest of the vocal gifts because it does not require another person present, as do Tongues and Interpretation. Prophecy is an inspired utterance in a known language given for “edification, exhortation and comfort.” It is normally spoken to one or more members of the Church, but on occasion is spoken to unbelievers.

Prophecy can carry either more or less anointing depending upon the person doing the prophesying. This gift is unique with the prophet’s ministry in that it will carry a greater anointing than prophecy by a saint prophesying from the congregation. Additionally, through the office of the prophet, prophecy can also carry impartation or activation making the words prophesied become activated in the spirit of the person receiving the prophetic word.

POWER GIFTS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

1. GIFTS OF HEALINGS

This gift, plural in the Greek, is when the anointing of God flows through a person to cause a supernatural healing or healings of disease without natural means of any kind. It is the impartation of the power to heal, cure or make whole the human physical body without any human aid. It is exercised by human beings who are believers that normally have no knowledge of physiology or diseases. The purposes of this gift are to deliver the sick and to destroy the very works of the Dark Kingdom in the body.

This gift is the predominant one we see functioning through our Lord in the Gospels. The person through whom this gift functions can actually feel the anointing or power flow from their hands into the diseased person. The person receiving ministry will often feel either a warm sensation like warm oil going through their body or else they sometimes feel a very cold sensation flowing through them. This gift will normally be such that different persons through whom this gift is operated by the Spirit will have the greatest results with one

or two ailments specifically. For example, various diseases may be healed but not on a 100% basis whereas perhaps a specific disease like cancer, may be healed all the time. This again is the diversity of operation mentioned in the text on Spiritual Gifts.

Supernaturally speaking, there is no difference between healings and miracles. As such we often intermix the two and call certain healings a “miracle.” Any supernatural healing could be called a miracle. However, I differentiate the two by saying that healing is a restoration, whereas a miracle is more “creation” such as restoring a withered arm, causing a leg to grow out in length or replacing (creating) an organ that had been previously removed through surgery.

2. WORKING OF MIRACLES

This gift was more in operation in the Old Testament than in the New although Jesus called casting out demons a “miracle.” In the New Testament, we see more manifestations of the Gifts of Healings. Why this is the Bible does not tell us. But I know that in the very last days, we will begin to see this gift more in manifestation.

This gift is the intervention by God into the ordinary course of nature. This gift is a specific act such as when God parted the Red Sea or when Jesus turned the water into wine at Cana.

Through the Gift of Working of Miracles, the possessor of this gift participates in the same power of God that created the world and the universe. It is this same mighty power of God flowing through a person unto another to effect a miracle. The Lord God lets a small amount of His Omnipotence flow through a human being.

3. THE GIFT OF FAITH

This gift is the hardest of the power gifts to understand. It is considered the greatest of the power gifts. It is the gift given by the Spirit of God to a person so that he might receive a miracle. It is different from the Gift of Working of

Miracles in that it is passive whereas the Working of Miracles is active. With one, a person *works* a miracle whereas through the other a person *receives* a miracle. Through this gift, God just performs supernatural deeds for a human with no human strength involved. When you receive this gift, God does something supernatural for you; something for which you could not possibly have human faith for its accomplishment. A good example from the Scriptures is Daniel in the lions' den. Daniel didn't *do* anything (although he probably prayed). He just lay down and went to sleep. God shut the mouths of the lions through the operation of this gift.

The gift of faith is always required to raise the dead. Raising of the dead will become quite commonplace before the Bride is taken out of the world. People will be raised from the dead just as easily as they are cured of a headache today through prayer. The next great restorational move of God in the Church is that of "resurrection of the dead" talked about in Hebrews 6 just before "eternal judgment."

God will use this move of *resurrection of the dead* in a mighty way. There will be many, many documented cases of people being raised from the dead. However most people, even Christians, will not realize that this will be a clear *sign* from the Lord—a warning sign—that His last move—eternal judgment—is close at hand!

The Amplified Bible translates the Greek as the gift of "Wonder-working Faith." I like the term supernatural or special faith. I like that because this is a gift of special faith; a faith that is beyond human faith. Those who possess this gift are able to believe God in such a way that He honors their word as His own and supernatural things are brought to pass miraculously. This gift will operate on an unprecedented level just before the Second Coming of Christ. The Angel of the Lord worked with Brother William Branham during his healing campaigns; he said this was called "The Third Pull" and that it would "usher in the return of Christ."

All nine of these Gifts of the Holy Spirit are given to the Church in order for us to walk in victory in the area of Spiritual Warfare. If God is not using you through one or more of these gifts, you should pray and seek the Lord to manifest these gifts through you. You should also find a church where they teach on the gifts and activate the saints in the operation of these gifts. This

may be a formidable task. You may have to attend some special seminars on your vacation to do so, but these gifts are so valuable that no saint should be without them in this day. They are given for ministry to the Body of Christ and also to the world.

The Lord wants the *whole* Body to be used in spiritual warfare in these last days. That is the purpose of *true* Five-fold ministry – to train and equip you for spiritual combat. If you are sincere in wanting to be used of God with these gifts, begin to earnestly seek Him and ask for these gifts to be manifested in your life.

There is much written about the Gifts of the Spirit, but not much on the activation of these gifts in the life of a Christian. You need to not only know what they are, but also how to be *activated* in these Gifts so they will function through you. If you would like a more detailed discussion of these gifts as well as the Fruit of the Spirit, please order our book online entitled *The Gifts and Operations of the Holy Spirit*. It will teach you much about the Holy Spirit and help you fulfill your ministry and God's plans for your life.

34

PERSONAL PROPHECY

“... I shall speak to you either by revelation, or by Knowledge, or by prophesying ...”

♥ I Corinthians 14:6

Although quite a controversial subject in ministry, personal prophecy is nevertheless a subject which must be discussed. It is a mighty weapon of our warfare that very few Christians even those who understand prophecy and the gifts of the Spirit, actually understand. But personal prophecy is a potent weapon that we can use effectively against the Dark Kingdom once we understand how. Personal prophecies are given throughout the Bible and we can learn from studying them.

Perhaps you may wonder what personal prophecy is? Or perhaps you know what it is, but you are not sure of the guidelines on how to receive personal prophecy or where to obtain reliable ministers who are prophets or who move in the prophetic realm. These and other questions will be addressed in this chapter.

As you will recall from Chapter 33, prophecy is an inspired utterance in a known language. Prophecy differs from tongues which, in contrast, is an inspired utterance or message in an unknown language. Both the speaker and the listener know the language when a prophetic message is given. Yet like an unknown tongue, the message comes from the spirit of the speaker or minister as opposed to coming from his mind as it would during normal speech. Prophecy carries with the words an anointing from God. The degree of

anointing may vary, but it is always stronger from a prophet than from any other minister because this is the main area where the office of the prophet is called to function—in prophecy and the revelation gifts of the Spirit.

A prophetic message from a prophet also carries the ability to activate or bring to pass what is prophesied as opposed to the gift of prophecy operating through another saint. In essence, this means that the Gift of Faith also functions to a high degree in the prophetic office. This is difficult to explain because spiritual things are sometimes hard to adequately describe, but if one is tuned to the Spirit, one can discern the difference in the spirit realm. There is a perceptibly higher, sharper anointing upon the words being prophesied by a prophet, and it goes right to the spirit of the person being ministered to with great activating power—through the Gift of Faith—to bring the prophetic message to pass. Consider these words of Paul to Timothy:

“Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by Prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery. Meditate upon these things; give thyself wholly to them, That thy profiting may appear to all. Take heed unto thyself, And unto the doctrine; continue in them: for in doing this Thou shalt both save thyself, and them that hear thee.”

♥ I Timothy 4:14-16

“This charge I commit unto thee, son Timothy, according To the prophecies which went before on thee, that thou by Them mightest war a good warfare; holding faith, and a Good conscience; which some having put away concerning Faith have made shipwreck.” ♥ I Timothy 1:18-19

A careful study of these two passages reveals some truth we have not seen before. Namely, that *personal prophecy* was both understood and encouraged by Paul and that he reminded Timothy to use these personal prophecies to wage “a good warfare.” These prophecies are spiritual weapons! Why aren’t we using these weapons? Here we see the picture of Paul reminding Timothy not to neglect the gift(s) given to him when he was prayed for and the presbytery laid hands on him. What is going on here? To what was Paul

referring? What is the presbytery discussed here and how does it function, i.e., how is it supposed to function? This is an area of almost total neglect in the Church today. God wants to remind us of the awesome spiritual weapon we have neglected.

Let's look at another scripture for additional clarification.

“Now there were in the church that was at Antioch Certain prophets and teachers; as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, And Manaen which had been brought up with Herod The tetrarch, and Saul. As they ministered to the Lord, And fasted, the Holy Ghost said, ‘Separate me Barnabas And Saul for the work whereunto I have called them.’ And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their Hands on them, they sent them away. So they, being Sent forth by the Holy Ghost, departed unto Seleucia; And from thence they sailed to Cyprus.” ♥ Acts 13:1-4

Spend some time on this scripture. In fact, spend a lot of time studying Acts 13-16 and you will learn much about the early Church and the offices of prophet and apostle. But here we need to notice several bits of information which the Holy Spirit is giving us in the Word.

First, this is an example of prophetic presbytery. There were prophets present here at Antioch as the Bible says in verse 1. *Second*, while they were worshipping the Lord and fasting, the Holy Spirit said something. Here we see what can happen when we come together in a true spirit of praise and worship—especially when we are fasting and seeking God as apparently these men were doing. We can learn the value of worshipping God and the type atmosphere in which He moves. *Third*, the Holy Spirit said something. How did He say something? Did He speak with a voice from Heaven? Possibly, but unlikely because that is not how the Holy Spirit speaks. The Father is the One who speaks from Heaven. Most probably He spoke through one or more of the prophets there in a prophetic, personal prophecy. The reason I say He spoke through more than one is because of what occurred. The Bible only

tells us that the Spirit said, “Separate for me Barnabas and Paul ...,” but when we read what follows, we see these words in the NIV:

“So after they had fasted and prayed, they placed their
Hands on them and sent them off. The two of them,
Sent on their way by the Holy Spirit, went down to
Seleucia and sailed from there to Cyprus. When they
Arrived at Salamis, they proclaimed the word of God in
The Jewish synagogues. John was with them as their
Helper.” ♥ Acts 13:3-5

Why did they depart immediately and sail for Cyprus? Why did John Mark go with them? Why did they preach in the Jewish synagogues? Evidently, the Holy Spirit gave them some direction for their ministry. He called them forth and Paul, along with Barnabas, received his call as an Apostle when the prophets prophesied over them with the laying on of hands. But it should be clear to us from what occurred immediately afterward that the Spirit had given further *personal prophecies* here at the Antioch Church.

I am sure Paul vividly recalled this scene when he was admonishing Timothy, whom he had trained, not to neglect the gifts and ministry given to him by the laying on of hands by the presbytery. Laying on of hands is an elementary doctrine of the Church. Here we see one of its functions—that of calling forth ministry and imparting the gifts and anointings for that “called forth” ministry to be accomplished. It is of course also used to impart other anointings such as God’s healing power.

Personal prophecy is a potent weapon that has been neglected. Many Charismatic pastors are afraid of it. But God is restoring its knowledge and full use to the Church today. Notice from this scripture in I Timothy 1:18-19, Paul’s instructions as a reminder to Timothy. He told him to remember the personal prophecies made to him because by doing so Timothy might fight the good fight of faith and avoid shipwreck in his life.

And in discussing shipwreck, most have believed this is talking about one’s faith being shipwrecked or else that Paul is talking about those who have rejected his counsel shipwrecking their lives. But it seems obvious to me that what Paul is really saying is that those who have not held onto faith by

warring with their personal prophecies have shipwrecked. He says, “Some have rejected these.” Rejected these what—what is he talking about? *Personal prophecies!* He told us in Corinthians to despise not prophesying. If you reject personal prophecy, you can become shipwrecked because you are not using one of your weapons to protect your faith. Notice he says, “holding on to faith ...” A personal prophecy can help you hold on to your faith. And to this discussion we will now turn our attention.

A RHEMA WORD

Whenever you receive a *Rhema* Word from God, whether it is from a prophet or through prayer and Bible study, you can use this Word to fight “the fight of faith” Paul is talking about in the letter to Timothy. A Word from God is used to strengthen our faith and make us “hold fast” as Paul says. If we do not, we can shipwreck both our faith and our lives.

How do we use personal prophecy to fight the good fight Paul was talking about? When we know we have heard from God, we are able to take that *Rhema* and use it as a sword (remember the sword of the Spirit is the *Rhema*) against the attacks of the Dark Kingdom. It must be emphasized that we should be reasonably sure that we have a *Rhema* from God. We will discuss this in more detail later—how to be sure. But let me illustrate personal prophecy as a weapon.

Suppose you receive a personal prophecy from a minister or prophet whom you know to be reliable. Let us assume in this prophecy God told you that He was calling you to start and pastor a church in a certain city. You share this with your spouse and family. You begin to wait for God to work out the details and you continue praying. You don’t jump up right away and move. It must be God’s timing or it will not work out.

Then tragedy strikes from the Dark Kingdom in the form of a heart attack. The doctor says you will probably not live another year and that you will be an invalid. Because you have this *Rhema* from God, you are able to enter into warfare with this personal prophecy and war against the Dark Kingdom.

In fact, the truth is that this is *precisely why* God gave you this personal prophecy! It was not just for personal direction, although it accomplished this as well. But He gave you the personal prophecy as a weapon for you to use because He saw this attack coming. As you and your family use this personal prophecy together in combat, your prayers, confession and faith will defeat the enemy's plan for your life. You will not die, but will surely accomplish what God prophesied you would do. But on the other hand, if you do not believe the prophecy—if you do not “war” with it like Paul told Timothy—if you say, “Oh me, I guess God didn’t really call me to go start that church.” Then, the potential for shipwreck is there unless you repent and begin to use the personal prophecy God gave you in spiritual warfare. This illustration can, of course, be extended to other areas of your life, but we find many examples in ministry because this is the chief apex of Satan’s attacks.

Another vivid example along this line occurred in Houston in 1981. One of the nurses had called Lakewood Church requesting prayer. A truck driver from Michigan was in intensive care at the hospital from a heart attack and was not expected to live. Pastor Osteen asked me to go pray for him. When I arrived at the ICU unit, the man’s fiancé was there with him and his daughter and son were in the waiting room. The doctor was in the hall and she said, “I’m glad you’re here. Without a miracle he will not live. He has lost over one-half of his heart and a person cannot live with this much of their heart gone.”

After entering the ICU room, one look told me he was in bad shape. I could see his heart was working feverishly just to keep him alive. Sweat was literally pouring off his body in little rivers. I anointed him with oil and prayed over him. Then I told his fiancé he would be okay. I had had some experience with these cases and I knew that if he did not know God, God would bring him back to at least give him one more chance to accept Christ. This was all part of the prayer that I prayed over him.

I went to the waiting room and talked to the son and daughter and my wife was comforting them there. We learned that none from the family were Christians and that the nineteen-year-old boy had never heard of Jesus. I can still vividly remember my shock and amazement that there was anyone in America who did not know who Jesus was. I went to my car to get a Bible to give to each of them. As soon as I got to the elevator, the Word of the Lord

came saying, "This sickness is not unto death, for I will raise him up." That was a *Rhema* Word! It was not a personal prophecy because no one prophesied over him. But this is an example of a *Rhema* Word that God gives you to war against the Dark Kingdom. I shared this *Rhema* with the son, daughter and fiancé as they accepted Christ that night. I don't know if they believed me about this word at the time or not, but the man did live and is still alive today, although the daughter was killed in an auto accident the next year.

Personal prophecy is *always* conditionally dependent upon your faith because God cannot move without faith on your part. It is the spiritual substance—as we have discussed over and over again in this book—that is required to obtain the answers to your prayers and requests.

RHEMA IS SUBORDINANT TO THE LOGOS

It must also be emphasized that personal prophecy is *always* subordinate to the *Logos* word of God, the Bible. Personal prophecy, along with the other methods God uses to impart His *Rhema* Word to us, are necessary in order to give us direction for our lives in areas not covered by the *Logos*. But the *Rhema* is always subordinate to the *Logos*.

For example, let's say you are married and you go to a church where people are being prophesied over by a prophet. He calls you forward and prophesies that you will leave your wife and children and become a missionary in Africa. You would know this is not a true *Rhema* because it conflicts with the *Logos*. God is not going to tell you to leave your wife and children. That is clear from the Bible, so you would count this prophecy as being false.

However, suppose you were called forward and the prophecy came forth over you that you would soon get a promotion and be moving to San Francisco. You know that is not covered in the Bible so it may be a true *Rhema*. A few months or even years pass and your boss asks you to consider a promotion at the San Francisco office. Your mind immediately flashes back to the prophecy and you may conclude that God is indeed directing your family to the San Francisco area. After much prayer with your wife, you accept the promotion.

DANGERS OF PERSONAL PROPHECY

Before closing this chapter on the powerful weapon of personal prophecy, there are a few *caveats* which should be discussed regarding personal prophecy.

1. As already discussed, it is subordinate to the Bible, always. If you receive a personal prophecy, be sure it is recorded so you can type it out and study it. Find scriptures that confirm the prophecy or *Rhema* word. If you discover any scriptures that contradict the prophecy, then the prophecy must be false.
2. If the personal prophecy concerns something you have never thought about, don't discount it. This is an area where I was fooled for years because I had been taught by those I respected in ministry not to pay attention to a personal prophecy unless it confirms something you already know from God. I learned from the Bible while studying the prophet's office that this is not true! There are no scriptures that confirm this idea whereas there are many which contradict it. In fact, this is often the very reason why God gives a personal prophecy; He wants to take us a new way we would not consider going. However, because I had such great respect (and still do) for these ministers, I was taught to be afraid of personal prophecy if it was not confirming in nature only. There are many examples from the Scriptures, e.g., the anointing of kings such as David and Jehu, that clearly refute this idea.

I have since learned that God often does use personal prophecy to confirm, but every time there has been some new truth and guidance given as well. Do not reject the prophecy simply because it does not confirm something. God may be revealing something new which is several years away that you have not even considered.

3. Use common sense when you receive a prophecy. Don't act on it right away unless it confirms something you are doing and gives additional direction. Just write it down and keep it. Pray and meditate over it. If it is a big step and is something new, ask God to confirm the

prophecy to you again in some way. After you have received several confirmations, then know that it is of God.

4. But now that you know it is definitely of God, there is still the final step—waiting on God to open the door. If you get ahead of God, then you will foul things up. Just continue to talk to Him and ask Him to open it up at the right time.

For, example, say you are a young person and you feel God is calling you as a missionary to Mexico. You sense this in your spirit. Just pray and continue to ask God that if this is indeed His will for you, He will open the door for the ministry at the appropriate time. Then when the prophetic word comes confirming your call as a missionary, you know it is God. But wait a minute. There is still some praying and waiting on God left to do. Where in Mexico will you go? What is His direction? Just continue to seek God and ask Him to open the door for your ministry in Mexico at the appropriate time.

Let me illustrate this principle from my own life again and you can see how these things work. In 1977, I had a night vision and saw myself preaching in a church in Africa. It could have been in the West Indies, but the women were dressed such that I knew it was one or the other and I sensed in my spirit during the dream that it was Africa. Because I know that the spiritual gift known as the Word of Wisdom often operates through night visions in my life, I believed God was showing me I would one day preach in Africa. But I didn't go out and get my passport the next day. I didn't book a flight to Africa that day. Where would I go? Kenya? Mozambique? No, I just pondered the vision like Peter did in Acts 10 and waited for God to bring it to pass in His own timing. And, of course, He did many years later.

Our whole ministry in Africa has been *supernaturally* brought about by the Holy Spirit. This is another way you can be sure it is of God. When God opens the door, then you are certain. If I had tried to bring forth the ministry in Africa my own way through the flesh and not the Spirit, I would have failed. Like all human beings, I have made a lot of mistakes in life. But by the grace of God, as far as I know I've never made a mistake in ministry.

5. Do not make the mistake of overemphasizing personal prophecy or you will find your spiritual senses being dulled. To illustrate, I know many people who live in certain areas of the country such that they get tremendous exposure to prophets and personal prophecy. Some of them work in ministry. Often I can talk with them for long periods of time and, in discussing ministry, they will constantly say, “The prophecy came over us that we should do this or that...” they never once say, “After three days of fasting and prayer, the LORD spoke to me to do this,” or “I sensed in my spirit that this was the way God was leading me.”

Remember, God can and does speak to us in many different ways. Look at the Acts of the Apostles and study the ways He speaks. And if God sees you are leaning too heavily on only one method, He will often withdraw speaking to you in that manner until you get back into balance. You should know and understand all of the ways in which God does speak to human beings. If you do not, He will not be able to speak to you as effectively as He would like.

Those who reject personal prophecy, however, as one of these methods are *limiting* God and missing a blessing. But on the other hand, do not come to rely on personal prophecy too much. If you do, then you will find your spiritual senses being dulled and you will not be able to hear from God yourself through the other channels He uses to communicate. I feel it is extremely important to add this because personal prophecy is much more in manifestation today because God has been restoring the office of the prophet to the Church since the late ‘80s.

Because personal prophecy is so powerful and so little understood in the Church today, we established a Training Center in Akure, Nigeria, to train ministers in the prophetic area.

But one minister friend of mine in Lagos, a wonderful minister who has built ten churches since 1974 remarked, “I thought that the offices of the prophet and apostle were done away with after the early Church was established.”

I said, “Dear brother, I’m surprised the devil could fool you the second time with the same lie. That is the same thing he told you about tongues—that it passed away after the early Church was established.”

It is also the same thing he will tell you, dear Christian, about miracles and healing as well. Any blessing God has for you, the Dark Kingdom wants to steal it away from you. They do this by keeping the Church in darkness about the Truth. But when the truth does finally come thanks to the precious Holy Spirit, then the devil is not whipped yet. He will launch another full-scale offensive at battalion strength using another of his great weapons, doubt. He says, “Okay, Apollyon, they’ve heard the truth finally in West Africa about the prophets and personal prophecy. But we’re not finished yet. We’ve got to stop that School of the Prophets. We still have our great weapon of doubt! Send Ashtaroth, Baal and some lesser spirits over there to cause doubt to manifest about this Truth.”

Remember the parable of the Sower. Only 25% of those who heard the Word produced a harvest. Why only 25%? Because the Dark Kingdom destroyed the other 75% through doubt, tribulation, and continuous combat brought against those who “heard the word.” Notice closely, they all heard the Word. Have you heard the Word concerning personal prophecy? If so, after you have studied it, begin to use this mighty weapon of our warfare to fight the same fight Paul mentioned to Timothy—the good fight of your faith.

PROPHETS AND APOSTLES

The offices of prophet and apostle are the two offices in the New Testament that speak as the Oracles of God. The prophet’s office, of course, existed in the Old Testament. We normally associate the apostle with the Old Testament patriarchs. These offices have not been done away with because Ephesians 2:20 says that the Church is built upon the foundation of the prophets and apostles. Like my pastor friend in Lagos, however, you might say, “Yes, but that scripture is referring only to the initial foundation of the Church.”

If this is true, and it is not, then why does the Holy Spirit tell us in Ephesians 4:11-13 that Jesus gave all five offices until we all come in the unity of the faith and maturity? Has the Church come to unity? How about maturity?

No, the foundational offices of prophet and apostle are still with us. God has been restoring them to our understanding more completely since the decade of

the 1990s. Once we come to understand the scope of these two offices and how they function correctly in the Church, many of the problems the devil has brought upon us will no longer work, e.g., church splits and doctrinal errors. In October, 1996, my wife and I were in Kalispell, Montana, when the Lord awakened me during the night and spoke, “The apostolic banner is beginning to wave and from this apostolic move I will bring order out of chaos.”

When we study the New Testament, especially Acts, we see that the Apostles and Prophets were the two offices who spoke as the oracles of God. Notice in particular Acts 15. When the Apostles Paul and Barnabas went up to Jerusalem in response to a doctrinal error, the Apostles and elders at Jerusalem sent two prophets, Judas and Silas, back with them to the church at Antioch. When we look closely, we will often find Apostles and Prophets working together in teams of two. Because of the importance of these two offices that God wants to restore in full authority to the Church, let us briefly discuss these two offices beginning with the Apostle.

This word means “a sent one.” An apostle is one sent on a mission. Jesus was an Apostle. Paul said that he was called to be an apostle. Other characteristics of this office include: maturity, understanding of Church government, a church planter or builder, one called to establish order in the church universal, and one through whom the Power Gifts of the Spirit, especially the Working of Miracles and Faith, operate.

An apostle exercises authority over those churches he has established, but works with other apostles and prophets to establish the Church universal throughout the world. Because Paul did not establish the church at Antioch, this may be one reason he declined to settle the doctrinal dispute himself; yet he worked there a great deal. An apostle should have a prophetic anointing as well with the revelation gifts and prophecy active in his ministry—as we see in Paul’s life—because he is the person responsible for those ministries in the churches he has established. Without the revelation gifts, it is difficult to be a Bishop and oversee a number of churches and ministries.

The office of the prophet, the other foundational ministry of the Church, is that of the *trumpet*. Prophets are God’s trumpets. They are those through whom He speaks to the Church. He does, of course, speak to individuals in the Church in other ways through the Holy Spirit, but here we are dealing

with this office. My experience indicates that one reason people are not able to hear from God is that often they do not recognize God speaking.

One way God speaks is through His prophets. There should be prophets in every church of any size. Consider this scripture:

“Let two or three prophets speak, and let the others [prophets] judge.”

♥ I Corinthians 14:29 NKJV

This scripture indicates that there were quite a few (at least five) prophets at the Corinthian Church. Where are the prophets in your church? The prophet operates in the revelation gifts so he is able to provide wise spiritual counsel and direction that is much needed in the local church.

It should be clear from scripture, however, that while everyone may prophesy, not all are prophets. This is evident to the spiritually discerning who compares a prophet prophesying to a pastor or a saint in the congregation. The prophecy from the prophet will carry a higher anointing which is perceptible to the spirit of the listeners. Another major difference is that the prophetic utterance from a prophet or prophetic apostle carries with it an activation, a birthing into the spirit of an individual. This is caused by the higher anointing on the prophecy and the Gift of Faith.

It has also been my experience that whenever a prophet or apostle prophesies over a person concerning an illness and proclaims it cured, the healing is always instantaneous. This does not happen most of the time when the gift of healings is in operation. The healing normally begins, but is not instantaneous and not normally completed until a few hours or days later.

HOW TO RECEIVE A PERSONAL PROPHECY

The prophet's ministry is powerful in personal prophecy as we see in Acts 13 and no doubt was experienced by Timothy based upon what Paul said to him. Certain guidelines are in order, however, for personal prophecy.

The prophecy should be recorded if at all possible. This is a problem we have in Africa in not always having access to a recorder. However, in the churches

in the West, you should always insist on the message being recorded. Then type out the prophecy. Read over it and meditate on it. Keep it in a file and wait for it to be confirmed or come to pass.

There are several reasons you need to record your personal prophecies: (1) for accuracy, (2) to allow meditation on them, (3) to allow you to study all the words in the prophecy, especially what we call *the words in between*. We have a tendency to skip over these but they are very important or God would not use them, and (4) perhaps most important, to allow your mind to be free from listening to the prophecy while it's being given. I always tell people *not* to listen to it at all but to *witness* to it with the spirit (Spirit). By having the prophecy recorded you don't have to be concerned about missing it while it's being given but are free to witness to it.

What I have learned is that if the message is not recorded, the person receiving the prophecy will normally not get the entire message and even worse, they nearly always misinterpret it.

The prophetic word may be that they are called to the ministry and they interpret it to mean they are to pastor or start a church because this has been on their mind. So, to eliminate confusion, insist that all prophetic utterances be recorded. Then prayerfully meditate over the prophecy. Ask the Holy Spirit to open your spirit to what He is saying to you through the prophecy. This is the area where nearly the whole Church world is rejecting personal prophecy. It is thought that God does not speak this way today. I believe this same problem became prominent in the early Church causing Paul to remark, "Despise not prophesying."

Prophecy and personal prophecy is an important weapon of our warfare that God wants to restore to the Church in this day. Let's be open minded about it and not quench what the Spirit wants to bring to pass in this day and hour. Let's once again learn all the ways God has of speaking to us today and this is a powerful one. If we neglect or reject personal prophecy, then we have eliminated a very powerful spiritual weapon, which God has given us for spiritual combat against the Dark Kingdom.

BOOK VI

DELIVERANCE

MINISTRY

**“Giving thanks unto the Father, ...
Who hath delivered us from the
Power of darkness, and hath
Translated us into the kingdom
His dear Son:”**

♥ Colossians 1:12-13

35

HOW TO RECOGNIZE DEMON POWER

We have dealt with the Dark Kingdom and their operations at length in this book. We have also discussed some of the important weapons God has given to the Church to use against the Dark Kingdom.

In this section of the book, we will discuss deliverance ministry in some detail to acquaint you with the means God has given us to free those who are held in bondage by demon power. Believe me there are many such people today—more than at any time in history.

You may never feel called to a ministry of deliverance; it is the most difficult and demanding ministry. But although this information will be useful to those functioning in deliverance ministry, it is also important to all Christians so they can recognize the presence of demon power.

This is especially timely here in America because we are experiencing a tremendous increase in demon power due to the increase in our society of drugs, pornography, abortion, sexual immorality, etc. We see the influence of demon power in child abuse, murder, rape and many other crimes.

In order to assist you in deliverance ministry, some of the signs by which you can recognize demon power and/or possession will first be discussed. This discussion will by no means be comprehensive, but will give you the

basics of what to look for in a person. If you are not sure when faced with a situation, ask the Holy Spirit. If you are called to a deliverance ministry, it is most imperative that you maintain a close, personal relationship with the Holy Spirit. This is not only to insure your success in ministry, but to also prevent harm from the Dark Kingdom. Once you begin a deliverance ministry, they will seek to launch a blitzkrieg attack against you in every area of your life.

The first sign to look for in an individual is abnormal behavior. If you know the person well, then you will see a change in their behavior. If you are operating in deliverance ministry and do not know the person, then you would judge the behavior on the basis of whether it would be normally acceptable human behavior. This is, of course, one of the signs of drug usage and other neurotic or psychotic behavior as a psychiatrist would define it. This tells you that a problem such as drug addiction or insanity is influenced by demonic activity.

Have you ever wondered about people who kill someone or beat their wife while under the influence of drugs or alcohol? God has given us a free will and control of our minds. Whenever we relinquish that control, even if it's just for a few minutes, demon powers can and will take over. The person does not even remember the incident of violence or murder, which they perpetrated. My own mother was murdered by such an incident. I spoke to the man in prison while preaching at that correctional facility; he remembered nothing about what had happened. This is a common occurrence. Under the influence of drugs, the person is temporarily taken over by demons and made to commit atrocities.

A further sign of demon possession which ties in with criminal behavior is a violent temper. This will be further discussed in the next chapter, but a person so possessed with anger, if they do not receive help, will usually end up in the penitentiary as a wife beater, murderer or child abuser. A violent temper is a sign of possession! A warning flag of much concern to me here in America is that more and more young children are demonstrating violent behavior at an early age. This problem is much more acute here in America than in other countries I have visited. I am confident that one of the main reasons is because of the tremendous

amount of violence on television and in video games today along with the overexposure to these by the youth here in America.

There are studies, which indicate a correlation between the amount of violence watched and violent or criminal behavior. As we have discussed, this is because the eyes are one of the avenues which spirits use to enter the body. Also, I know from my own experience that violence damages the human spirit; the Holy Spirit told me so. Here is what occurred.

I do not watch much television because there is none to speak of in West Africa and program selection has so deteriorated here in America as to make a television watching Christian an endangered species. But because I am called to spiritual warfare, I have always enjoyed war movies, especially the old John Wayne movies and Patton. One night I had watched a violent war movie on late night television. The Holy Spirit awakened me about 2 A.M. and it was the type awakening I normally only get from Him while in Africa—an awakening where I know there is imminent and extreme danger near. Normally when this occurs in Africa, it is because a witch or wizard has entered my room during the night to harm me. Whenever the Spirit awakens me in this manner, I am instantly awake and know that danger is near.

I sat straight up in bed and said to Him, “What is wrong? Is a prowler in the house?” He said, “No, I just wanted to warn you that the violence you are watching on television is doing great damage to your spirit.”

Another sign of demon possession, which we also find normally associated with loss of mental control, is super-human strength. Notice this scripture:

“And when He had come out of the boat, immediately There met Him out of the tombs a man with an unclean Spirit, who had his dwelling among the tombs, and no One could bind him, not even with chains, because he Had often been bound with shackles and chains. And The chains had been pulled apart by him, and the Shackles broken in pieces; “ ♥ Luke 5:2-4

Notice the tremendous strength of this man. A person full of demon power cannot be held down by even several of the strongest humans. It takes the power of God to restrain them while you deal with the spirits. If you have a loved one with supernatural strength exhibited, especially during fits of rage, drug or alcohol use, this is one of the signs.

I remember my conversation with the police detective assigned to my mother's murder case in Ft. Worth. He said that he had seen a skinny, ninety-pound girl on drugs lift a console color television set she was stealing from a residence. He did not know the secret of her superhuman strength.

Another certain sign is the inability of a person to maintain eye contact. Of course there is a normal length of time after which people will shift their gaze from your eyes. This is normally about five to ten seconds, depending on the circumstances. Psychologists and behaviorists believe that extended eye contact can be interpreted as aggression, especially among males. But what I am referring to is the simple inability of a person to maintain eye contact for even a few seconds.

When ministering deliverance, I will always ask them to look at me. If they are still unwilling or unable, I will turn their face toward me so as to look into their eyes. If they become agitated and/or are unable to look into my eyes, this is a sure sign of possession. You may wonder why this is so. Once, while commanding, "Look at me!" Demons replied through the woman, "We cannot stand the light!" Apparently, when they look upon a child of God, they see the bright light of Jesus Christ through the Holy Spirit residing within us.

Spirits also will normally manifest in a person when the person is being ministered to by the laying on of hands. While ministering healing, for example, the person may fall on the ground and begin to shake, roll around, foam at the mouth, and scream. This occurs because the anointing of God has broken the yoke. Even if you did not know the demons were there, the anointing will drive them out. Sometimes there is an elapsed time between the laying on of hands and the person falling and rolling on the ground. I have seen up to twenty minutes before this occurred. Often the people may come for prayer in response to another invitation and

receive deliverance simply through the power of God going into their bodies through the laying on of hands.

We should also discuss how demons cause physical problems. We have already mentioned the woman whom a spirit had bowed over for eighteen years. Now consider some cases of blindness and muteness.

“As they went out, behold, they brought to Him a man, Mute and demon-possessed. And when the demon was Cast out, the mute spoke.” ♥ Matthew 9:32-33

“Suddenly a man from the multitude cried out, saying, ‘Teacher, I implore you, look on my son, for he is my Only child. And behold, a spirit seizes him, and he Suddenly foams at the mouth, and bruising him, it Departs from him with great difficulty.’” ♥ Luke 9:38-39

Here we have two examples of demon activity within the human body. Demons, because they occupy areas in the brain, can use the human brain and impair bodily functions. They can cause blindness, deafness, muteness, and mental derangement. But once they are cast out, the person’s bodily functions are once again normal and they can see, hear and speak.

Notice also in the second scripture that this spirit was possessing a child. How did it gain access to the child? Why did it seem to come and go? Also observe that the father knew it was a case of possession. He sought help. Today we just lock them in the insane asylum and forget them. This is not what the Lord intended. He wants us as His ambassadors to “free the captives.” If we don’t, these people will never be free. They will die that way because psychiatry and psychology cannot deliver a person from possession. Through drugs and therapy with the mind the person and the demons may be subdued somewhat, but that demon is still there waiting to manifest. That is why the prisons cannot rehabilitate a rapist, child molester or murderer. The spirits causing the problems must be dealt with in order for the person to truly be set free.

In foreign countries the spirits will often speak to me in English even though the person through whom they are speaking does not know the English language! This of itself shows that they are controlling or “possessing” the mind of that person because the demon speaking is in control of the speech center of the brain and can speak a language, English, unknown to the person being possessed by the spirits.

Because possession nearly always involves several spirits, it is often difficult to recognize a specific spirit by certain outward behavior in a person being possessed.

DON'T BE ASHAMED TO ASK FOR HELP

In closing this chapter I wish to relate something disturbing that the Lord spoke to me on May 7, 2010, when He awakened me and asked me to go to Harrisburg, Pennsylvania, to minister. He said: “Most Christians manifest evil spirits much more than they do my Spirit.” Then I heard the words of the Apostle James: “My brethren, these things ought not so to be.” (James 3:10)

Just because you’re a Christian, my brothers and sisters, doesn’t mean that you don’t need deliverance. It should not be something you should be ashamed of but rather something you desire to be free from. In 2002 while we were ministering in Portland, Oregon, my wife, Evelyn, cast 23 spirits out of a woman who was the worship leader at her church and she exhibited *no* outward signs of needing deliverance ministry. But she knew that she had a problem! She came to us and said she knew that she needed deliverance because she was not able to get into the Presence of the Lord during worship.

As I’ve learned through many years of deliverance ministry, the average church and Christian does not appreciate the extent to which they are being controlled by the devil. Don’t be ashamed to ask for help so that you can be free and be a pure demonstration of the Gospel and the power of God by the Spirit.

36

PRINCIPLES OF DELIVERANCE

**“Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us
Meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints,
In light: Who hath delivered us from the power of
Darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of
His dear Son: In whom we have redemption through
His blood, even the forgiveness of sins.”**

♥ Colossians 1:12-14

This is both a powerful and a profound scripture. We *have* been delivered from the power of darkness. It is an accomplished fact. Then why are so many in bondage? The primary reason they are still in bondage is because they do not realize that they are in bondage. So the first principle we must recognize is that people cannot receive deliverance if they are not taught. There are millions of people in America who need deliverance ministry, but they do not receive it. The Lord told me in October of 1991 that there were “more people in America in need of deliverance ministry than there are in need of healing!” That shocked me! This is bad enough, but the situation is compounded because neither society as a whole nor the

Church realizes that they *need* deliverance ministry. Oh, the Church knows they need salvation—those who are not already Christians, but not that they are demon oppressed or possessed and need deliverance.

But after a person recognizes that they need deliverance, there are three major steps involved:

(1) humility, (2) confession and (3) repentance.

It should be emphasized that humility is necessary for those involved in deliverance ministry as well. God said, “My strength is made perfect in weakness.” Yet this is difficult for human beings to accept. We have a difficult time with this concept because it is against man’s flesh nature. We don’t like to be seen by anyone in the eyes of the world as being weak, vulnerable or helpless. This attitude carries over into our spiritual life and must be changed. We must all realize that we do not have the power within ourselves. We have to come to God on His terms expecting Him to do the work based upon His promises in the Word. This is His covenant with us.

Before getting too deeply into our discussion, we should define the terms to be used so you will have a clear understanding of what I mean. My definition of deliverance is “the freeing of an individual that is under satanic control and bondage.” This satanic bondage may range from mild oppression to full-scale possession where an individual is violently insane.

The term “satanic bondage” utilized here means the influence and/or control of an individual not just by Satan, but also by his evil spirits. However, although the familiar and servient spirits control the person in possession, the actual programming orders for that person come from the higher demons, normally the Powers and above. Unless delivered, those possessed can actually become biological robots unable to control their minds and emotions. There are often many spirits involved in controlling the person and they are backed up and reinforced by the Principalities and Powers.

Once God allowed me to spiritually see a person who was totally demon possessed to the point of insanity. In the spirit realm, their body resembled a huge beehive with thousands of spirits packed in there buzzing in and out with great activity. It is no wonder that those totally demon possessed, like the mad man of Gedara, cannot sleep. There is too much noise and activity.

WE ARE TO FREE THE CAPTIVES

While sitting in the parking lot of an Albertson's store in Helena, Montana, in 2000, the Holy Spirit spoke and said, "The church is ashamed of the gospel." And the main area in which churches are ashamed of the gospel is in casting out demons and freeing the captives.

God is calling forth deliverance ministries throughout the world in the Church today. It is a difficult ministry, in fact the most difficult. This is because it takes a tremendous amount of time and prayer. And it also requires purity and holiness on the part of the ministers. In other ministries, such as preaching, teaching or counseling, a person can sin and they will have some time to repent before it affects their ministry or affects them spiritually. Not true in deliverance ministry. You can severely harm yourself as well as the people you are ministering to if you are not pure. The demons will attack you. You can even become insane.

No doubt this is new to you and we will have more to say about this later. But the reason God is calling forth deliverance ministry is to proclaim liberty to the captives. This is part of the spiritual war. The Church has sat still long enough and just waged a defensive struggle. General Patton, recognized as perhaps the greatest general who ever lived, used to say that you couldn't win a war based upon holding your position. He said, "Let the enemy do that." Because Patton had no equal as a military strategist, perhaps we can learn something from this statement. And in fact, the Church has not even held her position in terms of the world population growth. There are over five billion people in the world now and 20% of them are believers in the Muslim faith.

The Dark Kingdom is advancing every day throughout the world. Why? Because the Church has been both lazy and ignorant. God is changing this situation by doing two things: (1) the trumpet call to spiritual warfare for His Church, and (2) giving us the knowledge we need to use our spiritual weapons against the Dark Kingdom.

Many of the churches of the past are dying. Why? Because there is no life there. The Kingdom of God and the Spirit of God is a fresh, clean running stream—a mighty River of Life—and not a stagnant pool where there can be no life. We have built attractive buildings with nice steeples or glorious glass churches, but then left out half of the Bible in preaching a false or incomplete gospel.

Remember, faith is not just belief in something. It is also action and obedience—faith is *active*. We are to do what the Lord *told* us to do and not just believe what He said. If we believe what He said, then we will obey the Great Commission. When you get to Heaven and appear before the judgment seat of Christ, He is not going to ask you what denomination you were in or how often you went to church. He is going to ask, “Did you go and tell them what I said? Did you preach the gospel, all of it, throughout the world?” And don’t forget, part of that gospel says,

“In my name shall they cast out devils;” ♥ Mark 16:17

When was the last time *you* cast out devils? Because when you really encapsulate faith, it all comes down to action. God wants you to demonstrate your faith by your actions. If you tell God you want to help the poor, then you’d better get your checkbook out. It all comes down to action—what we say and what we think does not mean anything without action. That is the message of James 2.

And if you are not doing the things Jesus told you to do, like casting out devils, then you have departed from the faith. We can depart from the faith you know. Look at that scripture in I Timothy 4:1. This is not talking

about sinners. You cannot “depart from the faith” if you have never been saved and “in the faith.”

I am quoting from Mark about casting out devils and you may have a question about the validity of these scriptures being included in the Great Commission. Several modern translations have left us with the impression that these scriptures in Mark 16 are not in most of the manuscripts. They say that these words are “not contained in the earliest, most reliable manuscripts.” This statement is misleading. Without going into a long discussion about this, let me state that of the thousands of manuscripts found, only *two* do not contain these verses.

WE SHOULD NOTICE PEOPLE WHO NEED DELIVERANCE

Because we do not know or perceive spiritual problems due to our lack of knowledge, we are not quick to notice people who need deliverance, especially within the Church. We pass off the problem as being psychological or some other malady, which we term scientific. Yet psychology deals with the mind and not the spirit of man so it is of little benefit. Because these spirits *manifest through the mind*, we wrongly assume it is a mental rather than a spiritual problem. You can understand how psychological treatment would be difficult because another entity is controlling the person’s mind.

When I was more involved in prison ministry years ago, we dealt with the judicial mindset that criminal science and psychology could rehabilitate prisoners. It hasn’t happened and will not occur. The same spirit that caused a man to commit murder is still in there and must be dealt with or he will kill again as soon as he gets out.

We simply must increase our spiritual acumen in this area because as the power of the devil is getting stronger in America, we are going to see a

greater need for deliverance ministry than ever before in the history of the Church. This applies to Christian as well as non-Christian families.

Whether your particular family needs help will depend on your lifestyle—do you have a family history in the occult? How strong is your family spiritually? How much do you pray? Where do the children attend school? Who are their friends? It is by asking yourself questions like these that you can help avoid the attacks of the devil before they begin. Why is this so?

The Bible tells us to “give no place to the devil.” It is a spiritual principle, which I have found to be inviolable in life; if you give any place to the devil, he will certainly occupy that place. It matters not whether you give it willingly or not. If he can see an opening, he will attack. This has been vividly brought home to me in Africa where, unfortunately, I had to learn from my own experience that a witch can attack you—even if you are prayerful—when they are already in the household where you are staying or allowed into the household.

It is important for us to recognize how to prevent opening ourselves up to the devil. The Lord told me in 1985 that this was why America is in the shape it’s in; America opened itself up to the devil. Now the Dark Kingdom is in the process of occupying our country through drugs, false religion, abortion, condemnation of the Bible and God, homosexuality, greed, destruction of the schools, pedophilia and child abuse, incest, *et al.* The increase of the incidence of these is staggering. Even the non-Christians in America know the nation is doomed. The Dark Kingdom is here and they plan to stay. The *only hope* for America is that the Church will repent and rise up in spiritual warfare and throw them out. Yet we see little true spiritual warfare in most churches today.

HOW DEMONS GAIN ENTRANCE

Demons must have doors through which to enter a person. The Dark Kingdom only operates on the earth through the Law of Sin and Death. Therefore, they usually gain entrance through sins. These may include the sins of a person or the sins of their parents from present and past generations (sometimes referred to as *generational curses*). These *doors* include hate, greed, lust, pride, anger, stubbornness, bitterness, murder, resentment, disobedience, despair, discouragement, rebellion, self-will and other things. Demons can and often do use the sins of parents to attack children. God set up a spiritual order in the family. First the father, next the mother and then the children. If the father and mother open the door through sins for the demons to get in them and/or through them, the demons will attack the children. We see this in the Bible as well.

God is interested in restoring the deliverance ministry to the Body of Christ. This is one reason, along with exposing the Dark Kingdom, that He commissioned me to write this book. The Holy Spirit spoke to me in 2000 and said, “The Church is ashamed of the Gospel.” Because we were on our way to Oregon to minister deliverance to a man with cancer that the doctors had only given 5 days to live, I knew that deliverance is one of the main areas where the Church *is* ashamed of the Gospel.

We have allowed the Dark Kingdom to develop strongholds in our own lives, even as Christians, which must be broken and guarded against in the future. In discussing these *Mysterious Secrets of the Dark Kingdom*, we have learned many of their secrets and we now have an appreciation for the power which they wield in this world.

In discussing deliverance, it should be emphasized that all of this information is based upon actual experience; none of it has come from literature because, quite frankly, there is almost nothing available on deliverance ministry—it’s a forgotten ministry by the Church. Consequently, let me make a few bold statements as I generally do when teaching on spiritual warfare or deliverance in a church. First of all, it

should be emphasized that I am *not* one of those people who sees a demon behind every rock. You are probably relieved to know that. I used to be that way until I really got deeply into the knowledge of the Dark Kingdom and how involved they are in oppressing and possessing people, even Christians. Now, instead of seeing a demon behind every rock I see seven demons there. Believe me, the Dark Kingdom is much more involved in our lives than we have realized. One of the most shocking things the Lord has ever said to me he said regarding this very thing in 1991. He told me, “There are more people in America today in need of deliverance ministry than there are in need of healing.”

DELIVERANCE IS IMPORTANT TO THE CHURCH

One of the major facets of our ministry in Africa is deliverance. We train ministers in deliverance and have an all night deliverance service every Friday night. People come from all over the country. There are reasons why it lasts all night, which will be discussed later.

In America very few churches do deliverance ministry and very few are even remotely interested in it although it is a commandment of the Lord as part of the Great Commission. This occurs because it's been my experience that very few Christians, even ministers, realize the extent to which they are controlled by the Dark Kingdom. If you don't believe me then ask yourself the question who stands to benefit if deliverance ministry is not available at a church?

When I first went to Africa in 1988, before I knew much at all about deliverance ministry, I was praying on my bed in Austin, Texas, about the will of the Lord in Africa and He said, “When you go into a church I want you to hold a healing service every Thursday night and a deliverance service every Friday night.” I nearly fell off the bed! My thought was, “Deliverance? In the church?” Yet I obeyed and found that over half the people came forward when the invitation was given for deliverance

ministry. When I returned to the States I did the same thing at the first church I ministered in and saw the same thing—over half the people came for prayer. Obviously the need is greater now in 2012 than it was twenty years ago yet churches here have not changed. However, I believe the demonic power is becoming so strong that they will either change or be run out of town by the devil.

You may be more familiar with the term *exorcism*; however, I feel the term deliverance is more appropriate as the problem does not always involve the “casting out of demons” as the term exorcism denotes. However, for all but the mildest of cases, the casting out of demons is required. Sometimes there is what I refer to as “casual spirits” and these are easy to deal with in about two to three minutes, but we have had cases taking over a year and that is based on deliverance ministry one to three times a week until the person is free. If you think you are going to line up some totally insane people or schizophrenics and free them by shouting, “In Jesus’ Name, come out of him!” then I’ve got news for you, it won’t happen—that’s one reason we minister to people all the time who say they’ve been through deliverance several times but with no results.

But through experience we can learn how to free the captives. It just takes experience. Let me illustrate with an incident from February of 1990. I had just returned from Africa and my family and I were attending a prophetic conference in Florida. I was invited to lunch with a group of ministers and several were in music ministry. During our conversation, I discussed (being led by the Spirit) the importance of praise and music ministry and how Satan pollutes the music ministry. After the service that night, one of these young men phoned my room and asked if I would meet him in the hotel lobby. I agreed. He shared that he had been a homosexual, but was now a Christian. He was being asked to lead the music ministry of a church there in Florida and was considering it when my conversation about polluting the music ministry made him reconsider.

Because his heart was right before God, he did not want to do this if it would harm that church. He was asking how he could know if he was still a homosexual. I asked if he had been through deliverance and he replied,

“Yes.” Then I asked him the telling question only learned through experience in dealing with demons, “Do you still desire to have sex with a man?” He thought for a few moments and replied, “Yes.” I told him he was not free and needed further deliverance ministry.

DELIVERANCE IS A PROCESS

This story illustrates the main problem with deliverance. Too many have read one book and think all you have to do is just cast them out by saying the Name of Jesus once or twice. No! Don’t ever forget this as long as you live—deliverance is a process! Sometimes they come out right away and sometimes they don’t. The length of time the deliverance process requires depends primarily upon three factors: (1) the length of time the spirits have been possessing the person, (2) the strength and reinforcement of the spirits, and (3) the experience and degree of anointing upon those who minister deliverance to the person.

Some of the superior spirits themselves can and do possess people. Satan possessed Judas Iscariot. I know that Leviathan possesses people. Whenever you see someone go into a post office or a McDonald’s such as happened in California and kill fifteen people, that is the spirit of Leviathan. He normally possesses an area in a town to cause destruction. But whenever he possesses one single person, that person will always cause massive death and will always take their own life.

Because I have cast out hundreds of thousands of demons over the years, I have had occasion to make notes of the many ways they gain control of people. In children, they normally gain control either through the parents as mentioned earlier or through schoolmates. Hence, the reason for my stressing your involvement in the choosing of your child’s playmates.

Once I was staying with a lovely Nigerian couple. The wife was five months pregnant and had been feeling terrible. She did not realize that she was under a severe spiritual attack. After my first night in their home, I

told the couple that their servant boy was a witch and he was attacking the madam. They had difficulty believing me so I said, “Okay, do not say anything to him. He will leave on his own after my prayers.” Within a week he had gone without saying a word to any of us.

That evening Rev. Tom Awodele came over and the couple related these events to him. We discussed how careful you have to be in choosing those with whom to associate or employ. Rev. Awodele remarked that he had discovered a young witch trying to give the spirit of witchcraft to his children at their school.

In 2000, we ministered for many months to a 40 year old man in Canada who had been institutionalized from age 18. He ate rocks and tried to kill himself all the time. He had been given over 60 shock treatments. In ministering deliverance to him we discovered that he had first become possessed at age 18 by having a curse put on him by a high school friend while they were playing the Quija board.

The Bible warns us, “Bad company corrupts good morals.” Should we expect less where our children are involved?

CHRISTIAN POSSESSION

There may be a nagging question brought up by the story of the homosexual minister I mentioned earlier. Can a Christian have a demon? Have you heard any messages preached on this? I have and they always say, “No, a Christian cannot be possessed.” The reasoning is that the demons cannot cross the Bloodline. I hate to disillusion you, but apparently the demons don’t believe that sermon. They can and do possess people who are Christians. Mark this down if you are a person who is seeking deliverance ministry for someone. *Anyone who tells you that a Christian cannot be possessed by demons is not experienced enough to handle your case. They do not have much experience in deliverance ministry.*

Look how often Jesus cast out demons in church (the synagogue). Do you think He believes a Christian cannot be possessed?

While praying in Texas prior to my first trip to West Africa, the Lord told me to hold a deliverance service every Friday night in the African churches where I was ministering. I was shocked and thought this very strange. I remember thinking that there would only be a few who would come forward. I soon learned that in every church, about one-half of the people came forward for deliverance. Here in America and in Europe the numbers are not much different. This is a big area of need that the Church has not addressed. Often the spirits will manifest themselves when some other type ministry is going on such as healing or the Baptism of Power.

The reason we don't see more of this in America is mainly due to two factors: (1) we don't recognize the manifestation and control of demons, and (2) because the average church *never* has a deliverance service. In fact, I know of only one church in America that does have a regular deliverance service. It's in Chicago and they cast out demons every service. I met the pastor in Africa. He had come over to be involved with a crusade we had in Kaduna, Nigeria, with Evangelist Omoobajesu.

It was this pastor's first trip to Africa. We were visiting and I asked him what his purpose was in being there. He said to "teach on deliverance." I thought, "You'd better learn something about it first." But I didn't want to offend him so I just casually mentioned that things were much different in Africa than in America—the problems were more serious and more difficult to deal with because the devil had more power. He replied, "Give me an example of the difference." I said, "Okay, let me give you a common problem I deal with in practically every deliverance service that you never see in America. You're going through the prayer line talking to people and praying for them while in the spirit. All of a sudden you come to a lady who looks to be nine months pregnant. She tells you she has been pregnant with the child for twenty-five months and cannot conceive. How do you deal with that?"

Once there was a woman who had been pregnant for five years. Probably nobody in the medical profession in America would believe this, but it happens in Africa all the time. It is the result of witchcraft. And nothing but deliverance ministry can cause that woman to give birth. Medical science will take an X-ray and see nothing there, no child. Sometimes the baby has been replaced in the womb with a black stone. This is done spiritually. As you can see, the deliverance ministry requires some experience. And this is one ministry where mistakes can be costly. Hear the words of our Lord.

“When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through Dry places, seeking rest; and finding none, he saith, ‘I will return unto My house whence I came out.’ And when he cometh, he findeth it Swept and garnished. Then goeth he, and taketh to him seven other Spirits more wicked than himself and they enter in, and dwell there; And the last state of that man is worse than the first.”

♥ Luke 11:24-26

Jesus shows that when possession is not dealt with correctly, the results can be worse than before ministry. How to prevent this will be discussed in the next chapter. But it should be emphasized again—spiritual things are like physical things. The more experience an oral surgeon has, the less pain you will experience when he extracts your wisdom teeth. The same thing is true in the spirit realm. There are no hard and fast rules in deliverance ministry—you cannot have a person quote three scriptures and then pray. It is a process and requires experience to both diagnose and deal with the problem. That’s one reason the churches aren’t involved in deliverance—they’re like the Seven Sons of Sceva, always looking for a formula. The Holy Spirit told me in 2001 that the reason churches don’t have any deliverance ministry is because the world doesn’t have such a program. How sad but true! Too much of the Church is from the world—programs for church growth, marketing, etc., borrowed from the world.

And the deliverance ministry is also a dangerous ministry to those ministering if they lack experience. We call this type service an *Empty Hands Service*—laying empty hands on empty heads. If you do not know what you are doing

as a minister, you can be severely harmed. Satan does not play games and he has not an ounce of mercy in his body. He hates deliverance ministry most of all because he is being robbed of his precious assets. Demons know the Bible well and they know God well. I've had many demons quote the Bible to me, reciting the Ten Commandments or something else.

But when in ministry, there are certain precautions one must take to prevent harm and the most common malady is insanity. If you become sinful and then try to minister without confession, repentance, *etc.*, you can become insane and need deliverance yourself. Because I have dealt with many cases like this in Africa and some cases here in America, I have been surprised to learn that the ministry, particularly here in America, is often more interested in protecting their name—so they think—than seeing their deliverance ministers set free. Pride will not let them admit that, because they are a nationally-known ministry, they need assistance from another minister in the Body. Consequently, some of these deliverance ministers have been committed to an asylum when they could just as easily have been set free.

Others do not receive help because nobody recognizes that it is a case of possession. We are so sure (because we heard it from somebody) that a Christian cannot be possessed and our ignorance causes an inability to minister deliverance to those most deserving our time and attention.

OTHER FACTS ABOUT SPIRITS

Those around a deliverance ministry or service can be harmed as well if proper precautions are not taken. This is especially true of little children. While demons are being cast out of an individual in church, if proper precautions are not taken, the demons will always immediately enter others in the congregation and especially small children. William Branham talked about one service when he ministered to an epileptic person (epilepsy is *always* a spirit) on the platform and over 20 people including a minister in the congregation came down with epilepsy.

Spirits are territorial. That is why the legion occupying the mad man of Gedara with which Jesus dealt asked if they could go into the swine. They wanted to stay in that area and they did not want to be sent into the Abyss. There are cases of individuals who are possessed, but when taken out of the country for medical help become normal again. Yet when the person is brought back into the country, the spirits return and the person is possessed once again because the spirits had stayed behind—I have dealt with many such cases.

These spirits can also move around in the body. Often when ministering deliverance by the laying on of hands, I can feel the spirits move inside the person's body to another place in the body. The spirit of black witchcraft, especially, is prone to do this to prevent being cast out. It will move clear down into the area of the person's knee.

If you are the type person who doesn't believe spirits can cause problems in the physical body, then just open your Bible. You won't have to look far either. You might start with Luke 13:10-16. Jesus said He was dealing with a *spirit of infirmity* which caused this woman's body to be bent over for eighteen years. I have seen this very type spirit—it resembles a giant Aardvark and it lies over the person's back causing their back to become deformed.

How did Jesus minister to her? Through the laying on of hands. Why? Because through the laying on of hands, there is a transference of the anointing of God. It is the anointing of the Holy Spirit which drove out this spirit. Notice especially verse 16. Who did Jesus say had bound her? Satan! We have dealt with many such cases.

Perhaps you are wondering if we can minister to people like Jesus did. After all, He was the Christ, the Son of God. Without going into great detail about His healing ministry because that is not the subject of this book, a few points should be made. Jesus did not heal because He was the Son of God. He was just as much the Son of God when He was 15, 18, 21, 25, or 30 yet He never performed one miracle until He was baptized with the Spirit in the River

Jordan when He was about 35 years of age. Jesus ‘emptied Himself’ of all His power and glory as discussed in Philippians 2. This is called the great *Kenosis* in Greek. He had to be anointed with the Holy Spirit and Power (*cf.* Acts 10:38) in order to perform miracles and healings just as the Apostles and Believers who followed Him did also. Jesus Himself said that it was the Father in Him that was doing works. He said He was anointed in Luke 4 and the Holy Spirit says it of Him in Acts 10:38. Jesus is our pattern for ministry. When we receive the Holy Spirit and the Baptism of Power, we are able to minister deliverance to the captives just like Jesus did.

STEPS FOR DELIVERANCE

Now, if you or someone you know needs deliverance, the following are some general steps that should be taken:

1. They must desire deliverance. If a person wants to remain in Egypt, God will not disturb them. If the Israelites had wanted to stay in Egypt, God would not have delivered them. God will not tamper with a person’s free will; if a person desires the spirits, then they cannot be delivered.
2. Come to Jesus Christ, you cannot be delivered apart from the Blood of Jesus. You join the Family of God by receiving Jesus as your personal savior and deliverer. Then you have a right through covenant to the ministry which God has for His family and that includes deliverance.
3. Destroy all occultic or satanic objects. We always have people bring them to the churches in Africa and we burn them outside after a worship service.
4. Break off all spiritual contact with the satanic.
5. Confess your guilt to the Lord.
6. Renounce and declare yourself free from Satan. Tell him you want nothing more to do with his Dark Kingdom.
7. Ask and then receive forgiveness by God for your sins.
8. Join a prayer group, one where they pray in tongues.
9. Begin fasting and prayer.

10. Use the authority you have as a child of God to command the devil to leave you alone.
11. Be filled with the Holy Spirit with the evidence of speaking in tongues.
12. Spend at least two hours a day praying in other tongues.

In addition to the above, which is general, obtain specific help from someone experienced enough to help you. If you don't know anyone, write or email our ministry in Montana or Colorado (USA) and we will assist you free of charge.

37

HOW TO OPERATE IN DELIVERANCE MINISTRY

“In my name shall they cast out devils;”

♥ Mark 16:17

The most difficult ministry is deliverance. It is difficult not only because of the specialized knowledge required, but also because this ministry, more than any other, requires purity, patience, and prayer. It requires purity on your part as a minister because the Dark Kingdom will destroy you if you attempt to operate in deliverance ministry with sin in your life. It requires patience since deliverance is often not instantaneous—it is a process. And it also requires more prayer, perhaps, than any other ministry because a deliverance minister must keep his spirit in tune with the Holy Spirit to clearly and accurately hear from God.

In reality, every Five-fold minister—whether pastor, teacher, apostle, prophet or evangelist—should spend a minimum of two hours a day in prayer. But the truth is, few do. However, if you are a pastor and are not spending much time in prayer, you can still open your Bible and preach, although without prayer you will not preach with much anointing. But if you try to function as a deliverance minister without prayer, you cannot be successful. Not only that, but you may inadvertently harm yourself.

SIN

Before discussing specifics about ministering deliverance, there are some prudent points of caution we must discuss. The first is sin. Do you recall what happened to the High Priest in the Old Testament if he came into the Holy of Holies without the blood and the proper ceremonial cleansing? He died instantly. God cannot tolerate sin in His Presence. He knows it is like cancer—if not checked and removed—it will spread throughout the Kingdom. As a deliverance minister, you must be leading a life free of sin. By this I don’t mean that you never sin, but that you are striving to be sinless—there’s no “hidden” sin in your life. You are quick to repent when you sin. As the book of First John points out, if you have given your life to Christ, you should not “practice sin.”

We are not sinless, only Jesus was, but we strive to be so. And the Bible teaches that our new man, the spirit man, will not sin. Prior to salvation, a person can practice sin with reckless abandon. But after they accept Christ, their “new nature” prohibits them from doing so. It often requires a period of time before such a person, because of their habits of the flesh, will give up a sin they have been practicing such as fornication, but they will not be comfortable in sin because the new spirit-nature is screaming, “Don’t do that anymore!” This is precisely why the New Creature (II Cor. 5:17)—the newly born-again Christian—has such an unquenchable thirst for the Word. The Word is the food for our spirit and without this food, the spirit cannot grow. And if a new, baby Christian does not feed his spirit with the Word of God, his spirit will never develop to the point of overcoming sin in the body—he will remain a spiritual infant all of his life.

We have to learn to protect our spirit from sin in order to grow and develop into the person God intends for us to be. God has a file folder in Heaven with your name on it—He really does—I’ve seen them. In this folder He has a wonderful plan for your life. But if your spirit never develops, this plan will never come to fruition.

I am convinced that the Church needs a lot of teaching on how to protect our spirit. There are some things we do other than sin which can damage our spirits such as watch too much television or read the newspaper. We must guard and protect our spirits and our faith if we are to mature as Christians

and ministers. We must remain acutely aware of sin in the deliverance ministry. A person who ministers in the area of deliverance must especially abstain from sexual sins. This is the area where I have seen the most damage done. If you are involved in deliverance, the commission of fornication or adultery will likely eventually result in your going insane. The demons will attack you through this sin in your body and cause insanity. This sin is the first place I look when dealing with deliverance ministers who have become mentally unbalanced. Why is this sin so potentially devastating to a deliverance minister? I am not positive, but I believe it has to do with the following scripture:

“Flee sexual immorality. Every sin that a man does is outside the body, but He who commits sexual immorality sins against his own body.”

♥ I Corinthians 6:18

And this is an area where you will be severely tested since you are often dealing with the spirit of adultery in the deliverance line. Sexual sins are more dangerous now than at any time in the history of mankind. We ministered deliverance to a lovely 22 year old pastor’s daughter in Oregon who described how she had been targeted by Satanists who prayed spirits into her during sexual intercourse.

Normally, the gift of discerning of spirits operates in each of us differently. Certain spirits, for example homosexual, I can always see in the eyes. But the spirit of adultery can be recognized because a woman who is possessed with this spirit will always attempt to embrace me in a certain manner when drawing close to her in the deliverance line. Also, when in close proximity to this spirit, e.g. in an elevator, the spirit will project sexual thoughts into your mind to tempt you into having sex with that person, even though they may be a stranger. This is why you may have had sexual thoughts when near a pretty woman or handsome man and wondered why you were thinking that thought.

A spirit of adultery projected those immoral thoughts into your mind! I once had the spirit of adultery enter my room at a hotel where I was staying in Canada in 1999 and it was a pure spirit—it was not in anybody but I saw it and it spoke to me. Spirits not only inhabit people but also cities and buildings. In 1997 my wife and I accompanied a realtor to look at a former UPC church we were considering purchasing for ministry when we first

moved to Montana. When the realtor unlocked the front door and opened it I jumped back! My wife looked at me in surprise and I replied, “Spirit of unbelief!” It hit me in the face just like it was something physical.

In 1992 we were staying at a widow’s home in Oklahoma while ministering at a church there. I woke up at 2 A.M. with tremendous pain in my left frontal lobe and I had to fight through the Word for several hours before it left. I never get headaches but this felt like a physical problem such as a migraine headache. When I came to the breakfast table with coffee the lady asked me how I slept and I relayed the spiritual battle I’d gone through during the night. Her mouth dropped open and she responded, “The bedroom you were sleeping in is where my husband died of a stroke!” After that I learned to pray over and cleanse rooms I’m staying in to prevent such attacks.

A few months after we moved to Montana in 1997 my wife and I went to dinner at an Italian restaurant in downtown Helena, Montana. The place was packed and as we were escorted through the bar to the dining area the gift of Discerning of Spirits operated the same way through both of us at the same time. We *saw* evil spirits on almost all the people we passed in the bar! They were so grotesque looking and it reminded us both of the bar scene in the first Star Wars movie. As I said earlier, most people, even Christians, have no idea the extent to which they are controlled by demons and that they need deliverance ministry.

Sin is very serious with God. There is no such thing as “cheap grace.” The book of Hebrews in chapter 6 addresses this situation. If you continue to sin willfully, you are in a precarious situation. Recognize the source as being from the Dark Kingdom and resist them.

Pastors, don’t think it’s your good looks and charm that is attracting that lady. You may be handsome and debonair, but it is probably the spirit of adultery seeking to ruin your ministry that has instigated the situation. Recognize the Dark Kingdom’s involvement and do something about it. Why trade the anointing on your life for anything which is not of lasting value? Remember what God said about Esau.

We must set our faces like flint and never waver. Every time Satan attacks, find somebody else and cast the devil out of them. Get someone else saved.

And if he attacks your finances, just give everything you have at that time to the work of God and tell the devil, “I’m not going to quit! I’m coming after your Dark Kingdom with everything I’ve got!”

In a similar manner, any person coming *for* deliverance must be committed to giving up sin. Otherwise they cannot be helped. Sin is a doorway through which the demons operate and gain access to our lives—their main avenue of authority to operate against us comes through the Law of Sin and Death. As long as that doorway is open, they will come in and continue to enter that person. If the person you plan to minister to will not give up sin, then you cannot help them; you will only make matters worse for them.

POSSESSION

Evil spirits need and must have a human body in order to operate in this physical world. And they also must have a doorway to enter the person. But let’s bring this closer to home. Let’s talk about a subject no doubt more personal and dear to your heart. Let’s talk about you.

The devil has spirits assigned to you. He also has Agents, human beings, involved in the same task. They are looking for an opportunity to take you out of the battle spiritually. They will attempt to bring circumstances to pass which will cause you to sin and your anointing to wain. They are, of course, resisted by the angels of God. God has two or three angels with you, but unless you are a person who is prayerful or others are praying for you, these angels may be overcome by the Dark Kingdom. Their strength and power is largely determined by the kind of life you live; how much prayer and holiness is in your life.

When it comes to discussing possession, if we are honest we will have to admit that many people are possessed with spirits. There are millions of people in America who are possessed and you probably see many of them every day, especially in New York, San Francisco, Washington and Los Angeles. Lying spirits make people lie. Water spirits make a person commit armed robbery and steal. Adulterous spirits make people commit adultery and be unfaithful in other areas of their lives. Homosexual spirits pervert men and women to want sex with the same sex. But instead of calling them perverts as

we used to, now they are “gays.” Incidentally, if homosexuality is a *natural* occurrence as the homosexual community would have us believe, how come it does not occur to the same extent in all countries and races? In America now about 10% of the population is homosexual. Yet in Africa it is almost unheard of. No statistics are available yet but, based on what I’ve seen, it has to be less than .1%. No, humans are not born that way or made that way because as a child their mommy took them to the women’s restroom as some psychologists would lead us to believe. A homosexual spirit got control of them through hate or generally through another homosexual.

Also, the militant attitude and hate homosexuals hold for Christians goes further than it appears on the surface—another sign of the type spirit controlling them. Their vehemently aggressive attitude toward Christians and politicians who vote against their lifestyle and political agenda should speak volumes to those who do not believe homosexuality is a spirit. The same is true for Muslims who wish to destroy all who stand against the propagation of the Islamic faith. Anyone, and especially the Christian familiar with the Bible, should be able to discern the anti-Christ spirit behind these two groups.

Evil spirits are transferable. This is why I am against homosexuals teaching in our schools. That spirit will be transferred to innocent children making them homosexuals. Some non-Christians reading this book may think this is homophobia, but it is true and known by all who have dealt with this spirit of homosexuality in deliverance. And once that spirit is in a person, it will bring other unclean spirits with it. Have you ever noticed that most homosexuals smoke? Also, they tend to have emotional problems and severe emotional problems, as we have discussed, are a certain sign of demon possession.

I do not mean to just isolate homosexual spirits and talk about them because some of the same symptoms are relevant to possession by any spirit. Primarily, the first sign is emotional instability. However, before you reach this point, you will often notice that your thought processes are becoming clouded. Your cognitive powers are not as good as before and you are requiring more time to make decisions. These are signs that spirits are at work in your mind and emotions.

But contrary to some teaching, possession does not require that a person be insane. The Apostle Judas was possessed of Satan himself, yet he was not

insane. No, what happens in possession is this. A demon spirit in the spirit realm occupies an area in your mind and seeks to control your mind and emotions through physical control of the mind. A servient spirit of lust, for example, will not only make you want to have sex all the time (nymphomania), but will also constantly bring sexual images and thoughts into your mind until you are a person totally consumed with sex.

A person must be possessed by at least one legion of demons before they are insane. In spiritual terms from the Dark Kingdom, a legion is 2,000. A human being can hold up to three legions (6,000) of demons. After that, they will always be crippled, blind, and usually completely insane. However, I have dealt with many like the demoniac mentioned in Mark 5 who had only one legion. They acted the same way too. They will come to you the moment you get to town just like they did Jesus—you’re like a homing beacon to them.

Normally, however, it takes quite a bit of time for that many spirits to possess a person. It does not happen over night. Even with involvement in the occult or satanic worship, it will rarely happen in less than three years unless that person gets into trouble in the spirit world. We have dealt with cases where the person, normally a child, became that way through an attack in the evil spirit world.

Usually a possessed person will have a minimum of from three to thirteen spirits. For example, I have never dealt with anyone who had the spirit of witchcraft that did not have at least a dozen more spirits. These normally include what we call the Triplet Spirit of anger, fear and hate. This spirit will come in as three-in-one. Experience teaches that certain spirits will occur in groups such as lying and adultery; lying and stealing; pornography (lust) and masturbation or fornication; drug addiction and alcohol.

DELIVERANCE MINISTRY

Deliverance ministry is that dealing with the freeing of a person from oppression or possession by evil spirits—the servient spirits called Spiritual Wickedness in the Bible.

For a person to be delivered, they must first want deliverance. More often than you might think, I see cases where the person, particularly if it is the non-Christian spouse of a Christian, does not actually want to be delivered. Another good example are mediums and others in the occult. They are profiting from the spirits and do not wish deliverance. Often, of course, it is because once possessed, they are blinded to the real truth. There are ways to deal with this type person to get them saved, but it requires much prayer, particularly intercession in tongues, and discussion with the Holy Spirit on exactly how to pray for them.

Before going into the specifics of the ministry of deliverance, perhaps I should relay my greatest concern. What disturbs me the most is not that these cases of possession occur, but that most of us in the ministry are unable to see the truth. We are not able to discern the spirit and minister help to the person who needs it. I had never heard of Ted Haggard but when a ministry friend sent us an email of what occurred in his church along with a U Tube video I watched the video and could see the spirit of homosexuality in Haggard's eyes. Yet apparently none of our Christian *leaders* who worked with him were able to see it.

Even worse, there is one television minister who is possessed and many in the ministry think he is a dynamic minister. This is nothing more than spiritual blindness. The dominant problem here is the same one pertaining to spiritual warfare in general; we are not spiritually advanced to the point we need to be to successfully fight the Dark Kingdom.

At other times I have felt led to confront false spirits operating through ministers here and abroad. I have found that this is not welcomed. Through prayer, I learned the truth about a specific church situation of great concern to me. The Lord revealed to me that the church knew about the problem, but many were making money from it by deceiving the people so they left it alone.

This is a particularly big problem in the area of prophecy. We call this a Balaam spirit, named after the prophet in the Old Testament. Essentially, this spirit operates for profit through ministers who yield to it. The Balaam spirit, when it possesses a minister who was greatly used of God in prophecy, will make that person begin to spend an inordinate amount of time talking and

prophesying about money. But since the Church has been taught that Christians, much less (perish the thought) ministers, cannot be possessed by spirits, nobody thought anything of it. But if you have been in such services, and I suspect you have, there was an uncomfortableness in your spirit. That was the Holy Ghost saying, “Watch out! You’re about to be conned!” The Balaam spirit will attempt to prophesy your money away from you. Generally, however, the spirit will operate covertly. The prophecy or suggestion will be so subtle that you might not notice it. Although I have seen it occur, normally the minister will not say, “Thus saith the Lord, ‘Give me \$500,’” but the effect will be the same.

They will say something like this. “The Lord shows me there are fifteen people here tonight that He has told to help this ministry with a gift of \$100.” Sound familiar? That is a Balaam spirit. And when it goes into operation at a service you are in, it is time for you to leave. In the middle of the service? Yes, get right up and walk out. I cannot wait for the day when the whole Church recognizes the operation of this spirit and a whole congregation would just get up and walk out at once when this occurs. God could tell a minister that fifteen people would give \$100 but if so, why mention it to the congregation? Is it because they don’t actually trust God? No, sorry to say, this is a Balaam spirit and not the Holy Spirit and the person through whom the spirit is operating is on the road to perdition. Do you really want such a person to “minister” to you?

We could discuss this abominational practice for pages, but must continue on deliverance. Just remember, God wants and expects you to give to His work—tithes and offerings are taught in both Old and New Testament—but it must be done prayerfully as we have mentioned earlier. Don’t ever give as a result of emotional appeals because you are being manipulated and it’s just the same as a spirit of witchcraft. God doesn’t like it. *Never, never, never* give out of an emotional appeal. I am not saying that it could not occur and still be God on a rare occasion, but I have never seen a true prophet of God prophesy to someone that they were to give the prophet money. I haven’t experienced it in ministry and it’s not found in the Scriptures. And here’s a good test. Whenever you feel pressured to give, don’t! Spend time in your prayer closet and you will sow into ministries who are good soil and not Balaams.

You may not be aware that some large churches and the “christian” T.V. networks use professional fund-raisers to raise money for a building fund or other project. Do you think Paul used these in Macedonia to raise funds for the ministry? No, Paul shared with the Corinthian Church; they were poor people but they gave willingly. The Lord showed me why this occurred. It’s because they “first gave themselves to the Lord” (II Cor. 8:5). Once we have truly given ourselves to the Lord in much prayer and worship, we will have His heart for the poor and we will want to give; nobody will have to manipulate us through emotional appeals.

Almost the whole Christian world operates on emotional appeals, sad to say. I asked the Lord about this one time and He said, “It’s because they don’t understand the Biblical concepts of giving.”

While a church using a professional “Christian” fund raiser is not directly the spirit of Balaam because it does not (normally) involve “revelation” or “prophesying,” the results are almost as bad because the *hook* is usually a promise such as the “hundred-fold return” that will be yours as a result of your giving. No, what will be yours as a result of giving in that situation is a wallet that looks like an elephant tap danced on it. God is not in this junk. That is why you are not getting the hundred-fold return. If you’re in a church that practices this, get out. The truth here is that the “hundred-fold return” is going into the pocket of the professional fund-raiser. He gets a percentage of the money that is raised. Again, use the wisdom of the Spirit in your giving. The greatest personal testimonies I can relate about giving were all as a result of prayer. Let your giving be like the rest of your life—be led by the Spirit of God. He knows where the money is needed most—allow Him to tell you.

I asked the Lord why there was so much of this type error and demonic influence by Mammon in the Church relative to giving. His answer was that the Five-fold ministry had been guilty of not teaching the Body how to give. It is much more expedient to use the systems of the world—emotional appeals, computer mailing lists, false prophecies (lies) and gimmicks—than to put forth the time, effort and patience required to properly develop people in the Biblical concepts of giving. I can assure you that if Paul, Peter, Barnabas and Timothy had a ministry today, they would not be using computer-generated appeal letters. They would be on their faces before God for the finances to carry forward the ministry.

HOW TO FUNCTION IN DELIVERANCE

It is important to first reiterate what was touched on in the last chapter. The number one problem, besides ignorance, in the Church today relative to the deliverance ministry is our not recognizing that deliverance is a *process*. Just as a psychiatrist working in the mental realm cannot hope to solve a patient's mental problem in one five-minute session, neither can a deliverance minister. Yet this is what we have tried to do in the Church. Just yell, "In Jesus' Name, come out of her!" and it's done. Unfortunately, it's usually not that simple. I have dealt with many of these cases in America. People who were prayed over, but the spirit didn't come out. But the minister insisted that it did. And if you are called to a deliverance ministry, be sure you are thoroughly trained.

In 1985 I was in Tennessee ministering and had lunch with a young missionary girl to China who had recently graduated from Bible school. We talked about deliverance ministry and she shared how, on her first day of Bible school, she had learned that her roommate had been prayed over for deliverance at a large church in Indiana. They recommended she attend Bible school. The first night she and her roommate went to bed she said the girl began to speak in a man's voice and it scared her. Obviously, all of the spirits were not dealt with effectively.

Deliverance is a process and this fact must first be recognized if one expects to have success. Try to shortcut it and it won't work. This is less a problem in Africa than here. Here everyone expects instant deliverance just like they do instant oatmeal. Whenever people contact me here in America regarding deliverance ministry for someone, I always tell them over the phone what the ground rules are for results. If they will not agree to abide by these rules, then I tell them not to waste their time. Many people try to tell God how they will let Him do it. In other words, they try to make God do things their way. That's not scriptural. God has a *provided way* for everything you need or will ever need from Him but it's up to you to find that way through study of the Bible, prayer and seeking His Face.

Some spirits can be cast out rather easily. I call these "casual spirits"; they just sort of hang around casually, e.g., the spirit of depression. They are not strong spirits. Many will leave when the person is ministered to by the laying on of hands and the demons commanded to leave. This is not just a function of the

spirit, however, but depends upon the degree of anointing the minister has when he lays his hand on them. The more anointed, the quicker the results will be. As the scripture says, it is the anointing that destroys the yoke of bondage. In addition, I mentioned earlier that another factor affecting the length of time required for deliverance is how long the spirit has been in there. Often I see the spirit immersed and intertwined within the body. It appears that when the spirit has been in there a long time it “tears” the person when it is cast out and they feel it leaving in a physical way, sometimes crying out in pain.

If you have been around deliverance, you have noticed people falling, kicking, screaming, rolling around on the floor and perhaps foaming at the mouth. This occurs when the spirits are leaving. It is caused by the anointing. This anointing is the Fire of God. It shocks and burns the body of these spirits and they cannot stay but must leave. This is what occurs in the spirit realm where they are. Sometimes through the gift of discerning of spirits, we are able to see the Fire shooting from the finger tips of a minister.

PREPARATION PHASE

Because deliverance ministry is a process, there are several phases to the ministry if it is to be done correctly. The first phase involves those ministering and is what I term the Preparation Phase. When ministering deliverance, like the illustration alluded to earlier about the High Priest, one must be holy and sin-free before beginning. Ideally, this preparatory phase should be done just before ministering, normally about an hour before. The following are suggested steps for this phase.

1. Gather with the other deliverance ministers and pray. Repent of any known sins and ask God to forgive you and cleanse you through the Blood of Jesus, the Passover Lamb.
2. Plead the Blood of Jesus over all of you as discussed under weapons of our warfare.
3. Take Communion.
4. Appropriate the other weapons of warfare listed in this book which apply such as confession. Begin to confess the Word over the deliverance team.

5. Pray specifically for the Holy Spirit to manifest the problems of the people through the gifts of the Holy Spirit to each of you as you minister.
6. Ask the Lord to anoint each of you such that it is as if He is there ministering in your place.
7. Pray in the spirit for at least thirty minutes for the people and for wisdom before going out to minister.

MINISTERING TO THE PEOPLE

The next phase of deliverance ministry is that involved with the people who need ministry. This phase can be subdivided into three sub-phases: (A) Information gathering, (B) Determining the nature/type of the spirits, and (C) Dealing with the spirits which have been discerned.

A. INFORMATION GATHERING

This first sub-phase is perhaps the most important because valuable time and improved results will be achieved if this step is not omitted. Also, damage could result to the person receiving ministry. Children must be dealt with differently than adults. For deliverance ministry purposes, we would define children as being those approximately fifteen years and under. It depends on maturity, of course, and is not a hard and fast rule; they may be twelve or seventeen, but children must be dealt with differently. Their parents must be there for the information session.

The parents normally are the ones who bring children, but occasionally an aunt or other relative will do so because the parents are not saved or do not believe in this type ministry. If the parents are not willing to be there, do not go any farther. That child cannot be helped until they get older and out from under the parents. If you proceed, then you are running the risk of making “the last state worse than the first” (Luke 11:26). Normally, the parents are part of the problem, especially if they are not saved. So they must be present.

Next, you would pray with them and then begin to ask some questions about their problems and why they are there for deliverance ministry. Take notes if possible. Often they will not tell you the total truth which comes out later through the revelation gifts. However, the revelation gifts may operate during the first meeting. As long as you are sincere, whatever God wants to show you about the problem, He will, because you have prepared yourself before through prayer. God may show you things seemingly unrelated to the reason why people are there for ministry.

After questions and notes, this sub-phase is over. But if the problem is a serious one of possession, you will only have begun getting information. For a difficult case that may take six months, you will only have maybe 20-30% of the information needed during this session.

We believe in working in deliverance teams. Normally, I like to see a minimum of three and a maximum of seven on each team. Usually, however, when we have seven on the team at least two or three of the ministers are in training. And in our ministry, it is mandatory that at least one member of the team be a prophet or prophetic person in whom the revelation gifts are known to operate with accuracy.

I set it up this way and attribute our success to this fact. We believe in all the Gifts of the Holy Spirit—we believe in healing and we use healing teams where healing is required—but when it comes to deliverance, the gifts of healings are not much good. You need the prophet's ministry! You need the three precious revelation gifts and primarily two of them: (1) Word of Knowledge, and (2) Discerning of Spirits. Because most deliverance ministries do not know this, their results are not as effective as they might otherwise be.

Assuming the initial information gathering time is over, the time has now arrived for ministry to the individual. But since we are discussing information gathering in a book, we will finish our discussion of this phase here.

Most of the information you obtain will occur not during the initial session, but during actual ministry. As the team begins to minister, the members will pray in the spirit until someone steps forward with a revelation from the Lord. This revelation may include the types of spirits, how they gained entrance,

etc. It may come different ways—through a vision, a word in your spirit, an inner “knowing,” and other ways. Sometimes you will have your spiritual eyes opened and you can see the spirits. They normally range in size from very small, about the size of a mouse, to very large—larger than a gorilla. Some will be a mixture with their bodies being half man and half animal as I described some of the Powers. Some very small ones resemble small, black spiders. If they are spirits from the sea, they are never taller than about two feet.

Once the Holy Spirit begins to move through the revelation gifts, the spirits will get nervous. Often the person will become extremely agitated and attempt to run. They may become “afraid,” especially if they are children. You must recognize that it is just a spirit of fear *manifesting* in them and not allow them to get away. Sometimes they will faint. The spirits are hoping you will be deceived into thinking they have left or that this poor woman who just fainted should be taken home. They are very clever. But they are no match for the Holy Spirit. And as He teaches you their tricks, they really become pretty helpless against you. Sometimes you actually feel sorry for them when they begin to whine and cry.

Another source of knowledge in deliverance is from the spirits themselves. They will talk to you. They can be made to answer questions. Perhaps you may think, “Yes, but the devil’s a liar and the father of lies, how can you believe them?” This is true, but there are ways of talking to them to extract the truth, especially after you cast out the lying spirit first. This is an area that requires experience, but you can learn valuable information—covenants the person made in the spirit world or how the spirits gained entrance—that must be uncovered if the person is to be totally set free from all evil spirits.

The third area whereby you can gain information is from the person themselves. Often when the anointing passes into their bodies, they will confess to certain things or bring out information needed to set them free and insure that they stay free.

Let me emphasize before closing this discussion, that, no matter how much experience I have in deliverance I cannot allow myself to become complacent and think I know how to handle the situation—the real key here is the Holy Spirit and His revelation gifts, especially the Word of Knowledge. Remember

this gift? It is the supernatural revelation of certain facts in the Mind of God which are present or past in time. And although there are at least ten ways that I know of by which this gift operates, only about half of them apply to deliverance ministry. In my own life, this gift operates primarily two ways and the most prominent way is when I look at a person, there is an instant *knowing* about everything pertaining to their problem. It is as if I see the problem as God sees it. Let me illustrate.

A pastor and I were summoned to a village in the jungle to pray for a woman who was near death. She had been bedfast for *seven* years; her arms were the size of my thumbs. She could not have weighed more than seventy pounds although she was about 5'11" in height.

We were taken into a small room and she was assisted out of the bedroom to see us. The first moment I saw her, this gift went into operation. I knew what had happened to her to cause her medical problem (she had been given up to die by the doctors), that she had been into false religion and idol worship, and that her condition was the result of witchcraft. To make a long story short, she was healed that day and we took her outside where she walked all around the village and confessed, "Thank God, I'm healed." But the point is, without this revelation gift of the precious Spirit, she could not have been helped because it was obvious that she did not have much time left to live.

When the black or red witches in Africa begin to attack you, they can suck your blood supernaturally through a device (they call it a magnetic device) that looks like a spider web which they place spiritually upon your body. Without help from the Lord, the person under attack will not live long. I was attacked this way in December, 1989, and it felt like the worst case of the flu I had ever had—I actually felt like I was going to die. While I was in bed praying the Lord showed me what the attack was. A young girl in the house where I was staying confessed to being a red witch when we confronted her the next morning. I learned from this experience that she was able to attack me *because* she was already there in the house when I arrived and so she had *authority* to be there. This is why it's important who you allow into your home. If you give them the authority to be there they can bring evil spirits in to attack you.

The minister who heads up our deliverance ministry there in our International Headquarters in Nigeria has a wonderful gift of discerning of spirits. It is quite remarkable. He can just take hold of someone's wrist and tell what spirits are in there. Often when we go into churches, I will just turn him loose on the congregation. He will pull people out of the congregation and the choir for deliverance simply by touching them.

Believe me, there are many of you reading this through whom God wants to develop this gift. He wants to use you in deliverance ministry and He wants to train you in these gifts as well so you can free those bound.

B. DETERMINING THE NATURE OR TYPES OF SPIRITS

Normally, an experienced minister would have a pretty good idea of the type spirits he is dealing with after the initial time of counseling with the persons seeking help. This knowledge comes from both experience and revelation by the Holy Spirit.

But if you are not going to immediately minister to them, it is best to ask them to come back in three days. During the three days, you fast, pray and seek God. He will reveal the problem areas and the spirits involved. If it is a child, have the person who brought them come back in three days with the parents. By then, the Lord may have revealed to you to what extent the parents are to blame.

You should note, if you have not already, that demons cannot attack children without going through the parents. God has created parents with spiritual authority over their children. That is why it is easy for you to get prayers answered where your children are concerned; God gave you this authority so He respects your spiritual authority over your children.

If you are praying over your children, teaching them the Word, living right, and confessing the Word over them, *they will not be open to demonic possession*. The demons cannot get through the protective net you have placed over those children.

But where the ungodly are concerned, the children are wide open. In Africa, Asia and other areas of the world, this is especially true because the families are heavily into idol worship. But America is becoming much more open now as well.

In Africa, the children are forced to partake of the ancestral worship of demons. The parents force them to cut their bodies and they insert “medicine” (charms) into the open cuts. If you have been around black African people much, you probably wondered why even young children have so many scars on their bodies. Now you know the reason. In Madagascar, people dig up their dead relatives and dance with them in the streets at a festival like Mardi Gras. African nations are big into ancestral worship as is much of Asia.

In America, the same thing can happen through the parents being drug users. In those areas of America where the neighborhoods are full of crack houses and methamphetamine, the only hope for the children is the Blood of Jesus Christ. The Church needs to stand in the gap through intercession and the planting of deliverance ministries in these American cities.

If possible, spend at least three days in fasting and prayer before ministering to a person. In our meetings, this is not possible as there will normally be about 700 people there every Friday night. If we could accommodate more, they would be there, but the building is small. That is why we are training others. But if you are ministering to one or two people at a time, spend some time in fasting and prayer before beginning to minister through the laying on of hands.

During this time, the Holy Spirit can then have your full attention to tell you the problem and how best to deal with it. He has never failed to do this for me. Seek Him for guidance—He is your Helper. This is where your spiritual development is so important. You must be spirit and Spirit minded. If not, you will not be able to pick up what the Spirit is trying to tell you in the spirit. As noted before, deliverance is a process. He may tell you to do something that seems totally ludicrous to your natural mind. If you are not spiritually minded, you will miss Him. I learned this lesson vividly back in 1979 when ministering to a doctor here in America who had become possessed as a drug addict.

The more time you spend with the Holy Spirit and the higher you have raised your spiritual acumen, the easier these problems will be to deal with and the quicker you will recognize them. With enough practice, a person in whom there is a good gift of discerning of spirits can recognize demonic possession by merely being around a person for only a few minutes. Different spirits will often manifest themselves during the deliverance process. If you are doing this in church, you will find many who are possessed with religious spirits. Paul dealt with a religious spirit in Acts. Having dealt with thousands of them, I can recognize from the Bible that this is a religious spirit by the way it speaks.

“Once when we were going to the place of prayer, we were met by a Slave girl who had a spirit by which she predicted the future. She Earned a great deal of money for her owners by fortune-telling. This girl Followed Paul and the rest of us, shouting, ‘These men are servants of The Most High God, who are telling you the way to be saved.’ She

Kept this up for many days. Finally Paul became so troubled that he Turned around and said to the spirit, ‘In the name of Jesus Christ I Command you to come out of her!’ At that moment the spirit left Her.”

♥ Acts 16:16-18 NIV

Based on experience, I can tell you that this woman had at least two spirits possessing her and probably more. She had a spirit by which she could tell the future—a spirit of divination given by Paimon. But the spirit, which was speaking through her, was a religious spirit. How do I know? By what it said. Notice what the spirit was saying. Also, notice where it was that Paul and his entourage first encountered this girl with the spirit. Religious spirits like to congregate around the church. A person in your congregation may be possessed with religious spirits and yet carry a Bible, pray and never miss a service. But you will also notice that Paul did not speak to the girl. He spoke to the spirit. And notice that after the spirits were cast out, the slave girl could no longer tell fortunes. Also notice, and this is very instructive, when you begin to operate in deliverance ministry and casting out devils, not everyone is going to be excited about it. The owners of the slave girl were certainly not very excited about her being delivered from the spirits. They were more concerned with the money made from her “gift” than the welfare of the girl.

And you're going to find this true if God calls you to a deliverance ministry, especially if it's in America. Not many people, especially your relatives, are going to be excited when you tell them that God has given you a ministry of "casting out devils." But this can, in fact, be used to your advantage whenever you don't want company. When someone calls and wants to drop by, but you have other plans, just invite them and say, "Sure, come on over. We're going to have a group here and we'll be casting out devils this afternoon. We'd love to have you join us." I can promise you they won't be there!

In closing this discussion of this sub-phase of recognizing spirits, we will discuss the locations where spirits dwell—what to look for to discern them. Although they can be present in any part of the human anatomy, evil spirits will possess and dwell in one or more of three major places in the human anatomy: (1) the eyes and brain area, (2) the chest and heart area, and (3) the abdomen and area of the sexual organs.

C. CASTING OUT DEMONS

After some experience or teaching, you will learn where certain spirits dwell and then dealing with them is more effective. For example, most sexual spirits always dwell in the abdomen area, although the spirit of adultery is sometimes found in the eyes. If you know you are dealing with a spirit of adultery, you should lay your hand upon the person's abdomen when ministering through the laying on of hands. When the spirits understand that you know their positions in the body, they will obey you quicker in coming out. This is a fact conveyed to me by a former Ruler of Darkness, which we have confirmed by experience.

A lying spirit is always located in the heart. A spirit of witchcraft is located in this area also but lower—more where the human spirit is located, near the solar plexus. In a person possessed with a spirit of witchcraft, we call it the *witch bed*. Why is it important to know the location of spirits? For example, if you are dealing with a spirit of witchcraft and you lay your hand upon the person's head while commanding the spirit to leave, the spirit will move down lower in the body to the knee area. It will then appear that the person is free for several weeks or even months after ministry if there is adequate follow-up. This spirit will travel back up the body to the chest area over the course of

three months and will then begin to manifest itself again through a person you thought was free. On the other hand, if you lay your hand upon the spirit of the person and command the spirit of witchcraft to leave, it will leave completely.

THE NAME OF JESUS

Most people involved in deliverance ministry, even casually, know that the power to cast out demons is in the Name of Jesus. This is true! Demons have to bow to the Name of Jesus. We know this both from experience and the Bible.

“Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name
Which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee
Should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under
The earth;”

♥ Philippians 2:9-10

The authority over the whole earth is now vested in the Name of Jesus. He wants us to use that Name to rout the Dark Kingdom. The main purpose of the Name is for spiritual combat. If you do not agree, then consider why the Church was given authority (in the Name) and power (through the Holy Spirit). It was not just to tell the world about the resurrection. They could have done that by driving up and down the countryside in a Mercedes with loudspeakers on top.

No, the whole purpose behind Jesus taking back the authority over the earth from the Dark Kingdom is to bring about the restoration of all things through the Church. This is why He is called the Second Adam—Adam was given the Divine Magna Charta, told to take authority over the earth and subdue it (Gen. 1:28). And this is why Jesus instructed the disciples to pray, “Thy Kingdom come!” If the Kingdom of God was going to come automatically, what is the use in giving us this prayer? Of course in a sense we can say that the Kingdom will come automatically because it must come in response to the prophecies of God. But He has called the Church as the instrument to bring it to pass and you will see the Church come to understand this truth soon.

Although there is great power in the Name of Jesus, if the person you are ministering to has been involved in witchcraft, magic, the occult, Satanism,

homosexuality, lesbianism, or murder, then that person is not going to be delivered right away. Just mark it down. And if they have been involved in the Dark Kingdom through sacrifices and covenants, then these must be confessed, repented of, and the power broken if the person is to be set free.

It is so interesting to confirm in deliverance what we knew from the Bible—confession is a spiritual principle. After confessing their involvement and covenants, this person must confess before Heaven and earth that they now repent of their involvement with the Dark Kingdom and they no longer want to be associated with its operations. They have to formally confess their sins to God and ask forgiveness. They then must renounce this involvement forever to the Dark Kingdom.

This is usually where the battle begins. This is when they can become violent. Once they have confessed and repented, we can proceed with the casting out of spirits. The difficulty in their confessing is due to the promises they have made to the Dark Kingdom under penalty of death if they reveal their activities. Normally, we have to first deal with a spirit of fear before we can proceed further in the deliverance process.

Before you begin the actual casting out of demons, you need to remember the following:

- ◆ All children not receiving ministry and all unbelievers should be removed from the service. They can be taken to another room and the Blood pled over them along with intercession. This is because the spirits which are cast out will try to enter someone else immediately.
- ◆ The demons should be commanded to leave in the Name of Jesus.
- ◆ The demons should be commanded to never enter another person. See Matthew 9:25.
- ◆ Bind the Principalities, Powers and Satan by name. If you know their names, use them. If you do not, memorize their various functions given in this book and from that information you will know with a high degree of certainty which Principalities and Powers are involved. This is an area, like number three above, where ignorance has hurt us. If you just use the name of Satan,

then you have not bound the Principalities and Powers. They are still free to reinforce the servient and familiar spirits possessing the person. Consider the slave girl mentioned in that scripture in Acts. She was possessed with a familiar spirit of divination and one or more religious spirits. What Principality and Powers would you suspect were also involved?

“But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God Is come unto you. Or else how can one enter into a strong man’s House, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man? and Then he will spoil his house.” ♥ Matthew 12:29; Mark 3:27

Jesus is illustrating this principle I learned from experience and had verified by former members of the Dark Kingdom. The strong man here means Satan, the Principalities and Powers.

- ♦ Finally, the spirit should be commanded (again, in the Name of Jesus) to go to the Abyss or to go back where it came from (the sea or the heavens) *until* the time Jesus returns to the earth.

Not understanding these finer points of deliverance has allowed the demons to continue harassing people and to laugh at our ignorance and feeble attempts to deal with them. If you bind them and command them to go to the Abyss or back where they came from they will not harass another human being. I realize this teaching will really fly in the face of some previous teaching, but it is the truth. A minister once wrote that if this was possible, then Jesus would have rid the earth of all the demons Himself when He was here. No, because He did not deal with but just a few.

If commanding them where to go is new to you, study the examples in the Gospels of the man with the legion of demons. When you command a demon to come out of a person or you bind that demon in the Name of Jesus, then they are bound (Matthew 18:18); they cannot move. They will stand there outside that person in the spirit world waiting for your next command.

The reason they can be sent back to where they came from or to the Abyss, is because *they have no legal right upon the earth because of the Blood*. Incidentally, the Abyss—a desolate, hot and dry place like the Sahara desert

where the spirits do not want to go—is located in the spirit realm. If you require further proof, consider this scripture.

“And they [the demons] begged him [Jesus] repeatedly not to order Them to go into the Abyss.” ♥ Luke 8:31

Another very important point in casting out demons is in understanding their manifestation. It has been said that you cannot deal with the spirits unless they are in manifestation. The Bible says to try the spirits.

“Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they Are of God: … And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ Is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist,”

♥ I John 4:1, 3

You can only “try” the spirits and test them when they are in manifestation. But we have learned that if they are not in manifestation, we can command the spirits to manifest. We make them manifest in the person and then deal with those spirits. What might happen spiritually is this. A person comes forward for deliverance in a church deliverance service. After a brief consultation in the prayer line, we may determine that their problem is extensive and some time will be required for deliverance ministry. If so, we schedule them for an appointment to gather information. If not, the problem is minor or caused by casual spirits, our deliverance team will deal with the problem right then and there.

But what often happens is this. As soon as we begin to minister by the laying on of hands, commanding the demons to leave in the Name of Jesus, the person receiving ministry will often become violent and try to get away. Sometimes they will attempt to physically attack the ministers on the team. This is the time when you had better know what you are doing, especially here in America where people will sue you at the slightest provocation. The person was perfectly calm and collected a few moments before wanting deliverance. Now, they are a raging storm. They were in complete control of their faculties and coherent, now their eyes look like a caged tiger. What has occurred?

When we begin to deal with the spirits possessing the body, they panic and call for reinforcements in the spirit world. They do not want to leave the body. They like it there and besides they have a mission which has not been completed yet. Many times they have been in that body for decades. They are not going to leave without a fight. Consequently, they will call on the Principalities and Powers for reinforcement. When the Principalities and Powers are called upon, we endeavor to determine who they are and then bind them in their activities. The person will then usually fall under the power and anointing of the Holy Spirit. When they get up, which sometimes is several hours later, but usually is within fifteen to twenty minutes, they are completely free of the spirits.

Another fact learned through experience is that certain spirits are not present in the body at all times—they may come and go. This is the reason we hold our deliverance services all night. A person who is totally insane, being possessed with several legions of demons, will have periods when they are somewhat normal. During this time, the person can be questioned for information. Also, in Africa, we never let a person receiving ministry sleep during the deliverance service. When sleeping, some of the spirits, e.g., witchcraft, will travel out with that person's spirit and we cannot minister to them. The spirits must be there or made to manifest for effective casting out of the demons. Based on my experience with the insane, I am convinced that a high percentage, probably at least 90% of the people in our insane asylums could be made normal through deliverance ministry.

Ministering to the insane and others requiring involved deliverance ministry is much easier to accomplish in Africa or Asia than in the Western world because people here tend to be heavily medicated. Most antidepressants and other medications given to people makes deliverance much more difficult and time consuming because it is more difficult to make the spirits manifest.

These few chapters on deliverance have only been a primer for what you need, but it is enough for you to begin deliverance ministry to those you come in contact with who need it. If God is calling you to a full-time ministry of deliverance, feel free to contact us for additional information.

38

JESUS HAS DELIVERED US FROM THE POWER OF DARKNESS

You have learned in this book, probably for the first time, the tremendous power of the Dark Kingdom. The devil has great power, but the Lord Jesus Christ has delivered us from the powers of the Dark Kingdom. We have been translated into His Kingdom, that of the Kingdom of God. He jealously wants to guard us and keep us from falling prey to the tricks and schemes of all those in the Dark Kingdom. And He wants us to rescue those in this world who have been imprisoned by the evil gang of Satan. So let me ask you a personal question—when was the last time you obeyed Mark 16:17 and cast demons out of a person?

“Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be Partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light” Who hath delivered Us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the Kingdom of his dear son: In whom we have redemption through his Blood, even the forgiveness of sins:” ♥ Colossians 1:12-14

During my first trip to the Dark Continent, I was on a midnight flight from Madrid to Lagos, Nigeria, aboard a DC-10. A few miles north of Lagos at 5 A.M. the Holy Spirit gently awakened me.

First, He thanked me for obeying Him in going. He said, “Son, I want to thank you for coming to Africa.” Next, He gave me this scripture and said this was the *key* scripture for the people of Africa and the work He has called us to do on that continent. We have the vision to build Mother Churches which will be both a training center and a resource center to other churches in each of thirty African nations. God has also commissioned us to build a Christian school and orphanage in both Akure and Benin City, Nigeria. In 2008 we began a CCI Training Center and church in Malawi, Africa, and in Nepal.

What has God called you to do? If you are in the Family of God, then you have a ministry call. It may not be to the Five-fold ministry, but you still have a ministry. No matter where you are, there are people in great darkness. There are certain areas of our country that are worse than others.

When praying in the spirit, you can see a dark cloud over the Austin area, the Pacific Northwest, the Northeast, the Los Angeles and New York areas. But other areas need help to free the captives as well. On January 1, 2008, I felt led by the Spirit to pray on the steps of the Supreme Court for several hours. This was my first trip to Washington in 25 years. The city was 40% darker than in 1983. That told me that we are continuing to lose the spiritual war despite a lot of Christian groups and ministries coming to Washington.

Will you go to the lost and tell them the Good News about Jesus Christ—that He saves, heals and baptizes with the Spirit and power; that He loves them deeply?

The Holy Spirit tells us in this key scripture that we *have* been delivered from the kingdom of darkness. That means it’s past tense. Jesus defeated the Dark Kingdom 2,000 years ago so we could be translated into His Kingdom. He has given us the authority to stand against the Dark Kingdom. Let’s do something about the devil and what he is trying to do each day throughout the world—let’s realize that there really is a battle for planet Earth going on around us. Let’s take the weapons of our warfare and begin to storm the gates of hell. The devil is a ruthless adversary who deserves no mercy. The Lord says, “The gates of hell shall not prevail against my Church!” That means you can attack the Dark Kingdom and they will not prevail against you because *you* are the Church! Praise God!

For too long we have waged only a defensive struggle. The Church has been like the person on the job who is counting the hours until Friday is over and the weekend arrives. Many of us have been counting the years until the rapture of the Church. We have not been “about our Father’s business.”

On September 8, 1998, while living in Elliston, Montana, I was reading Proverbs 10:5 that says, “He who sleeps during the harvest is a disgraceful son.” The Lord immediately spoke and reminded me that we are still in “harvest time.” But the night will soon come “when no man can work.” Then it will be too late. Let’s not be disgraceful sons—let’s be about the Great Commission while we are still in harvest.

THE HOLY SPIRIT IS EXCITED

In my recent conversations with the Holy Spirit, I have sensed that He is incredibly excited about the Church gaining a deep understanding concerning spiritual warfare. He is excited about the prospect of finally leading us on the offensive in the battle instead of hearing us moan and groan about what the devil and the Dark Kingdom are doing to us and our family, church or ministry.

Please make a resolution this day to become active in the spiritual war. If you are not sure of your place in the Church, just pass out tracts, pray and witness to people until God promotes you or gives you further direction. Everybody can do something.

T.L. Osborn used give the testimony about one woman in Tulsa who won her whole neighborhood to the Lord by baking apple pies and inviting them over for pie and coffee. Maybe you don’t feel God wants to use you in deliverance ministry full time, but can you bake an apple pie?

BOOK VII

THE GREAT COMMISSION

“Go ye therefore, and teach all nations,”

♥ Matthew 28:19

39

PREPARE THE WAY OF THE LORD

**“The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, ‘Prepare ye
The way of the Lord, make straight in the desert a highway
For our God.’”**

♥ **Isaiah 40:3**

Today the world is a spiritual desert. Despite almost 2,000 years of Christianity, most of the world, over 85%, is still in darkness—it is ruled by the Dark Kingdom. And the Church has been like the Titanic. While it is slowly sinking, we argue about doctrine while most of the crew—the clergy—have been busy rearranging the deck chairs or, like James and John, arguing over who has the greatest ministry. Meanwhile, the Holy Spirit is still crying out every day to the Church, “Prepare ye the way of the Lord!”

But if the world is a spiritual desert, how do we as individuals prepare the way of the Lord? This is perhaps the most important topic to consider in this new decade because the Spirit is preparing the saints for great spiritual warfare and ministry to usher in the return of Christ. We prepare the way of the Lord in two ways: preparing ourselves and preparing others.

PREPARING OURSELVES

The first step most of us need to take in preparation is to shake ourselves, repent and arise from spiritual lethargy. We have been complacent and not fulfilled our calling in the army of the Lord. Next, we need to judge ourselves.

“For if we would judge ourselves, we would not be judged.”

♥ I Corinthians 11:31

Then we need to humble ourselves.

“Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God,
That he may exalt you in due time.” ♥ I Peter 5:6

God resists the proud, but He uses the humble and He will exalt the humble to a greater place of ministry as they prove faithful. Consider Joshua as an example already given in this book. As a result of his humble nature, he was later exalted.

“And the Lord said unto Joshua, ‘This day will I begin to magnify
Thee in the sight of all Israel,’” ♥ Joshua 3:7

Finally, we need to follow Paul’s advice to Timothy and watch our life and doctrine closely. We need to check up on ourselves in the areas of holiness, sanctification, purity of heart, obedience and the other areas. And most importantly, we have to learn to believe the Bible.

We say we believe the Bible, but our action is not in line with our words when we see scriptures like

“If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above,
Where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. Set your affection on
Things above, not on things on the earth.” ♥ Colossians 3:1-2

Let me pass on to you a wonderful secret about God—everything from God is simple—He’s not complicated at all although we often try to make Him so. You just believe (the Word) and receive. That’s all there is to it. But often we are like the rich young ruler to whom Christ said to sell all and give it to the poor. He was promised riches in Heaven, yet he could not obey this scripture from Colossians. How about you? When you get right down to it, if you can’t believe this scripture then you cannot believe John 3:16. And actually believing this scripture is a very liberating experience. Jesus said that knowing the Truth would make one free. This scripture will liberate you from most of what the devil is trying to do to keep you in bondage.

We must do our part. If Christ is returning for a Church without spot or wrinkle (Ephesians 5:27), then we must prepare ourselves to be without spot or wrinkle. We must change our attitudes and prepare ourselves individually in order for the Church to be prepared collectively. And the *main thing* you have to do today is to forget the past (*cf.* Phil. 3:13-14). We cannot do or be much for God if we continually allow the devil to condemn us with our past mistakes. God is telling us now to forget the past. We are to consecrate and prepare ourselves now for spiritual warfare leading to the soon return of Jesus Christ to the earth to set up His millennial Kingdom.

THE SPIRIT OF ELIJAH

During the Easter Season of 2005 the Lord gave me a two-part message for our church in Montana titled, *The Spirit of Elijah*. The Lord revealed to me from the Scriptures that the spirit of Elijah must return in the last days to forerun the Second Coming of Jesus just as John the Baptist was the forerunner in the spirit of Elijah for the first coming of Jesus Christ. Just as Jesus' coming is in two parts—first in mercy as the suffering Lamb of God and the second time as the Lion of Judah to judge the world so is Elijah's.

This revelation is revealed through a careful study of Malachi 3-4, Luke 1 and in Matthew 17:11 which Jesus spoke after John had been beheaded. A month after I ministered this message at our church we were ministering at a church in Oklahoma and a gentleman there said that the Lord had told him a year before that he was being “called in the spirit of Elijah” and he’d not been able to find out what that meant. He told me he had talked to every minister in Oklahoma and none knew what it meant.

What is the purpose of this spirit of Elijah? There are several purposes but the primary one we see with both Elijah and John is to “prepare the way for the Lord” by turning the hearts of the people back to the Lord so that they may enter the Kingdom of Heaven.

THE EYE OF THE EAGLE

You've noticed the phrase *The Eye of the Eagle* throughout this book and in my other books—it's a phrase the Lord gave us in Montana. Eagles soar

extremely high and they have great vision—that's one of the reasons an eagle is symbolic of the Five-fold office of prophet. It's also a symbol of the Lord Jesus in His office as the Head Prophet of the Church. Those Christians who possess this *Eye of the Eagle* are able to soar into the spirit realm and "see" what is going on there.

Let's assume you were trained for combat as a Green Beret or Navy Seal. You're a finely honed fighter who knows combat skills and the "book" well. In the Service you're supposed to do everything "by the book," right? But let me ask you a question. How effective would you be in combat if you were blind? By the same token, how can you hope to be effective in spiritual combat if you are blind or your spiritual vision is impaired in any way? It's not enough just to know the Bible well—you must also know the Spirit well and have great vision.

In these days in which we're now living you need to develop your spiritual senses and fine tune them or you risk being taken out by the enemy. With the level of warfare being stepped up by Satan upon the Church today it's more important than ever that you develop *The Eye of the Eagle*. Quite frankly, this is an area of *total* neglect in the Church—Christians are not taught how to have this *Eye of the Eagle*. If you need help in this area then write or email us and we will assist you.

PREPARE OTHERS

"Then the word of the Lord came through the prophet Haggai: 'Is It a time for you yourselves to be living in your paneled houses, While this house [My Church] remains a ruin?' Now this is what the Lord Almighty says: 'Give careful thought to Your ways.'"

♥ Haggai 1:3-5

The Holy Spirit told me that this scripture applies to the Church today, especially to the Five-fold ministers. After you have prepared yourself, it is time to prepare others. Remember the vision I related about the hand pouring water into the pipe? If you do not give out what God has blessed you with, then He will not be able to give you more. Why? Because He cannot trust you with it. And always remember these words of our Lord, "But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant." A minister is a servant, nothing else. We are servants of the people and co-workers in the harvest with the angels of God and the Holy Spirit. If most ministers knew the Holy Spirit intimately, they would have no pride or ambition in their lives.

And you will never be able to prepare others if you cannot prepare yourself first. Consider the following scripture,

“Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the Ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much Fruit.”

♥ John 12:24

Even as Jesus spoke this scripture about Himself, so it applies to all of us who call upon His Name and claim to be Christians. This is why the work of the Spirit is to humble and conform us to the image of Christ so we will die to ourselves even as Jesus did.

In 1998 the Spirit of the Lord came upon me in Elliston, Montana, while I was praying. I received a tremendous burden for the world. I felt the heart of Jesus for the whole world. He loves the people of the world so much and wants them to have eternal life—to be in His family. This was an extremely painful experience and I couldn’t take it very long. I asked the Lord, “Lord, how were you able to bear this?” He answered me immediately and simply replied, “For the joy set before Me” (Heb. 12:2).

He forsook all and died to Himself just to do the will of the Father. Why? So God could have a family from His Fruit that died. Are you willing to do the same? If you are, then He will use you in ministry to train others. And if you are not willing to die to self and selfish ambition, then He cannot use you. There is a price to be paid for the anointing and ministry of power. That price is obedience, humility, and absolute honesty. The Lord is looking for such people today. Will you help? Will you prepare yourself and then prepare others? Will you pray the Lord of the harvest to send forth laborers into the earth?

40

THE GREAT COMMISSION

Hear the Words of the Lord:

“Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every Creature. He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; But he that believeth not shall be damned. And these signs Shall follow them that believe; in my name shall they cast Out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; they shall Take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it Shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and They shall recover.”

♥ **Mark 16:15-18**

If you have a red letter Bible, these words are in red. That means they are orders from your Commander-in-Chief of the Army in Heaven. Do you take them seriously? Do you really believe there is such a thing as hell or eternal death in the Lake of Fire? I have seen the Lake of Fire in a vision; I was taken there in the spirit by the Lord on Thanksgiving Day of 1989. I could feel the intense heat coming from its surface. I also know a former magician from the

Dark Kingdom whom the Lord took there in his physical body. Jesus told him that would be his final resting place if he continued to serve the devil and his angels. He remarked that he could feel the tremendous heat from it. When I saw the Lake of Fire it was empty but it won't always be empty. It is the final resting place for all eternity for the devil, his angels and all those human beings who do not accept God's provided way of salvation through the Blood of Jesus.

But most people reject the concept of eternal death in a Lake of Fire simply because it is so terrifying. All around the world they incorrectly reason that "a loving God would not send anybody to such a place." But God doesn't send us; we willingly choose to go when we reject His provided way. We also have Bible scriptures stating that it exists. Do you believe it? If so, will you tell others? Will you warn them? Will you take what you have learned here and use it against the Dark Kingdom to free the captives who are in bondage?

The Lord says that this generation of the Church has been like the following scripture:

"Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge
Of the truth." ♥ II Timothy 3:7

You listen, but you don't hear. You look, but you don't see. The Lord would admonish you to put on your armor and enter into battle in the conflict against the Dark Kingdom. Be an intercessor, be a prayer warrior, but don't be afraid to go against the Dark Kingdom. They cannot harm you. They are always trying to kill us, but they cannot. Please pause now a moment and listen to the Lord in your spirit. Let the Spirit of God direct you into the area of ministry He is calling you to this day. If you are obedient, then it will be said of you by Jesus on that judgment day at the *Bema* seat of Christ, "Well done, thou good and faithful servant."

The following poem is taken from a book of poems written by Rev. Tom Awodele and his wife, Fadera, with whom we work to plant churches. He has given me permission to print it.

NEEDED, THE DARE-DEVIL CREW!

“Oh, for a thousand men to do,
My saviour’s last command,
To take the Gospel of our Lord,
To every heathen land.
We want them not a few, the dare-devil crew,
Who never know when they’re beaten,
But will fire away all night and day,
And flatly refuse to retreat.
Not statesmanlike men of subtle craft,
Who can chase or charm away evil,
But men whose shots are pointed and hot,
And who’ll fire it fearlessly at the devil.

Don’t come for a mere experiment,
Just for a year or two,
But come as to war with a lion’s roar,
To see the campaign through.
You won’t regret it cost you a lot,
When you get to the other side,
But oh!, the shame if you earn the name,
“A miser he lived and died!”
With what joyful feet you shall run up the street,
That leads to the throne of God,
If you’ve given your ALL for Christ and walked,
The road that the martyrs trod.”

Would you please make a commitment today to not shrink back? Will you join the Dare-Devil Crew and “walk the road that the martyrs trod?”

EPILOGUE

We trust that this book has been a blessing to you and has taught you a lot about the Dark Kingdom so you can more effectively engage them in combat. Remember, the Lord never promised us it would be easy; He said, “Follow Me” and to follow Him means the way of the Cross and suffering but what rewards we will reap for eternity!

We hope this book has been an inspiration for you to *be more* and *do more* for the Kingdom of God before the Lord’s soon return.

For a complete list of all our books, tapes, teaching CD’s and other materials or to contact us, please visit us on the web:

CHRIST CHURCH INTERNATIONAL, INC.

www.ccipublishing.net or www.christchurchinternational.net

or you may write us in the United States at our corporate address:

1. CCI

PO Box 777

BIGFORK, MT 59911-0177

